



PEERLESS MARTIAL GOD

BOOK 21

Jing Wu Hen

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Peerless Martial God

(绝世武神)

by

Jing Wu Hen

(净无痕)

Synopsis

Lin Feng tried to be the diligent and hard-working good guy. He studied hard, did his best to make his family proud and not get into trouble, but when he saw a girl being taken advantage of, he had to intervene. He had been tricked, sentenced to 10 years in jail and framed for a crime he never committed, all was lost. If his life was over he would take those who ruined his life with him...

Suddenly he opens his eyes again. He is not dead, but alive in the body of the Lin Feng of a different world. This Lin Feng had been killed as trash of cultivation. This world where the strong had no regard for human life and would kill freely if they had the strength. Called 'trash' and thrown away, with vengeance in his heart he will rise to new heights opposing the will of heaven and earth.

Acknowledgement

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Alice, Not Sane, Pan Pan @ [Totally Insane Translation](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 2001: Highest Level

“The Holy Way Stage is very strange. You can’t see the attacks. I wonder how it’s been designed. It almost looks alive. And it can test different things,” murmured Hou Qing Lin to Lin Feng and the others.

“Brother, you also want to know where the attacks come from?” Lin Feng smiled. Historic vestiges were marvelous. The Holy Way Stage was being used to test people’s talent, weaknesses, and strengths, but it seemed to have other uses.

Did peerless cultivators have to be flawless in all aspects? Was it impossible to become a peerless cultivator without the proper blood strength, bones, physical strength, intent and so on? Was it why some Holy Great Emperors were stuck at that cultivation level and couldn’t transcend worldliness and attain holiness?

“I’m going to try too!” Hou Qing Lin nodded.

“Alright, we all have to try anyway,” Lin Feng smiled knowingly. After Crazy Bull tried, so did many other people. However, nobody had managed to set foot on the Holy Way Stage, it was too difficult. It meant that the cultivator already met all the requirements to become a peerless cultivator someday.

Even without talking about getting onto the stage itself, getting to the third step was already extremely difficult. Nobody had managed to do better than Crazy Bull. The requirements to become a peerless cultivator someday were extremely strict. Having the proper blood, bones, and body was already really difficult, but having the proper intent was even harder. Crazy Bull had managed to get onto the third step because he was incredibly determined.

When Hou Qing Lin walked out, many people pulled long faces. After all, he was still a medium-level emperor. In the Holy City, he wasn’t as famous as Chu Chun Qiu or Lin Feng. Only people from Champion University knew that Hou Qing Lin was quite strong.

When Hou Qing Lin stepped onto the first step, he shook visibly. A mysterious kind of strength surrounded him invisibly. Hou Qing Lin understood that no matter what kind of defense technique you used, it was useless, powers and spells weren't part of your body.

Hou Qing Lin coughed up blood. Many people shook their heads. They all thought, As expected, he can't handle it, not even the first step.

However, after a short time, Hou Qing Lin was still on the first step, people looked at him strangely. He was injured, but he hadn't been pushed away.

Hou Qing Lin moved his foot, a ferocious expression on his blood-covered face. He lifted his foot and put it on the second step, then his second foot. The second step was to test a cultivator's blood and bones, and Hou Qing Lin's blood started boiling, his bones crackling. It looked extremely painful, the kind of pain that could kill weak people.

But Hou Qing Lin endured the pain. He was standing steadily on the second step, his robe fluttering in the wind. Those watching were stunned. Hou Qing Lin had passed the challenge of the second step!

The beautiful woman of the Holy Spirit Dynasty was surprised, she murmured, "His body, blood, and bones might not be powerful enough, but he's extremely determined. It means that if you're determined, even if you lack some things, you can succeed. He will probably have no problem getting onto the third step, either."

Hou Qing Lin remained silent, unlike Crazy Bull, who had been shouting like a madman, and wasn't any weaker than Crazy Bull. Then, Hou Qing Lin stepped onto the third step without any problem, astonishing everyone further. People's hearts started pounding.

There are always talented individuals in hiding, and there is no link between reputation and cultivation level. The people who are

here are all geniuses. Everybody here must be determined!, thought the crowd. After all, they were all geniuses. When Hou Qing Lin climbed onto the first step, the crowd wasn't jealous, they were amazed and admired him, and those who had failed felt even more determined to become stronger.

Those who had failed felt ashamed because they had the impression they weren't determined enough.

At that moment, Hou Qing Lin raised his head and focused on the next step.. Finally, he moved his foot and lifted it. His soul shook violently. An invisible and intangible strength struck his soul, it looked extremely painful, and it felt as if his soul was going to explode.

He released reincarnation intent and stepped fully up onto the next step. His reincarnation strength and Qi dashed to the skies. Hou Qing Lin's Qi was suddenly even more powerful. A strong wind made of reincarnation strength whistled about him.

"He broke through!" The crowd was astonished, including Lin Feng. Then he smiled, happy for his friend.

Hou Qing Lin smiled, too. His silhouette flickered. He moved aside and sat down cross-legged to finish breaking through.

"Lin Feng, your friend is really strong," spoke up Princess Piao Xue. She had thought that Lin Feng would be the only one who could help her when she invited the group along, and had underestimated the others, finding out that Hou Qing Lin was extraordinary too. Surprisingly, he had become a high-level emperor on the flight of stairs!

"Of course!" Lin Feng smiled knowingly. "Back then, in the small world, he used to protect me all the time. I admired him, and I still do."

Princess Piao Xue shivered when she saw Lin Feng's wide smile. She hadn't realized Hou Qing Lin and Lin Feng were so close.

Someone else ran up to the flight of stairs: Zhuo Qing, Diamond Indestructible King-Type Body!

As everybody had anticipated, Zhuo Qing jumped onto the first step without any problem. He had a king-type body, which meant he had the potential to become a king, so of course he couldn't have a body problem. Then, he stepped onto the second step, no problem either. Then, he continued to the third step.

At that moment, Zhuo Qing stopped for a few seconds. A sharp look appeared in his eyes, golden lights appeared around him, sharp golden lights dashed to the skies. People who were very determined weren't affected by that invisible and intangible strength. He was still standing steadily there.

"Will Zhuo Qing do better than everyone else?" some people wondered aloud. Zhuo Qing continued walking towards the fourth step and then up onto it. This one tested a cultivator's soul. A mysterious strength came down on Zhuo Qing's soul, shaking it with the pressure, yet he remained silent and calm. He was still surrounded by dazzling golden lights, and he looked like a motionless mountain.

"As expected, he's stable!" Zhuo Qing moved his foot, getting ready to try the fifth and last step. If he managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage, it would mean that he already met all the requirements to become a peerless cultivator someday.

Zhuo Qing heard someone sigh mentally, as if a Saint were sighing. An endless amount of Dao power crashed onto his body, and suddenly he shouted furiously. Golden lights rose powerfully as he started releasing Dao intent, a dazzling golden circle appeared above his head.

"He's on it, how strong!" Those watching were stunned. Zhuo Qing was on the fifth step, two steps more and he'd be on the Holy Way Stage!

Zhuo Qing continued his slow walk forwards towards the Holy

Way Stage. The crowd shivered, all nervous and staring at him. Finally, Zhuo Qing arrived next to the edge of the stage, and suddenly turned into a light beam, startling everyone!

Chapter 2002: Potential Peerless Cultivators

Zhuo Qing appeared in the sky and landed on the last step again. However, his face had paled, and his cheeks were bright red. A golden light appeared faintly around him. He rose up high into the air and sat down cross-legged. What had happened? He just had to take two more steps and he'd be on the Holy Way Stage!

“Zhuo Qing failed. He can't go onto the Holy Way Stage, who can do it?” wondered someone, as everyone looked at Zhuo Qing, who was now seated cross-legged far above them.

Zhuo Qing murmured, “The Saint is sighing.”

“The Saint is sighing?” Everyone was startled as they looked at the Holy Way Stage. Had Zhuo Qing heard a Saint sigh?

Had he heard a Saint?

“He's got a Diamond Indestructible King-Type Body, he's got all the prerequisites to become a peerless cultivator someday. Unfortunately, he still needs a little bit more, but if he continues studying hard, he'll definitely become a peerless cultivator someday,” said the woman of the Holy Spirit Dynasty slowly. People remained silent, staring at the Holy Way Stage solemnly and respectfully. A Saint had just sighed...

Someone emerged from the crowd and moved towards the Holy Way Stage with a whistling of Qi.

“Chu Chun Qiu!” Many eyes twinkled. Chu Chun Qiu, first cultivator on the Imperial Ranking List in the Holy City. He was the strongest emperor in the Holy City, a symbol and descendant of King Chu!

“Can Chu Chun Qiu do as well as Zhuo Qing?” was the question being whispered. Chu Chun Qiu jumped onto the first step. No problem at all.

Then, he jumped onto the second one, no problem either, he looked like a motionless mountain. His bones and blood were perfect.

He jumped onto the third step, which tested a cultivator's intent. He raised his head and looked at the sky. The crowd had a hallucination, as if this guy was an ancient king.

Then, he jumped onto the fourth step, which tested soul strength. His soul shook, strength rising about him. He was still motionless.

"Fourth step, how strong!" The watchers were shaking. Chu Chun Qiu wasn't struggling at all, it seemed so easy for him.

"Chu Chun Qiu is extremely strong. No wonder he's the first emperor of the Holy City. I wonder whether he'll manage to step onto the fifth step that easily or not. If he can, it means that he has the potential to become a peerless cultivator!" murmured someone, staring at Chu Chun Qiu.

Chu Chun Qiu walked over to the fifth step. Like Zhuo Qing, he heard someone sigh in his brain, and power came down on him, shaking everything. The earth and sky darkened, as if a god were about to appear.

Chu Chun Qiu jumped onto the fifth step, the air still groaning. Just like Zhuo Qing, two more steps forwards and he'd be on the Holy Way Stage!

"He's stable. Chu Chun Qiu did as well as Zhuo Qing so far. He's really talented," someone sighed.

"How strong is he compared to Zhuo Qing?" asked someone.

"They're talented and strong in different ways. It's not because someone is talented that they are good at fighting. Chu Chun Qiu is not as strong as Zhuo Qing, who has a king-type body. But he has the potential to become a peerless cultivator," replied someone else. Talent, strength, and fighting abilities were all different

things.

When Chu Chun Qiu sensed that he was completely stable, he started walking again. His ancient emperor intent was intense, he was now surrounded by ancient emperors!

The earth and sky started shaking again.

Someone groaned with pain as if their organs were about to be cut open. Their soul was quivering.

“Chu Chun Qiu is making the sixth step, he’s already surpassed Zhuo Qing. The strength is even more explosive!” someone exclaimed. Chu Chun Qiu had already taken two steps forward on the fifth step. Zhuo Qing had been pushed backwards after the first step. Did Chu Chun Qiu have a greater chance to become a peerless cultivator than Zhuo Qing?

Zhuo Qing opened his eyes and looked down at Chu Chun Qiu. This guy had taken one step more than him! How impressive!

However, Zhuo Qing quickly closed his eyes again and returned to his meditation.

Last step, if he manages to get to the Holy Way Stage, it’ll mean that he has all the necessary characteristics to become a peerless cultivator someday. Chu Chun Qiu lifted his foot as he took a deep breath, it was his last step...

At that moment, an eerie silence fell over the crowd. Chu Chun Qiu moved his foot. He raised his head and smiled proudly. His hair and robe were fluttering in the wind.

There was a tolling sound, like a bell being struck.

Someone coughed blood and their face turned deathly pale. They had the sensation their organs were going to explode.

Lin Feng and his friends’ faces changed slightly. They had heard someone sigh. The pressure was much more intense than a moment before, Lin Feng and his friends had the sensation they

were facing an ancient king. The pressure was incredible!

“Is that a Saint’s voice?” murmured Lin Feng at the sound. Chu Chun Qiu finished making his step, everybody staring at his back in astonishment.

“King-type body, I’m convinced that guy has a king-type body. He just hides it,” declared someone.

“Indeed, there’s king Qi. His kind of king Qi is more powerful than Zhuo Qing’s king Qi. Chu Chun Qiu has been hiding his king-type body the whole time,” said someone else. Everybody agreed and nodded. They were convinced that the first emperor of the Holy City had a king-type body.

At that moment, Chu Chun Qiu was facing the Holy Way Stage. If he took one more step forward, he’d be on the Holy Way Stage.

“Will there be a terrifying strength on the Holy Way Stage?” someone wondered softly. Chu Chun Qiu stopped for a few seconds, before taking a step forward. As he lifted his foot towards the stage, his hair and robe fluttered violently. Chu Chun Qiu’s Qi didn’t weaken, he looked like an ancient king. Finally, he put his lead foot on it, and then his second foot. He was the first person to step onto the Holy Way Stage!

Silence reigned. Surprisingly, someone had all the characteristics required to be a peerless cultivator, and that guy was a student at the Celestial Godly University, from the Chu Clan in the Vast Celestial Ancient City.

“A new peerless cultivator might appear in the Holy City in the future!” someone murmured. Chu Chun Qiu had the potential to become a peerless cultivator!

The Holy Spirit Dynasty spokeswoman shivered. Chu Chun Qiu was here for the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he had the potential to become a peerless cultivator.

“I’m happy for the Chu Clan!” said someone at that moment.

Back in the days, King Chu was powerful and influential, but they had only read about him in books.

“Not necessarily. Back then, there was an insane peerless cultivator in the Chu Clan, he’s now in the Moon Palace.”

“And it’s not because you have the characteristics to become a peerless king that you actually are one. It just means you have potential. You have to practice cultivation properly and be lucky to become one too.”

“But at least, it proves that he’s extremely strong, and I don’t think I could compete with him in a battle.” People chattered, while Chu Chun Qiu was still on the stage. People who didn’t have king-type bodies could become kings and people who did have a king-type body didn’t necessarily become kings. Everybody’s path was different!

Chapter 2003: Holy Throne

Chu Chun Qiu was still standing on the Holy Way Stage, looking like a king, but not arrogant at all. People were watching him. Suddenly, on the Holy Way Stage, a throne appeared, nine dragons carved on it. Their faces were facing Chu Chun Qiu, and they contained Sky Absorbing Qi.

“What’s that?” was the next question from multiple throats. Surprisingly, a dragon throne had appeared on the Holy Way Stage! It looked like an ancient throne, the seat of a Saint!

“That throne appeared because Chu Chun Qiu got onto the Holy Way Stage. Will Chu Chun Qiu obtain an ancient kind of strength?”

“It’s a Holy Emperor’s Throne, it’s an ancient throne! In old days, the Saints sat on it!” said someone. Everybody glanced at that person, a young man with imperial Qi. He was staring at the throne.

Holy Way Stage, Holy Way Stage, it was as if he had suddenly understood something.

“How do you know?”

“I’ve seen such thrones in my Dynasty. It’s an ancient throne, the kind that are transmitted by Ancestors. I’ve seen it in ancient paintings, it even looks like my own throne,” replied the man. He was a prince from a Dynasty.

When the crowd heard him, they looked at the woman of the Holy Spirit Dynasty solemnly. She was also staring at the Holy Way Stage.

“Holy Way Stage, Holy Imperial Throne.”

Chu Chun Qiu was staring at the throne. King Qi pulsed around him. The Holy Way Stage wasn’t the last step at all. The strength which emerged from the Holy Imperial Throne was even more

terrifying.

Chu Chun Qiu's robe was fluttering violently as he made a step and suddenly groaned with pain. His face started bleeding. Everybody who was watching could sense the terrifying pressure. Qi started to shriek as Chu Chun Qiu made another step, but he couldn't handle it anymore. He was driven backwards, so hard it looked like his bones had been crushed, a strong wind carrying him back.

Those watchers were quiet. He had failed. Even though Chu Chun Qiu had managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage, he hadn't passed the challenge of the throne.

He crashed to the ground. He looked expressionlessly up at the Holy Way Stage. The king Qi around him also dispersed.

"It disappeared." Everyone sighed as the throne disappeared.

"The throne only appears when someone is on the Holy Way Stage," mused someone else. A new person ran towards the Holy Way Stage. Seeing Chu Chun Qiu advance that far made everyone feel even more determined. Many people wanted to try!

Several more people tried, all of them determined, and even when they failed, they were determined to study harder and to become stronger. At least, the stage helped them know where they had to improve.

However, nobody did as well as Chu Chun Qiu. Even if he had failed to sit on the throne, he had proven to himself that he had the potential to become a peerless cultivator someday. Even Zhuo Qing hadn't gone so far!

So many geniuses, thought Lin Feng, watching people try one after another in silent approval. The first step was already a great challenge. Having the necessary body characteristics to become a peerless cultivator wasn't easy. Some people even managed to advance as far as Zhuo Qing and step on the fifth step.

“Princess, are you not trying?” Lin Feng asked Princess Piao Xue.

“No, I have no hope. But I can’t wait to see you try! I’m guessing you can get to the fourth step at least!” the Princess replied with a confident smile.

“Maybe,” Lin Feng answered non-committedly.

A silhouette flickered as Jian Mang gave it a try. When he took the first step, people thought he was going to fall, as he even coughed up blood, but he endured it. The second step wasn’t easy for him, either. However, on the third step, he was as motionless as a mountain. On the fourth step, the invisible and intangible strength bombarded his soul, and he was driven away.

He wasn’t dispirited, however. He was happy and even more determined. The people who had come with Lin Feng were all incredibly strong. A short time before, Hou Qing Lin had reached the fourth step and he had broken through, he had even become a high-level emperor!

“Meng Qing, you want to try?” Lin Feng whispered to Meng Qing.

“No. I can get onto the fifth step,” Meng Qing replied easily.

Lin Feng was surprised and laughed. “Perhaps you can get onto the Holy Way Stage?”

“I’m not going,” Meng Qing shook her head. Lin Feng shrugged. He wasn’t going to force her. Sometimes, she wasn’t interested in doing some things.

“Lin Feng, go and sit on the throne,” said Meng Qing, smiling at Lin Feng. After the next challenger came back, Lin Feng went up to the stage.

“Lin Feng...” Many people recognized him now. He was a medium-level emperor, he had defeated Ji Chang, he was the second emperor of the Holy City, and after having been amazed by Chu Chun Qiu, they couldn’t wait to see Lin Feng’s performance.

How great was the difference between Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu, the first and second emperors of the Holy City?

“The Holy Way Stage has nothing to do with one’s cultivation level. It’s about one’s body. How far do you think Lin Feng can go?”

“His physical strength is incredible. In terms of blood and bones, he should have no problem. The first and second step should be easy for him. He defeated Ji Chang, so the third step shouldn’t stop him either. The fourth step is about soul strength, maybe he’s like his two friends and will stop there.” People chattered one after another. Most people thought highly of Lin Feng and were convinced he’d get onto the fourth step, which was already amazing. Most people thought he couldn’t make it to the last step, however.

“Maybe, since he defeated Ji Chang as a medium-level emperor, the fourth step should be doable, but the fifth step, I don’t think so.”

While they were talking, Lin Feng walked up onto the first step, and a fearsome strength bore down on him like a hammer. But he didn’t stop, and immediately jumped onto the second step.

His blood started boiling, and his bones emitted crackling sounds. The invisible and intangible strength was explosive. His entire body was being attacked.

Lin Feng looked relaxed though, and continued walking to the third step.

A terrifying and oppressive strength bombarded his will. His brain hurt. He suddenly had the impression he was powerless and useless, like a nobody. His will was being crushed!

However, that nobody raised his head and welcomed the terrifying strength without flinching. Demon intent surged around him!

“Third step, he looks relaxed. He has no problems in terms of bones, blood, and intent, the fourth step should be fine too...”

Lin Feng still looked relaxed. He walked up to the fourth step, and his soul was hammered. If a cultivator had a weak soul strength, the stairs could kill them instantly. Lin Feng felt tiny, as if he were facing a giant. Determination was a constant challenge though, many people had managed to get onto the first and second step thanks to their willpower.

“He’s stable!” the watchers observed quickly. Lin Feng had most of the characteristics to become a peerless cultivator someday. The top two emperors of the Holy City were extremely strong, as expected!

Lin Feng continued walking towards the fifth step, stepping up on it, and he heard someone sigh. An invisible, intangible, oppressive, and explosive strength crashed down onto him. He couldn’t protect himself, he could just welcome the energies.

Lin Feng raised his head, he wasn’t going to give up. He looked up at the sky proudly. Life and death Dao intent surged around him and turned into a cloud. It was like Lin Feng was fighting against the gods, against the saints.

“He’s surprisingly stable!” those watching noticed in astonishment. Lin Feng was really strong, making it to the fifth step. The two cultivators of the Holy City were both incredible!

However, while everybody was being amazed, Lin Feng continued walking forward, the air rumbling at his approach. A terrifying, invisible and intangible strength filled the air and assaulted Lin Feng’s soul.

Lin Feng took a second step.

“No...” He looked like an ancient demon to those watching, he was going to make a third step!

The bell tolled, destructive energies roiled and many people

pulled long faces, not daring to look. Lin Feng was going to go onto the stage, something that Zhuo Qing hadn't managed to accomplish!

Chapter 2004: Me, Alone, on the Throne!

Many people's faces paled, some coughed up blood. The invisible and intangible strength was oppressing everyone. They also heard the Saint sigh in an ancient voice.

They watched Lin Feng. After his third step, everything had been shaking, then the wind suddenly dispersed. He was still steady, and continued walking towards the Holy Way Stage.

"Can Lin Feng get onto the stage?" they wondered. The two top cultivators of the Holy City seemed to be the protagonists on that day. Would they both be remembered as people who had been onto the Holy Way Stage?

Chu Chun Qiu was the only one who had managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage so far, and Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu were both from the Holy City.

Nobody had thought that Lin Feng would be the second one to do this. Was Lin Feng going to accomplish something only Chu Chun Qiu had managed to do so far?

Like Chu Chun Qiu, Lin Feng stepped onto the Holy Way Stage.

The atmosphere was eerily silent. Lin Feng had succeeded. Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng had both been onto the Holy Way Stage. They both had the potential to become peerless cultivators. He just had to break through now.

"How incredible, the two cultivators from the Holy City are amazing."

"Lin Feng is really talented. I underestimated him. He defeated Ji Chang, and Ji Chang wasn't weak, but Lin Feng is really strong and talented. Otherwise he wouldn't be on the Holy Way Stage!" were the hushed whispers.

When Lin Feng stepped onto the Holy Way Stage, he understood what Chu Chun Qiu had gone through, as the pressure was

terrifying. The oppressive strength surrounded his body and oppressed his veins, flesh, and muscles. It was as if the cosmos was about to collapse onto him!

The Holy Imperial Throne appeared slowly. The throne of peerless cultivators. Endless ancient Qi rolled around him. Lin Feng looked at the throne, and thought it looked alive.

“Where does the Saint’s voice come from?” Lin Feng asked aggressively. He took a step forwards.

The crowd heard another ancient sigh and sensed a terrifying pressure building. Lin Feng looked proud, like an ancient king. However, Lin Feng was the only one who could understand what he was going through. Everyone was staring at him. His blood was boiling violently, his soul was shaking, his will was being crushed.

“Is that a Saint’s voice?” murmured Lin Feng. He stared at the Holy Imperial Throne and heard the sigh again. It came from there. Lin Feng had the sensation that the whole Holy Way Stage was alive. “Why would I fear a Saint’s sigh?”

Lin Feng took another step forward. A hurricane appeared as the Saint sighed again. Each time, the strength oppressed him badly, but Lin Feng kept releasing demon energy. He looked like an ancient demon. The Saint couldn’t crush his will!

Lin Feng was getting closer and closer to the throne, those watching were astonished. He had done better than Chu Chun Qiu! Many of them were bleeding now, they had the sensation they were going to suffocate...

“He’s still walking forwards...” someone murmured.

Dong!

The earth and sky shook again. People kept coughing up blood, and some fell down on their knees, their faces all pale.

That guy is insane!, thought Chu Chun Qiu, staring at Lin Feng. He had been there, he knew how terrifying the pressure was.

Maybe if he had been more determined, he would have managed to get onto the throne but he hadn't thought it was necessary.

"An old man is sighing, the Holy Way Stage is his body," said Chu Chun Qiu. People were startled and turned to Chu Chun Qiu. Their eyes were glittering knowingly.

"The Saint's body!" Chu Chun Qiu repeated indifferently.

Another sigh swept out and made the stage shake. Everybody's faces were pale now. Many geniuses were badly injured.

He's crazy!, thought everyone staring at Lin Feng.

People were now being hurled away from the stage, one after another as the Saint kept sighing. People were astonished.

"The Saint's voice, it's really a Saint's voice."

The crowd was trembling. Lin Feng was making the Saint sigh unceasingly. The earth and sky were resonating with it.

Lin Feng's face was grey, he looked dead, it wasn't his own death Dao intent anymore. It was like the earth and sky were about to collapse. His blood was boiling, thunder was echoing, his soul shook, it was as if he were about to die. Only the Saint sounded indestructible.

Lin Feng progressively stopped focusing on the voice and ignored it. He kept calm, as if the voice had disappeared. He focused on calm, the stillness of death.

The immortality of death. Suddenly, Lin Feng smiled indifferently. Life, death?

The Path of Life and Death, how could he fear life and death?

How could the Saint's voice destroy his Dao?

The Saint kept sighing, but it didn't matter to Lin Feng anymore.

Lin Feng was fearless, he just slowly walked forwards in a particularly calm and serene way, as if nothing could stop him.

Finally, the crowd heard the sound of the Holy Way, as the earth and sky trembled. The sigh seemed to be indestructible.

When Lin Feng made another step, the Saint sighed one last time, many people were bleeding and in agony. The earth and sky became normal again, the sun reappeared.

The crowd had the impression they had gone through a natural catastrophe!

They raised their heads again and saw Lin Feng. He was now standing before the throne.

“I wouldn’t have thought that the most talented person today would be Lin Feng,” someone sighed. Lin Feng wasn’t the strongest one here, but he had passed all the challenges of the Holy Way Stage, and now he was standing before the Holy Imperial Throne. It proved that Lin Feng was terrifyingly talented.

“He defeated Ji Chang in the Holy City, and now he’s on the Holy Way Stage, it’s a good thing for the Holy City’s Champion University.”

Someone smiled at Chu Chun Qiu and asked, “Chu Chun Qiu, what did you mean about the Saint’s body?”

“The Holy Way Stage is or has been made using the body of a Saint. Each step has been created using a specific part of his body. For example, the second step has probably been made using his blood and bones, the third step his intent and so on...” Chu Chun Qiu explained slowly. People listened to him and looked surprised. It was just a bold guess, but it also made sense.

“What about the throne?” someone asked Chu Chun Qiu. If the Holy Way Stage was made of a Saint’s body, then what about the throne?

“The saint’s soul,” Chu Chun Qiu said emotionlessly. The crowd shivered and looked back at Lin Feng. He was standing there, tall and silent. After a long time, Lin Feng finally turned around. His

robe fluttered in the wind as he sat down on the throne.

Boom boom boom...!

At that moment, the earth and sky started shaking violently, like an earthquake was happening.

“What’s going on?” The crowd looked around in astonishment. Was everything going to collapse?

At that moment, the women of the Holy Spirit Dynasty all looked astonished. They were all shaking, too. They fell down on their knees, staring at the Holy Spirit Stage.

At that moment, a terrifying Qi emerged in the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s territory. Their whole territory was shaking as it came forth.

Chapter 2005: Ancient War

The crowd was trembling. The geniuses were all staring at Lin Feng and taking deep breaths. Lin Feng was seated on the Holy Imperial Throne! He wasn't even known for having a king-type body or anything!

"What are they doing?" asked someone who noticed that the beautiful women of the Dynasty were on their knees and looking at the Holy Way Stage. What did that throne mean for the Holy Spirit Dynasty? Was there something secret going on? They had activated the Holy Way Stage and invited geniuses, what was the reason?

A fairyland appeared. There were many strong cultivators present, and their Qi was astonishing.

One of them looked at the crowd and said calmly, "Today, we invited many geniuses over, but now the event is over. Please leave."

They were kicking out their guests?

The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng was seated on the throne and the Holy Spirit Dynasty was kicking out guests? Many people hadn't tried their chance with the Holy Way Stage yet. They were very annoyed. However, they knew they couldn't go as far as Lin Feng.

"See you," said some people, glancing at Lin Feng one last time before leaving.

Princess Piao Xue and the others didn't leave. Princess Piao Xue looked at the strong cultivator in the sky and said, "Master, Lin Feng is our guest, I'm from the Tianci Dynasty. We're waiting for him here."

"Piao Xue, little girl, don't worry, we won't steal your guests. We'll bring him back. Please go back," the strong cultivator said to

her. Piao Xue's eyes glittered, she wasn't reassured at all.

"I'm staying here." said Meng Qing slowly.

The strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty looked at Meng Qing and said, "Who are you to him?"

"His wife. I follow Lin Feng everywhere," Meng Qing replied evenly.

"Alright, you can stay," said the strong cultivator dismissively.

"Meng Qing, be careful," Hou Qing Lin said to Meng Qing. Meng Qing nodded back.

Piao Xue, Hou Qing Lin, and the others all departed. Even if the Holy Spirit Dynasty wanted to do anything bad to Lin Feng, nobody could protect him. But they were also convinced that the Holy Spirit Dynasty wouldn't harm Lin Feng.

—

At that moment, Lin Feng had closed his eyes. He had the impression that he was traveling back in time.

He turned into a spirit and appeared in the ancient days. This was the Dynasty of the old times, when they were truly powerful.

There were wrecked buildings everywhere.

"Qi Tian Dynasty, when the Dynasties were one. They will always exist, however," said a voice in Lin Feng's mind. It sounded like an old man's voice, it was similar or maybe even the same as the voice he had heard when he was on the stage. The man sounded sad...

Before Lin Feng, apart from Dynasties, there were many powerful cultivators. They were all fighting, everything was being crushed around them. Fists and energies kept colliding...

Such powerful spells, there are some spells I've never even imagined, thought Lin Feng, shaken at the sight. He saw a cultivator punch another one, his fist transformed ninety-nine

times. The earth and sky kept shaking as gigantic craters appeared. Had those cultivators transcended worldliness?

However, Lin Feng didn't sense any Qi. He was just watching...

“All the emperors cohabited. That's why the Dynasty was so powerful. They didn't want it to disappear. However, at some point, it destroyed that harmony. Cultivators want power, and Saints are no exceptions. They live so long, sometimes they feel like they're suffocating. Their only pleasure is to see their children and grandchildren grow up.”

Lin Feng heard the voice again. Lin Feng had compassion, he felt a bit sad. Indeed, being so old and seeing society change all the time was sad.

What was the “it” which had destroyed that harmony, though?

“It made everything change. It allowed everybody to have hope again. However, all the Saints also started having explosive battles. Everybody started attacking one another. They all wanted power and control. Nobody won the battle, so they stopped. Then their descendants started fighting to avenge their ancestors, and the Saints realized they had made a mistake,” the man sighed.

It was the same sigh Lin Feng had heard in the outside world. The Saints regretted the battle they had sealed in historical remains. They had hoped their descendants would solve the issue, but in the end, it didn't work.

“The Saints knew that remorse couldn't change anything, so they destroyed everything except for a few historical remains, such as the Holy Way Stage you are on. I left it. So many years have passed and now you're here.”

When Lin Feng heard that, his heart started pounding. Lin Feng had had the impression he was facing a real Saint, was it the case?

“The Holy Way Stage is my body, my blood, my soul. Only the throne can grant someone access to this place where you can watch

the ancient war. Since you came here, you will also become a Holy King someday. You've probably never had doubts about that, or you wouldn't be here.

“I don't know whether you're my descendant, a member of my Dynasty, or... of course, I don't know whether the Holy Spirit Dynasty still exists or not, but in any case you're lucky to be here. If my Dynasty still exists, please wish them the best. If you're from my Dynasty, then it's even better.”

Lin Feng's heart was pounding. All the historical remains of Qi Tian Holy Town had been left by the Saints?

To activate those historical remains, cultivators need to be incredibly talented, they needed to have the potential to become peerless cultivators?

“Alright, I will put the battle in your memories. Learn from it. And I, I will never return,” said the voice. Lin Feng suddenly remembered the ancient war in agonizing detail. He had the sensation his head was going to explode, and he trembled at the force of it.

In the outside world, the strong cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty were all staring at Lin Feng, their hearts pounding. All the Saints had fallen back in the days during the great war, and many of their descendants had died too. Some historical remains had even been destroyed. Many people had tried to activate the historical remains for a long time, but they had always failed.

And today, someone from abroad, a genius, had done it!

Chapter 2006: Holy Dynasty Prince

When Lin Feng opened his eyes, they were glittering. He was still on the throne, the Stage trembling around him. The throne and the battle stage slowly became transparent, and faded away into non-existence.

The members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty were astonished, especially the elders who were pulling long faces. Even though nobody had ever managed to sit on the throne, they could use the Holy Way Stage to test their descendants, using the battle stage to see how talented they were. It was a good tool, and now it was dispersing and disappearing.

“The stage was made of the Saint’s body, and now he will never return, so it also disappeared.” Lin Feng understood that. Now that the Saint had transmitted his memories to Lin Feng, he had disappeared and would never return.

“What did you obtain?” an old man asked Lin Feng. He didn’t sound furious, they just knew that the Holy Way Stage was a treasure which used to belong to their Ancestors. But what had Lin Feng obtained or seen when sitting on the throne?

“I saw the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s Saint from the old days,” Lin Feng replied calmly.

The strong cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty looked at him sharply. Lin Feng felt pressured.

“What did you obtain?” asked the man again.

“He transmitted some memories of an ancient battle to me. They knew back then that the Qi Tian Dynasty was going to collapse,” said Lin Feng.

Everyone remained silent. The old man looked at Lin Feng and noticed that he was still strangely calm.

After a long time, he said, “The Holy Spirit Dynasty has existed

for a very long time. Nobody has never managed to sit down on the throne. The most outstanding disciples of the Holy Spirit Dynasty have gotten close to the throne, only one step away, but failed even though they were so close to success. That's why we wanted to see if there was any genius in the Dark Night Region who could succeed. We didn't have much hope, it was just an idea. And now you succeeded, and we don't know what to do."

"I understand," said Lin Feng, nodding calmly.

"We used to laugh about it and say that if someone succeeded, they'd become the king of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. However, you did it, what you obtained should belong to us," the strong cultivator went on calmly.

Meng Qing's heart was pounding violently. She understood their opinion, but Lin Feng and she couldn't protect themselves.

"Master, that's your final decision?" asked Lin Feng.

The strong cultivator remained silent for a few seconds, Meng Qing clenched her fists as ice appeared around her.

"You did what the geniuses of our Dynasty have not managed to do from generation to generation. You've seen our Ancestor. If we killed you and stole what you have, it would be disrespectful to our Ancestor. And you did something great, which means you're very talented. You'll definitely become a peerless cultivator. Even if I steal what you've obtained, it won't help us gain a king," the man mused. The other cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty listened calmly. Nobody expressed their opinion. They had already talked about this before.

Meng Qing took a deep breath in relief.

"Therefore, I think we should grant you the title of Holy Dynasty Prince. Not only won't we hurt you, but we'll also support you and help you become a peerless cultivator. However, you must promise me one thing!" said the man slowly.

“What thing?” Lin Feng asked calmly.

“I will choose the most beautiful and most outstanding woman of the Holy Spirit Dynasty and you will need to have children with her. You’ll also leave your children live in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. You will also transmit the knowledge you obtained today to your sons. Whether you want to stay in a relationship with the woman or not doesn’t matter. If you do it’s great, if you don’t it doesn’t matter,” said the old man calmly.

Lin Feng was irked. It was great for the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he was talented so they didn’t want to kill him, and if he had children with their women, outstanding young people would emerge in their Dynasty, too. He would also have to transmit his knowledge to them. Even if he was a foreigner, he would be closely bound to the Dynasty.

Lin Feng admired the strong cultivator for his persuasive abilities. He even wanted to sacrifice an outstanding and beautiful woman’s virginity so the clan would have outstanding young people.

Lin Feng frowned. For him, it wasn’t bad either. It was a win-win proposition: a beautiful and outstanding woman, being backed up by the Holy Spirit Dynasty, his sons would become the future kings of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Everything sounded perfect.

“I agree,” Meng Qing spoke up at that moment. Lin Feng was astonished.

“Meng Qing?” Lin Feng looked into Meng Qing’s beautiful eyes.

“Lin Feng, I think it’s a good deal,” said Meng Qing. For Lin Feng, everything was perfect. He couldn’t refuse.

The strong cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty looked at her and nodded, “Lin Feng, you’re extremely talented, and you have such an incredible wife already, you’re very lucky. We won’t cause you trouble, we just want you to have children with the women of

our Dynasty. You don't even need to get married to them."

"I agree," Meng Qing said again.

"Alright, I will choose the most beautiful and outstanding woman of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Don't worry, you can choose one yourself, Lin Feng," the Holy Spirit leader said.

"Do I have a second choice?" asked Lin Feng.

"You must understand that we care about our Ancestor's legacy. For you, there is no other option, or it wouldn't be as perfect."

Lin Feng remained silent for a few seconds and finally nodded. Indeed, nothing could be better.

"Haven't you seen the Holy Dynasty Prince!?" the old man turned and shouted at the crowd.

Suddenly, many people bowed before Lin Feng and shouted, "Holy Dynasty Prince!"

Lin Feng looked at them and then said calmly, "Can I leave?"

"You're the Holy Dynasty Prince now, that's a much higher social status than an ordinary prince. Your sons will also become Holy Dynasty Princes. You're free to do what you want."

"I'm off then," Lin Feng said calmly. His silhouette flickered away, and Meng Qing followed him. They held hands and left.

—

Lin Feng firmly held onto Meng Qing's hand.

"Lin Feng, it doesn't matter. They will even back you up in the future, it's a good thing," smiled Meng Qing.

"You know, I don't mind having them back me up," said Lin Feng, looking at Meng Qing.

"I don't mind, either," agreed Meng Qing, smiling gently.

Lin Feng caressed her face and said, "I want my first child with you."

When Meng Qing heard him, she blushed. She looked so beautiful at that moment!

Lin Feng went back to the Tianci Dynasty and stopped there for a few minutes. He asked Princess Piao Xue to help him get some pieces of information concerning the Moon Palace. He initially wanted to ask Yi Ren some things, but he didn't have the opportunity. So Piao Xue told him that the Moon Palace had been invited by the Ancient Jade Dynasty.

After that, Lin Feng went to the Ancient Jade Dynasty. Piao Xue also followed Lin Feng.

The Ancient Jade Dynasty wasn't the oldest Dynasty, they had emerged a long time afterwards. The founder of the Ancient Jade Dynasty was called the Jade Nymph, and her social status was very mysterious. The Ancient Jade Dynasty had mostly women, but they were very strong.

But Piao Xue didn't fear them, so when Lin Feng told her what he wanted to do, she decided to follow him. After all, this guy was crazy!

Chapter 2007: Kidnapping

Lin Feng and Piao Xue landed on the territory of the Ancient Jade Dynasty. Two guards stopped them, but Princess Piao Xue said, “I’m Princess Piao Xue from the Tianci Dynasty. We came to see your Holy Princess.”

“Since you’re a princess, please follow me,” said one of the guards extremely politely and led the way. The other guard left by himself, he had probably gone to inform the Holy Princess.

The other guard brought Lin Feng and Piao Xue to a beautiful place for them to rest. There was a cliff with a waterfall, and a natural pool at the foot of the waterfall. There were some pavilions scattered around, all in all, it was beautiful scenery.

“Please have a rest here. The Holy Princess will come to see you.”

“Alright, thank you,” said Piao Xue politely.

“I shall leave for now,” said the guard, smiling thinly.

“Does the Tianci Dynasty have a Holy Princess or a Prince?” asked Lin Feng to Princess Piao Xue, after the guard had left.

“We don’t, maybe we will someday though,” Piao Xue smiled. Lin Feng understood something.

“The Ancient Jade Dynasty is different from other groups. They’ve always had a Holy Princess, and there’s only one. People call her Holy Princess or Holy Jade Princess, she’s incredible, extremely strong,” explained Piao Xue. Lin Feng nodded. All the Dynasties’ princes were already extremely strong, so the Holy Princess was probably even stronger.

“Lin Feng, what happened in the Holy Spirit Dynasty?” asked Piao Xue, smiling at Lin Feng, “Of course, if you don’t feel like telling me, it’s okay.”

“Nah, I sat down on the throne and then I landed on an ancient

battlefield. I received some memories from the Holy Spirit Dynasty's Ancestor, and I became their Holy Dynasty Prince," said Lin Feng lightly.

Piao Xue was naturally astonished, however!

"Don't worry. The Tianci Dynasty invited me, and in the mysterious world, I will collaborate with you," Lin Feng smiled. Princess Piao Xue was relieved. She was still astonished that Lin Feng had become their Holy Dynasty Prince, though! If Lin Feng wanted to help the Holy Spirit Dynasty, she had nothing to say. After all, he was their Holy Dynasty Prince now.

"Princess Piao Xue, you're here, why didn't you tell me?" a gentle voice drifted in. Lin Feng gazed into the distance and saw a silhouette. There were many other people arriving, most from the Moon Palace. Yi Ren Lei and Qiu Yue Xin were among them. The leader of the group looked like a celestial being, and was extremely beautiful. She was the Holy Jade Princess!

"Oh, that's Lin Feng. I've heard about your achievements on the Holy Way Stage. You even managed to sit on the Holy Imperial Throne. You're extremely talented. You've surpassed many monstrously strong people. A pleasure to meet you," said the Holy Jade Princess. She was very friendly. Lin Feng looked at Qiu Yue Xin and said, "Holy Jade Princess, forgive me for my boldness, but I came here because I'm looking for someone."

"Oh? Who?" asked the Holy Jade Princess.

Lin Feng turned to Qiu Yue Xin and said, "Come with me."

"Qiu Yue Xin?" The Holy Jade Princess looked at her. So Lin Feng had come for her?

Qiu Yue Xin released an ice-cold Qi and said to Lin Feng, "I don't know you. I'm walking on the Path of Emotionlessness."

"If you were emotionless, I wouldn't have disturbed you. However, Empress Xi wants to control you using emotionlessness

and I don't agree. For Yue Xin, I have to prevent you from walking on that path." Lin Feng walked forwards and released a terrifying Qi.

The Holy Jade Princess frowned and said, "Lin Feng, you're in my territory, the Ancient Jade Dynasty, and the Moon Palace's celestial beings are our guests. Do you think it's the right place to do that?"

"Qiu Yue Xin is my woman, she's a member of my family. It has nothing to do with you, princess. If you want to get involved, I won't blame you. If the Ancient Jade Dynasty gets involved, I will leave. However, if you get involved in my personal affairs, we will be enemies," said Lin Feng calmly. He slowly walked forwards.

The Holy Jade Princess spat icily, "You're threatening me?"

"If you think so, then I don't care," said Lin Feng indifferently.

"Princess, I'll solve the situation myself!" Qiu Yue Xin said icily.

Qiu Yue Xin's silhouette flickered. She rose up into the air. Lin Feng also rose up and faced Qiu Yue Xin.

"Let's see if Empress Xi's work was properly done. Let's see how strong you've become!" said Lin Feng. He flashed ahead, appearing in front of Qiu Yue Xin, and raised his fist.

The earth and sky whistled as the emotionlessness Dao appeared. Lin Feng suddenly felt bitterly cold. The emotionlessness energy was ice-cold and as sharp as blades. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to become paralyzed and emotionless.

Their energies collided. Qiu Yue Xin was propelled backwards. Lin Feng had the impression he was in a rain of blood.

"Is that emotionlessness Dao? You still have so much affection strength inside of you. Empress Xi, someday, you'll be my slave," Lin Feng said icily. Lin Feng was also becoming emotionless too; his will was being absorbed.

Qiu Yue Xin released terrifying emotionlessness energies which blotted out the sky.

“Emotionlessness is the best path to achieve enlightenment!” retorted Qiu Yue Xin icily. A wind made of emotionlessness strength started blowing. Lin Feng was surrounded by the energies.

However, he remained calm and serene and released Dao intent. His eyes turned black and he stared at Qiu Yue Xin.

“The path of emotionlessness is bullshit. If you’re emotionless, you don’t care about anything, you also don’t care about enlightenment. Being free and unrestrained is the best way to achieve enlightenment, not emotionlessness. Using Marks of the Path to understand Dao is stupid for example, it’s not pure. So it’s even worse if someone makes you do something,” said Lin Feng.

Qiu Yue Xin’s heart twitched. He was trying to destroy her Dao will!

The Holy Jade Princess shivered when she heard him. Dao modeled itself after nature. Dao wasn’t about oppressing one’s Dao and emotions. Being free and unrestrained was the best way to achieve enlightenment. It was the first time she heard such interesting concepts. Lin Feng was very clever...

“Yue Xin, do you remember you abandoned your family?” asked Lin Feng, he sounded like a demon. He wanted to find her weakness. “Remember that in Ba Huang, you became emotionless to protect me!”

He still sounded like a demon. The crowd noticed that Qiu Yue Xin’s emotionlessness Dao was slowly dispersing. Lin Feng’s Dao intent was much more powerful than hers.

Lin Feng kept getting closer and closer to Qiu Yue Xin. “Emotions are important. You’re my woman. I love you. If your Dao wants to steal you from me, then I’ll destroy your Dao.”

Qiu Yue Xin's heart shook violently.

Lin Feng was getting closer and closer to her. Qiu Yue Xin's hair was fluttering in the wind, she punched out in his direction. Her Dao shrieked at him.

Lin Feng also waved his hands and death strength crashed into her emotionlessness energy. Lin Feng accelerated in a blur of motion.

"Look at me!" shouted Lin Feng explosively. Qiu Yue Xin sensed a terrifying strength invade her brain. She had the sensation she was losing control. Lin Feng jumped towards her and took her in his arms, "Princess Piao Xue, let's go!"

The members of the Moon Palace were astonished when they saw Lin Feng hug Qiu Yue Xin. They all moved at the same time, trying to stop him.

"Those who try to stop me will die!" shouted Lin Feng grimly. World of the Living Imprints appeared and slammed down. When the women of the Moon Palace sensed Lin Feng's energies, they retreated, finding themselves suddenly surrounded by death energies.

Lin Feng was gone in a gust of wind. The Holy Jade Princess watched Lin Feng leave, her eyes glittering. That guy was so aggressive. Wasn't he afraid of the Moon Palace's revenge? The Moon Palace was terrifyingly strong!

"Holy Princess, I'm sorry," said Princess Piao Xue, smiling at the Holy Jade Princess. She followed after Lin Feng.

If the Dao wants to steal you from me, then I'll destroy your Dao!

Chapter 2008: Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill

Lin Feng took Qiu Yue Xin back to the Tianci Dynasty.

At that moment, in his spirit world, Qiu Yue Xin was stunned by the landscapes. She looked at Lin Feng and said, "Where are we?"

"My world," said Lin Feng calmly.

"What do you intend to do?" They were in a boundless flatland.

"I know that you haven't fundamentally changed, only your Dao embryo has changed. I know you're not completely autonomous. Empress Xi can influence you, a part of you is Empress Xi. I will not let you off until the imprint Empress Xi put in your body is completely gone, and your Emotionlessness Dao is destroyed. Only then will you be Qiu Yue Xin," said Lin Feng solemnly.

He raised his hand and the former site of Tiantai appeared, all eighty-one palaces. One palace was where he had lived back in the day.

Lin Feng released his godly awareness, which contained threads of immortal strength. They turned into memories. Lin Feng and Qiu Yue Xin's silhouettes appeared there. They looked very close to one another.

Lin Feng turned around and waved his hand again. Many images appeared all around them, including the numerous times when Lin Feng used to provoke Qiu Yue Xin in the small world, the many times they battled, and so on.

Lin Feng, Meng Qing, Qiu Yue Xin, the three of them in the water, or when they were in Emperor Yu's world.

Lin Feng waved his hand again. Xuan Yuan appeared, Tian Long Divine Castle's people.

No matter where Qiu Yue Xin looked, she was surrounded by

familiar memories. Qiu Yue Xin's emotionlessness strength kept pulsing around her, and she was shaking.

"She had a life, friends, a family, and now Empress Xi, you want to destroy her. How could I let you?" said Lin Feng grimly. The last scene which appeared was when they were outside the Moon Imperial Palace, when Lin Feng looked crushed and devastated. Qiu Yue Xin had tears in her eyes.

"You're crying, you're still Yue Xin. How could you be emotionless?" said Lin Feng, smiling gently. He slowly walked towards her. Qiu Yue Xin stared at him, but she didn't stop him. Lin Feng hugged her tight as she shivered.

"Yue Xin, you will always stay with me from now on." Lin Feng put his hands under her clothes and caressed her skin. She was so cold, but his movements were warm...

"No..." Qiu Yue Xin released emotionless strength.

Lin Feng moved back, and as he left he said, "Yue Xin, be persistent. You're not Empress Xi, you're you. Remove the emotionlessness imprints in your body."

Lin Feng disappeared from there. She was left surrounded by all those memories. Qiu Yue Xin looked around and sat down. As she watched those scenes, she began to smile.

—

After Lin Feng left, he created some clones. He went to Xue Yue and sat down cross-legged on the Blue Uptala Lotus. He also appeared in another place, an ancient battlefield. There was a Saint which had interesting methods, his punches could turn into Holy Spirits, they could modify the earth and sky around them. Each time he punched out, things changed around him, the punches could turn into immortal strength.

"Is that a Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill? He can modify his surroundings as he wishes, he's in perfect fusion with the earth

and sky,” murmured Lin Feng. The Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill had been created by the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s Ancestor. He had created it using his blood and a very advanced understanding of cultivation. His Holy Spirits had lives. He condensed them to release a terrifying strength, stealing the power of earth and heaven to condense strength. When his strength surged out, he could control his surroundings and kill people.

When cultivators transcended worldliness and attained holiness, they had a perfect understanding of their own path, and could create skills, techniques, spells, and write ancient scriptures. They had almost unlimited powers. When Lin Feng had been on the Holy Way Stage and sat down on the Holy Imperial Throne, he had seen the Saints’ battle, and he had also obtained the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s Saint’s skill.

The Saints were terrifying, thought Lin Feng. The Saints’ battle was a precious treasure for cultivators. It would help them to understand cultivation even better. If great emperors knew he had such memories, they would immediately think of stealing them from him. No wonder the Holy Spirit Dynasty didn’t want to give them up.

There was also a sword cultivator on the ancient battlefield. He used Kasyapa sword attacks, and in a flash, everything around him was attacked. He looked like a terrifying killer, and all the Saints feared him. Ancient sword cultivators were incredible, they had all broken free from the Great Dao.

Lin Feng studied the battle thoughtfully. If he condensed Holy Spirits using the Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill, what kind of Holy Spirits would he use?

The Ancestor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty had 33,000 small Holy Spirits and 137 great Holy Spirits, his attacks were awesome.

“If I manage to condense Holy Spirits using sword cultivation and several sorts of cosmic energies, I could carry out terrifying

sword attacks!” murmured Lin Feng. Back then, when he was a Zun cultivator, he could condense several sorts of abstruse energies to carry out terrifying sword attacks. However, after having broken through to the Huang Qi layer, it had become difficult to make cosmic energies fuse together properly. Using the Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill, maybe it would become possible!

Using Holy Spirits, maybe he would be able to condense cursing, demon, and death Holy Spirits using his Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures!

Lin Feng started meditating in seclusion and practicing the Saint’s skills and techniques.

In the outside world, some incredible things had happened. Many people came to the Tianci Dynasty to fight against him. Lin Feng had been on the Holy Imperial Throne and the news had spread everywhere. Many geniuses wanted to see if Lin Feng was as strong as they were. They wanted to compare themselves with someone who had the potential to become a peerless cultivator someday!

At the same time, in the Holy Spirit Dynasty, someone was waiting in a beautiful room. A strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty was at the door and said, “You’re the best person. You’re outstanding! Your children will be extremely talented!”

“Piss off!” snarled an icy voice from inside. “We’ve never agreed on such a thing. Disappear!”

“Why are you being like that?” asked the strong cultivator, unwilling to give up. He continued, “He’s extremely talented, he’s been on Holy Way Stage and sat down on the Holy Imperial Throne, nobody has ever managed to do that before! He’s handsome, determined, and everything! He’s a great young man!

As a medium-level emperor, he defeated Ji Chang and he is backed up by Shi Jue Lao Xian! Many women dream of having such a man. He'll become a Saint someday! Asking you to become his woman isn't a humiliation, is it?"

"I told you to piss off!" the voice shot back icily.

"Please think about it. I'll come back to you. I can't wait to see the children you'll have with Lin Feng," said that person before leaving.

The unseen woman called out, "Wait!"

"Did you change your mind?" asked the strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, turning back slightly.

"What was his name, you said?" asked the person inside, but she still sounded icy.

"Lin Feng, from the Holy City, Champion University!" answered the old man.

Chapter 2009: 18 Holy Spirits

In his spirit world, the energies of the Blue Uptala Lotus were surging out, while his Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree was releasing the energies of the ten thousand things of creation. Lin Feng was surrounded by cosmic energies which started fusing together. A sword was suspended above Lin Feng's head. His dazzling Tian Ji Sword was usually inside his body. Right now, it looked polished and clean, shining proudly.

The Tian Ji Sword kept whistling. Lin Feng smiled, "The Holy Spirit Dynasty's Saint could create all sorts of Holy Spirits, and my Tian Ji Sword is a spiritual being. I'll try to create some small spirits."

Lin Feng waved his hand and his Tian Ji Sword sliced across the sky.

"Open!" shouted Lin Feng. His Tian Ji Sword flared brightly, and lights of all colors appeared around it.

Lin Feng made some hand seals. Energies condensed around his sword soul. Cosmic strength kept flowing through his sword's souls. The sword souls turned into ancient swords and absorbed the cosmic energies of the earth and sky. Small Holy Spirits could even absorb the strength of the earth and sky. Lin Feng couldn't do that yet.

"Immortal, demon, lightning, fire, wind, empty space, cursing, absorbing, soundwave, desolate, death, life, from now on, you're not just for the sword, you are Holy Spiritual Swords!" murmured Lin Feng. He willed his sword to become gigantic, and the gigantic sword started absorbing the strength of the earth and sky. The cosmic energies kept trembling around him.

Lin Feng didn't stop after that. A death demon appeared in his mind. He opened his mouth and absorbed the death and demon strength. Like an ancient cultivator, he started creating Holy

Spirits. The Holy Spirit Dynasty's Saint had 33,000 small Holy Spirits and 137 great Holy Spirits, it was a terrifying attack. For Lin Feng, this was only the beginning.

In Lin Feng's mind, the Wisdom Kings appeared: Acalanatha, Trailokyavijaya, Kuṇḍali Vidyarāja, Yamāntaka, Vajrayaksa. They were all in front of Lin Feng and looked awe-inspiring. Lin Feng could use them to make five Holy Spirits!

After the sword and the five kings appeared, Lin Feng released a terrifying Qi as he flew up and started condensing spirits. Dazzling lights gathered around him as he became transparent.

—

After a long time, Lin Feng was surrounded by shadows, and his Holy Spirit swords had turned into human shapes: fire, purple lightnings, dazzling golden lights, empty space Holy Spirits... twelve Holy Spirit swords' Qi filled the air. They looked like rudimentary Holy Spirits, alive now. All those kinds of strength kept intertwining in the air.

Twelve swords, five Wisdom Kings, a death God, those were Lin Feng's eighteen Holy Spirits.

The Saints had incredible skills, it was as if they could control the ten thousand things of creation, using Holy Spirits to attack was a terrifying way of fighting!, thought Lin Feng. He closed his eyes and practiced making his Holy Spirits evolve.

—

Two of Lin Feng's clones were with Qiu Yue Xin. The emotionlessness energy in her body progressively dispersed.

Lin Feng finally stopped practicing cultivation. He recalled his eighteen Holy Spirits into his body, raised his head and looked at Meng Qing, who was seated on the tree.

Lin Feng jumped up and landed next to her. Meng Qing opened her eyes. She smiled and said, "Are you done practicing

cultivation?”

“Yes, I managed to create Holy Spirits thanks to the legacy I’ve received from the Saint. In the future, I’ll continue studying them. I’ll apply the principles of the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures and modify them. It’ll make me much stronger!” Lin Feng smiled.

“Why don’t you hurry up and practice then?” Meng Qing said gently. Lin Feng put his hands around her waist.

He hugged Meng Qing tightly. He put his mouth close to her ear, which made her shiver.

“I first want to have a baby with you,” said Lin Feng. Meng Qing shivered and blushed.

“Ah...” Meng Qing sighed.

Lin Feng hugged her and smiled, “Let’s go and make a child.”

When Meng Qing heard Lin Feng smile, she laughed. She looked embarrassed. If anyone had seen her, they would have been astonished, a celestial being who blushed?

Lin Feng took Meng Qing to a hut nearby. It was isolated from the outside world, he gently dragged her onto a bed. Meng Qing’s body was amazing, and Lin Feng was terribly aroused when he saw her blush. She looked bewitching.

Lin Feng moved on top of her and smiled, “Meng Qing, what should we call our child?”

“You can choose.” whispered Meng Qing.

“Well, take some time to think after we make love,” said Lin Feng, smiling evilly, and then he started doing just that.

—————

Soon, it would be time to go to the mysterious world. The geniuses who had been invited to the Tianci Dynasty gathered together.

The palace they were in was spectacular. There was a flight of stairs with 99 steps, and many buildings, all of them gigantic. Lin Feng and the others arrived with the two other groups. They didn't enter any building, they were just standing there and chatting. There were some geniuses who hadn't been invited, but had come as a form of respect.

"Lin Feng!" someone called out at that moment. Lin Feng sensed sharp energies.

By the next day, Lin Feng was already famous. They had all heard of Lin Feng's achievements. Only two people had managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage. One of them was Chu Chun Qiu, the other one was Lin Feng, and they were both from the Holy City!

But Lin Feng hadn't only been onto the Holy Way Stage, he had also been on the throne. He was the only one who had managed to do so. Everybody wanted to fight against Lin Feng to compare themselves to him. Many of them hadn't been on the Holy Way Stage, but they didn't know how hard it was, and cultivators were self-confident. They were convinced they could have done great.

"Lin Feng, back then, we didn't have such a great battle, I only used seventy percent of my strength. I hope we can fight again sometime soon!" said Crazy Bull at that moment.

Lin Feng smiled and said, "If you want to fight, I'd love to."

"I also want to see how strong the most talented cultivator is."

"I hope your talent matches your strength, otherwise what would be the point?" Everybody was stirring with excitement.

"Alright, the Holy Emperor is here," interrupted someone, gazing into the distance. A few more people had arrived. The Holy Emperor was accompanied by two women. The Holy Emperor looked young, but he was probably extremely strong and much older than he appeared.

There were two extremely beautiful women behind him: two

Imperial Concubines, one of them Piao Xue's mother.

The Tianci Dynasty was very powerful, and their women were extremely beautiful, too. They had to preserve a powerful bloodline in the family.

“Hello, Holy Emperor, Queen, Imperial Concubine,” said everybody bowing before them.

They all smiled and said, “You're too polite. Everybody came here, it is an honor for us.”

“Please have a seat. Don't be polite,” waved the Holy Emperor. Everybody sat down. Piao Xue and Lin Feng's group sat together, the members of Goblin Spirit University and another prince sat together, and the strong cultivators of the Ancient Holy Clan sat down with yet another prince who had invited them. These three groups were going to go to the mysterious world together.

Chapter 2010: Empress Xi's Fury

Lin Feng glanced at the two other princes, who had imposing appearances, dignified and majestic. They were young, but one could see that they had imperial blood. Emperors had many sons, trying to have more chances to have a more outstanding heir.

Everybody was like that. Princes also did all they could for the Dynasty. The fact that Piao Xue could go to the Holy Place was a sign that she was incredibly strong.

“Everybody, that’s Prince Yan, that’s Prince Chen, and that Princess Luo Xue,” said the Holy Emperor. Princess Luo Xue was Princess Piao Xue’s other name. Prince Chen had invited the cultivators of Goblin Spirit University, Prince Yan had invited the strong cultivators of the Ancient Holy Clan. Lin Feng realized something; Prince Yan was closest to the Holy Emperor, Prince Chen and the others, as well as Princess Luo Xue and his group, were farther away together, as if Prince Yan’s status was higher.

When the Holy Emperor introduced them, he mentioned Prince Yan first. It wasn’t a significant sign, but still...

“A bright future awaits you all. Thank you for having accepted this chance to go to the mysterious world with my descendants. I hope you’ll all enjoy and benefit from the adventure,” said the Holy Emperor extremely politely. He didn’t say he needed them. He was proud, he said he wanted some help and he hoped everybody would benefit. It was also a good way to establish relations with other incredibly strong people. In the future, these young people might still be friends.

“You’re too polite,” Prince Yan replied calmly.

The Holy Emperor smiled and nodded, “Everybody, come, have drinks, let’s toast!”

Everybody raised their glasses and downed their drinks. The man

next to Prince Yan looked ordinary and clean, he was tall and his eyes were golden, his energies felt swift.

“Wang Jian, your Weapon Dao is incredible, you can probably kill people easily without them realizing it now,” smiled the Holy Emperor.

“If that was true, I would have already transcended worldliness and attained holiness,” Wang Jian said politely back.

“You’re too humble. Even though Zhuo Qing has a king-type body, he wouldn’t be able to defeat you.” the Holy Emperor smiled cheerfully. Wang Jian said nothing, but he really wanted to try fighting against Zhuo Qing, actually!

“Crazy Bull, you must be extremely strong too,” the Holy Emperor looked over at Crazy Bull and smiled. The best cultivator Prince Yan had invited was probably Wang Jian, and the strongest Prince Chen had invited was probably Crazy Bull.

In the end, the Holy Emperor looked at Lin Feng and smiled, “Lin Feng, you’re very famous. Everybody knows about you in Qi Tian Holy Town now. You defeated Ji Chang as a medium-level emperor, and only Chu Chun Qiu and you managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage. On top of that, you even sat down on the Holy Imperial Throne, the only one to do so. You’re incredible. The geniuses of Qi Tian Holy Town all want to exchange views on cultivation with you.”

“I was lucky,” Lin Feng said simply. The Holy Emperor had flattered the three geniuses.

“Talent is talent, you weren’t lucky. The Holy Way Stage is an ancient vestige. You managed to get on it. It proves that you are very talented. You will definitely surpass me and many elders, you will become a peerless king someday!” the Holy Emperor smiled.

“I hope so,” replied Lin Feng calmly. He looked neither happy nor sad.

“You will. I asked your people to come because I want you to get to know some outstanding cultivators. I also want to talk about the Holy Place.

“The Holy Place is a mysterious world which has been sealed by the saints. There are historical remains there. The ancestors of Qi Tian Holy Town have left treasures there in the ancient times. Many people have been there, so there are many less ancient treasures there than before. I don’t know what you can find there precisely, but you’re not going on a holiday, it’s a very dangerous place. Many people die there each time it opens. The strongest people can benefit a lot, but the others die.”

“Yan, Chen, Luo Xue, remember that,” said the Holy Emperor. Lin Feng was thoughtful as he listened to this. The Holy Emperor was talking to his three children and trying to make them understand that they had to collaborate. Maybe their relations weren’t cordial at all...

“Princess, how are the relations between the princesses and princes?” Lin Feng asked telepathically. He had to understand this point. Otherwise, in the mysterious world, it could get very dangerous.

“Princes and princesses compete all the time, and the competition can be fierce and cruel. A Dynasty is like a world, it’s the law of the jungle, especially in Dynasties where there are no Holy Princes and Holy Princesses,” replied Piao Xue. She didn’t hide the truth from Lin Feng. She sounded quite serene about it.

“I see. If we find treasures, Prince Chen and Prince Yan might try to steal them from us?” Lin Feng continued.

“Indeed. The Holy Emperor is reminding us that we have to join hands when fighting against enemies. And if we find treasures, we shouldn’t act recklessly and attack one another,” replied the princess. Lin Feng understood the situation a bit better. The royals had to control themselves during this trip!

“I don’t need to tell you what to do in the mysterious world, I can only wish you all good luck. I hope you’ll all benefit,” spoke the Holy Emperor, raising his glass. He said nothing really important, they were just formalities.

—

After the banquet, Lin Feng and the others left to get ready to go to the mysterious world. Lin Feng continued practicing cultivation. He felt pressured.

Crazy Bull had been a Champion for a long time, and was stronger than Ji Chang.

Wang Jian, who had been invited by Prince Yan, was an extremely strong and practiced weapon cultivator. He could even defeat Zhuo Qing, who had already reached the top of the Huang Qi layer. Wang Jian might even be stronger than Crazy Bull.

In the mysterious world, his enemies would be the strongest cultivators of the Dark Night Region. He had no choice, but to try and become stronger.

Qiu Yue Xin was still seated alone in a field. Lin Feng’s clone walked up to her. She was seated, wearing white clothes. She had been there for so many days, battling against her own self.

When Lin Feng appeared in front of her, she raised her head, looking wan and sallow.

“Yue Xin,” said Lin Feng crouching down. He put his hands on her cheeks and smiled. “You’re good. You’re Qiu Yue Xin, my woman.”

“I can’t get rid of it,” said Qiu Yue Xin shaking her head. She looked like she was in pain.

“I’ll help you,” said Lin Feng, he pushed her gently to the ground and moved on top of her.

Her face turned deathly pale. She shook her head unceasingly,

“No, we can’t...”

Her eyes rolled back, she didn’t look like the same person, she looked possessed.

“You’re my woman, you’ll always be, forever. I can do anything to you,” said Lin Feng, putting his hands on her arms, before he started kissing her neck and lips and breasts.

“Insolent bastard!” said Yue Xin icily. In reply, Lin Feng tore her clothes apart.

“Ah...” Qiu Yue Xin trembled. It was a mixture of suffering and pleasure. But slowly, her emotionlessness strength dispersed. She started enjoying the process.

The grass was their bed. Qiu Yue Xin and Lin Feng became one. Lin Feng kept kissing her skin gently and softly. He looked at her beautiful eyes and said, “Yue Xin, you’re mine. Empress Xi and her emotionlessness can piss off!”

—

At that moment, in the Moon Palace, an ice-cold Qi emerged and turned into a cloud. A beautiful celestial woman rose up into the air in cold fury. “Lin Feng, I’ll crush you into a million pieces!”

At that moment, Empress Xi was shaking violently, her heart was pounding. Qiu Yue Xin wasn’t her clone, she was just influenced. If Yue Xin came back to her senses, she would be Yue Xin. However, it felt as if she was Yue Xin and Yue Xin was her...!

Chapter 2011: World Sealed By the Saints

Finally, it was time to go to the mysterious world. The atmosphere in Qi Tian Holy Town was lively. Many strong cultivators left the Dynasties and gathered in one place, and Lin Feng was no exception. The Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty led the way.

They arrived in front of a lofty mountain. It looked indestructible and eternal.

There were many other people everywhere about. Aside from the princes and princesses who had invited people to come, there were also some strong cultivators from the Dynasties themselves. There were also people from Piao Xue's Dynasty with them, the Imperial Concubine had selected them personally. They were older, not as talented as Lin Feng and the others, but they were at the top of the Huang Qi layer, and had been stuck at that level for many years. They had more experience, and thus more skills and techniques. Those people had been getting ready for this event for some time.

Lin Feng glanced at the crowd and noticed many people he knew: Chu Chun Qiu, Ji Chang... the ten strongest emperors of the Holy City were all there. After the Pathfinder Day in the Holy City, people had stopped hearing about them because they had all come to Qi Tian Holy Town.

Apart from them, Lin Feng also noticed some friends: Lang Ye, Dugu the Winner, Jun Mo Xi, the Prince of Sadness, the Ancient Sorcerer... Those last two were from the Vast Celestial Ancient City. The Prince of Sadness looked even more extraordinary than in the past, and even more elegant too. The Ancient Sorcerer was mysterious. After Lin Feng had gone to the Holy City, those two people had kind of disappeared, remaining discreet. They had gone to Tian Yuan Ancient City and practiced cultivation really hard there. Everyone had progressed.

Three people who have king-type bodies, they are all high-level emperors now, thought Lin Feng, looking at Lang Ye and the others. Lang Ye nodded back at him. They hadn't seen each other for a while. Lang Ye and Dugu the Winner were now high-level emperors, breaking through faster than him. The Prince of Sadness and the Ancient Sorcerer looked even more sly. The Ancient Sorcerer was enigmatic and unfathomable. In the Vast Celestial Ancient City, people said he had a Sorcerer king-type body.

King-types were considered the best cultivators when it came to battling, but they all liked practicing cultivation anyway. This time, it would be a good opportunity to compare themselves to all the geniuses of the Dark Night Region. Of course, people who had king-type bodies had an advantage, as it counterbalanced their flaws.

At that moment, someone from the Holy Spirit Dynasty appeared next to Lin Feng.

"Holy Dynasty Prince, the Holy Spirit Dynasty has already chosen the most outstanding woman for you, she's extremely beautiful and talented. Please be careful this time, and when you come out, come to the Dynasty," said that person. Lin Feng was surprised and nodded. He couldn't avoid this anymore. He was just a bit sad for the woman.

"Good, I'm going again then," said the old man and headed back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. The Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty was surprised and smiled at Lin Feng. "Lin Feng, you're the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Holy Spirit Dynasty?"

"Yes," Lin Feng nodded. He didn't talk too much. The Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty looked surprised but didn't ask too much, just smiling thoughtfully.

"Everybody, let's open the seals," someone announced at that moment. All the Holy Emperors' silhouettes flickered and landed

in front of a mountain. An awesome welling of strength rose about everyone. The Holy Emperors started making hand seals and attacked the mountain with an ancient technique.

After a short time, something rumbled. The mountain cracked open, and patterns appeared. Dazzling Dao intent lights twinkled. The crowd stared at those patterns in surprise. What a strange thing, it contained Dao intent!

“Everybody, release your Dao strength and enter the pattern. That’s how you access the historical remains,” said the Holy Emperors. Lin Feng and the others immediately ran forwards and released their Dao strength, filling the air with power. In the cultivation world, there were many ways, and many kinds of Dao. If a cultivator was strong enough, they could choose their own Path. They could even create their own Path, everybody’s Path was different.

When they penetrated the patterns, a vortex appeared, and the atmosphere began to distort around them. The vortex absorbed their Dao intent, a black hole appearing and absorbing everything.

“The Holy Place is going to be open. You need a monstrous amount of Dao strength to open it. Nobody can go there alone. Therefore, it is a necessity that many people go there at the same time. Release as much Dao strength as you can!” a voice spoke up loudly.

Everybody released even more Dao strength!

No wonder the descendants of the Dynasties can’t go there alone, the Holy Place is a terrifying place, thought the crowd. The vortex continued absorbing everything even as it slowly disappeared. The patterns turned into a single gate. The gate of the mysterious world was open!

“Everybody, please enter the mysterious world!” said the emperors calmly. In a flash, all the geniuses jumped through the gate.

“What would happen if great emperors went there?” Lin Feng asked Piao Xue.

“Great emperors can’t get close. Some great emperors have tried in the past, but they died in tragic conditions,” replied the Princess. Lin Feng nodded and said nothing. As the crowd crossed the gate, Princess Piao Xue said, “Let’s go in, too.”

They appeared in a desolate place, filled with an ancient aura. It felt like they had traveled back in time.

——

At the same time, a light beam streaked across the sky. In the distance, an ancient white palace appeared. A young man was standing there, looking at the crowd icily.

“A hundred years have passed already?” A bell rang that had not tolled for the past hundred years...

At the same time, on an ancient mountain in the distance, a strong cultivator raised his hand and gazed into the distance. His face was ice-cold as he said evilly, “Finally, some people came.”

At that moment, many people raised their heads and looked around. A hundred years, finally, those people were here.

That ancient world had been sealed and abandoned. People who lived in there were very bitter and had become dark of mood and thought.

——

People’s silhouettes flickered. They still lived peacefully together. They hadn’t found any treasures yet so killing one another was still pointless. They had to keep some strength for later.

Suddenly, a strong wind started blowing. They raised their heads and saw a gigantic group charging towards them. A cloud of dust appeared behind them.

“Beasts, what kind of beasts?”

“Half people half beasts, humans with snake heads, great rocs with human heads, eww, what are those things?”

The beasts’ eyes were bloodshot, they looked fearless, cruel, and brutal. The cultivators who had just arrived were momentarily taken aback.

This world has been sealed for such a long time that living beings have evolved differently, thought Lin Feng. That was a small world, without a doubt. The Saints had sealed it long ago, so living beings had evolved differently.

“Let’s go and kill!” A group of people rose up into the air and threw themselves at those beasts.

One of them turned into a golden light beam as a tornado appeared around him.

“Die!” said Zhuo Qing, running into the group of beasts. Terrifying golden lights moved like lightning. He started killing beasts one after another, blood spraying everywhere.

Some extremely strong beasts could cut the golden lights with their claws. Zhuo Qing grunted icily, and a dazzling golden disc appeared. A metallic wind howled out of it, which made the beasts explode!

Chapter 2012: Chu Chun Qiu's Secret

“It’s a brutal world. There are terrifying beasts who are cruel and bloodthirsty. They look extremely strong too,” Hou Qing Lin noted calmly. This mysterious world was dangerous. They were not going to be bored!

“Let’s go.” said Princess Piao Xue. Their group of people started killing the beasts too.

Lin Feng used punches, his fists dazzling and as sharp as swords. A Holy Spirit appeared and cut through the air, his empty space Holy Spirit!

A bear with gigantic wings roared in a thundering rage, as big as a gigantic mountain with domineering Qi.

“Argh...” a horrible shriek spread out. Lin Feng punched the bear’s lower body, which exploded. Lin Feng continued moving forwards. He jumped up and punched the bear’s head, which exploded as well. Then, the bear’s body fell down and crashed onto the ground with a crushing shockwave.

What an incredible physical strength, thought Piao Xue. She was also fighting against beasts, but watching Lin Feng near her once in a while. Lin Feng’s attacks were awesome!

Lin Feng also paid attention to Piao Xue, and the way she controlled water and golden energies. At that moment, she had released a water dragon, which was destroying beasts one after another. When her water dragon attacked them, they turned into ice and then were destroyed by its claws.

“Your sword attacks are so fast!” Piao Xue said to Jian Mang. Jian Mang was moving faster than the eye could follow. He was also a medium-level emperor, but he had an advanced understanding of light Dao. Fighting against these beasts wasn’t a problem for him at all.

In the distance, a brutal Qi rose up into the air. Lin Feng frowned. What kind of world was this? There were so many beasts. This world had been sealed for such a long time, and there were so many powerful bloodthirsty beasts everywhere.

“This is a beast territory. Staying here is pointless. Kill them as fast as possible,” said Piao Xue while killing beasts. Lin Feng released more Holy Spirits and attacked beasts one after another, trying to kill them as fast as possible.

Prince Chen and Prince Yan were also terrifyingly strong. The middle-aged emperors sent by the Tianci Dynasty were also stupefyingly strong. Together, killing all these beasts wasn’t a problem at all. If the princes and princesses had come alone, it wouldn’t have been so easy. They would have been destroyed in the blink of an eye.

Finally, Lin Feng and the others were surrounded only by blood. There was an ocean of corpses and dispersing bestial Qi behind them. Prince Chen and Prince Yan were already heading in different directions.

“Let’s go. Outside of that desolate place must be the real ancient battlefield. It has probably become a real world. There might be many strong cultivators there. We must be very careful, I’ve heard that those people are terrifyingly strong,” said Princess Piao Xue. They all flew ahead at their best speed.

—

At the same time, another group of people was killing beasts and moving forwards. Chu Chun Qiu, the other members of the Celestial Godly University, as well as the members of the Dynasty, dispersed. Chu Chun Qiu looked around.

“The geniuses from the Dark Night Region are incredible,” murmured Chu Chun Qiu. At that moment, his Qi was dashing to the skies, and he looked like a king.

In the distance, two people noticed and came over to him. When they saw him they called out, “Chu Chun Qiu!”

Chu Chun Qiu was the strongest emperor of the Holy City. Even in comparison with the geniuses of the Dynasties, he could be considered extremely strong, therefore many people recognized him.

Chu Chun Qiu sensed that some people were coming towards him and turned around. When he saw them, he looked at them as if he had seen two prey. The two geniuses’ hearts started pounding violently.

“Chu Chun Qiu, what’s wrong?” asked the cultivators when they saw that Chu Chun Qiu was looking at them icily. One of them grunted.

“I’m here to kill people,” replied Chu Chun Qiu icily. Then, he moved in an eyeblink.

“Argh...” Sky Absorbing intent straightforwardly dashed to the skies, a strong wind started blowing, and those two men’s wills shook violently. Their faces turned deathly pale. They released their Qi, but Chu Chun Qiu opened his third eye, strength emerged from it and penetrated into the third eye of one of those cultivators. Then, Chun Qiu turned to the other one and punched him, his punch making heaven and earth shake. An endless amount of King Intent filled the air and destroyed everything in its path. The cultivator’s face turned deathly pale.

A terrifying strength slammed down on him. Chu Chun Qiu landed on the ground, surrounded by a vortex which absorbed everything. He grabbed that cultivator.

His gigantic hand made the man’s soul shake violently, he felt tiny next to those energies. Chu Chun Qiu grabbed him and held him in his hands and stared at him as if he were looking at an ant, destroying his willpower. The man shrank to a tiny size and then moved towards Chu Chun Qiu’s third eye. Chu Chun Qiu absorbed

him completely.

The other one was astonished and horrified. Chu Chun Qiu charged towards him.

After a short time, he ended up like the other one, Chu Chun Qiu absorbed him completely.

Chu Chun Qiu looked expressionless. He gazed into the distance, his face aggressive and brutal. His silhouette flickered and he left.

If Lin Feng had been there, he would have realized that Chu Chun Qiu had been hiding his real strength the whole time...

Lin Feng and the others arrived in a city. Lin Feng was surprised because there were many ruins, nobody had fixed them up. The city looked even older because of it...

“So many years have passed since the ancient battlefield. As expected, it’s a microcosm, there were human beings and beasts left behind here,” said Lin Feng, glancing around. Many people raised their heads and looked at them coldly.

“Princess Luo Xue, only emperors came in here, but how strong are people in this world? Are there people who have levels higher than the Huang Qi layer?” asked Lin Feng.

“There aren’t human beings of the Di Qi layer here, but there are living beings of the Di Qi layer,” replied Princess Piao Xue.

Lin Feng was startled and asked, “Beasts?”

“No, living beings, there are some people who look like people, but they aren’t people. In this world, people can’t be of the Di Qi layer, but some entities can. They remain in the form of spirits. The Holy Emperor warned us, we have to be extremely cautious,” said Princess Piao Xue. Lin Feng was astonished.

“Body Capture?!” murmured Lin Feng.

“Indeed. When they break through to the Di Qi layer, they die, so

if they see us, they will be very interested,” said Princess Piao Xue. Everybody nodded. They had to be careful!

Chapter 2013: Powerful Spirits

“Let’s go into the city. The historical remains are at the heart of this world. There are many castles and buildings with many things in them, but they are protected by powerful spirits,” Princess Piao Xue said to Lin Feng. Everybody’s silhouettes flickered as they moved ahead.

“Many historical remains must still exist inside. This world probably has many castles.” said Lin Feng.

“Indeed, many. Each castle is guarded by powerful spirits, though.”

“Why don’t the spirits leave?” asked Lin Feng.

“They can’t get out. And if human beings left this world, they would be killed easily, so they prefer staying here.” said Princess Piao Xue. Human beings were too weak compared to people in the outside world, they were well aware of that.

“Why don’t spirits capture people’s bodies and leave?” wondered Lin Feng indifferently. Some people looked at them icily. Lin Feng realized that people in here were really strong. They were all emperors. They looked bloodthirsty and ferocious, like animals.

“Let’s go to a castle guarded by spirits. I hope we can find some historical remains there,” said Princess Piao Xue. Lin Feng and the others looked at her strangely.

Hou Qing Lin said, “Since spirits are of the Di Qi layer and want to capture our bodies, why go and provoke them? It’s too dangerous.”

“They don’t have bodies. They have the strength of great emperors, but they are not aware. We have vitality, vigor, and a consciousness. If we join hands, we can crush them easily. They can’t act recklessly against us,” said Princess Piao Xue.

Lin Feng and the others suddenly heard music. Following it, they

progressively descended from the sky.

“What a sad music,” said Lin Feng when he heard it. It was very melancholic. He almost had tears in his eyes.

After a short time, Lin Feng landed on a tower and glanced around. He saw many buildings. In the middle of them, there was a person seated cross-legged by a lake, playing music.

The person’s body was transparent. Only their music was eternal, not their corporeal body. He was alone.

“Great Imperial spirit.” Princess Piao Xue was stupefied. A spirit, not a person.

“His music is his life. He feels lonely, he has forgotten what it means to have friends.”

“That spirit is stuck in this world, it’s so sad.”

“Don’t let him fool you. Entities which live in this world are cruel and bloodthirsty, they have no empathy,” said Princess Piao Xue. Lin Feng and Hou Qing Lin nodded as they came back to their senses. They had almost gotten hypnotized by the music.

“Dear friends, you have come from so far away. Why don’t you come over here?” said the young man in a low voice. Lin Feng and the others were stupefied. They wanted to leave, but instead saw another group of people.

“Prince Yan’s people...” Lin Feng recognized Wang Jian. They were there, too.

At that moment, Prince Yan looked at Lin Feng and the others. His eyes glittered. Then, he looked at the central plaza and he rose up into the air.

However, at that moment, the music changed and a terrifying music pierced through their eardrums. The music turned into arrows which moved towards everyone to kill them.

Lin Feng’s heart twitched as they all released Qi. The arrows

couldn't pierce through but suddenly, many human silhouettes appeared and turned to look at them. They all looked bloodthirsty and violently intense.

A black death energy rolled out, shaking the air. The spirit's energies corroded the atmosphere and charged towards Lin Feng. His soul shook violently.

Lin Feng's robe fluttered in the wind. His blood felt as if it was going to explode.

"Argh..." Lin Feng roared in a thundering rage. It felt like the ground was about to collapse.

Hou Qing Lin also sensed the danger. "So many spirits! The one who plays the zither controls them and turns them into deadly weapons!"

Those spirits were incredibly strong.

Hou Qing Lin released reincarnation energy, which was very efficient against spirits. Many of them disappeared instantly. Jian Mang's sword lights killed anything, human beings or spirits.

Their group killed the spirits one after another. Lin Feng's blood Qi shot up into the sky. A demon king appeared behind him, while he looked like a demon himself. He also released terrifying cosmic energies.

Prince Yan and the others also reacted and started attacking the spirits. They drew closer and closer to the great imperial spirit.

The zither continued playing sadly. The strange young man lowered his head and said calmly, "Everybody, you've all come from so far away, you don't know what it feels like to be lonely."

"You know why we're here," spoke up a strong cultivator next to Prince Yan.

"No rush. The historical remains won't run away. There aren't enough people," said the man indifferently.

“There are historical remains in this castle?” asked Prince Yan.

“Of course. Otherwise, why I would I guard it?” replied the great imperial spirit.

“I see. So, Your Excellency, can you lead the way?” asked Prince Yan.

“It’s not that easy. You have to pay for that.”

“You want us to do something for you?” asked Wang Jian icily.

“Indeed,” said the spirit nodding.

“What?” Prince Yan asked calmly. The great imperial spirit could easily find the historical remains but they couldn’t trust him. According to legends, they were extremely violent and bloodthirsty. How could a spirit possibly cooperate with them?

“Help me obtain a city, and then I’ll take you to the historical remains. That way, you’d be able to obtain the historical remains of two places!” said the spirit calmly.

“You want us to kill one another, right?” someone divined icily. When people came to this world, they first wanted to find cities and buildings to find historical remains. This spirit wanted them to kill other people to conquer other places.

“You are too naive. In this place, there are nine castles, and each castle is guarded by a spirit, like me. Since you’re here, if we don’t conquer their territories, they will come and conquer this one. They’ll fight against us. Don’t forget your goal,” the spirit replied coldly.

Lin Feng and the others shivered. The Dynasties had invited so many strong cultivators because they didn’t want battles to happen between their people. They had been sending people to that mysterious world for such a long time, they probably already knew those things.

“Why do you need castles?”

“He wants to expand his power. He can absorb the strength of other spirits. All the spirits who guard castles must be of the Di Qi layer. They want to use us to achieve their goals,” explained Princess Piao Xue.

“Well, if spirits come invade this place, we can help them absorb that guy and then we can ask them to lead the way, right?” asked Lin Feng indifferently. The man looked at Lin Feng icily. A terrifying strength suddenly surrounded him.

Lin Feng had the sensation his blood was going to explode. He raised his fist and punched out, many Holy Spirits appearing and attacking with him. They charged towards the spirit. He grunted icily and played the zither even louder. Suddenly, many spirits converged towards Lin Feng!

Lin Feng rose up into the air and kept attacking with Holy Spirits. The spirits all exploded. The spirit said to Prince Yan and the others, “Kill him, or you won’t have access to my historical remains.”

Chapter 2014: Ancient Historical Remains

Prince Yan looked at the spirit and said indifferently, “He’s right. If we kill you, it’ll be easier.”

The spirit smiled evilly as if he had heard a joke. “A bunch of retards. I’ve seen many naive people like you, and in the end, they died in tragic circumstances.”

Then, he suddenly became distorted and turned to smoke. Lin Feng and the others frowned.

That spirit is extremely dangerous, thought Lin Feng frowning. Then, he said, “Let’s go and search ourselves.”

“Yes,” the others nodded. They could only rely on themselves. Some people released their godly awareness and inspected the area. They had the sensation the castle was empty.

“Get down.” At that moment, they lowered their heads and saw a spirit who had no Qi.

They asked him, “Are there historical remains in the nine castles?”

The spirit raised his head and looked at Lin Feng and the others respectfully, nodding.

“Where are they?”

“I don’t know, only the guardians know,” replied the spirit.

“Why are there no human beings in the castles?” asked Princess Piao Xue icily.

“Human beings?” The spirit looked terrified, his mouth twitched, he didn’t dare talk about that.

“Speak!” said Princess Piao Xue. She looked scary.

The spirit looked scared, suddenly rose up into the air and said, “I don’t know.”

“You want to die!” said an old man who was in their group to the spirit. However, at that moment, they heard a zither, a death spear appeared, and the Dynasty’s old man moved back. The spear plunged into the spirit and it disappeared.

Lin Feng suddenly turned around and gazed into the distance. The spirit smiled at them coldly, “I’m a king in this castle. If you don’t respect me, you won’t have access to the historical remains.”

“Let’s go outside the city and look around,” said Lin Feng icily. Their group started leaving. The spirit pulled a long face.

Lin Feng and the others appeared outside and saw many humans. Lin Feng landed in front of a middle-aged man and asked, “Your Excellency, why are there no human beings in the castles? Are they afraid of spirits?”

“Foreigners?” asked the man indifferently.

Lin Feng nodded. They knew that spirits could steal people’s bodies. Was that the reason why human beings were scared to go there?

“Great Imperial spirits can absorb people’s blood Qi. They can use people to create spirits, which they control and use to attack. However, if they don’t have a body, they rely on their castles. It might be linked to the historical remains, but I’m not sure. The stronger they are, the stronger their spiritual slaves are. They can’t leave their castles, however. When they become strong enough, they can use body capture. You’re from abroad, be careful and take care,” said the person politely, but indifferently.

He left. He didn’t feel like talking to Lin Feng too much.

The man looked sinister. If Lin Feng and his friends hadn’t been extremely strong, he wouldn’t have paid any attention to them.

Lin Feng and the others gazed into the distance. Some people looked back at them with dark intentions. Great Imperial Spirits were terrifying and sly. They could absorb people’s blood to

become stronger, and they wanted the outsiders to fight against one another. However, the outsiders had to find a solution if they wanted to access the historical remains. Great Imperial Spirits didn't care about anything or anyone, they were ready to kill other spirits and human beings.

They just wanted to become stronger and stronger, that was their only purpose.

"You have no other choice," said someone loudly. Lin Feng turned around and saw a gigantic face in the sky. It was the evil spirit. He smiled coldly, "Come back. If you don't help me kill the intruders, they will kill you. You have no choice."

The evil spirit disappeared. Lin Feng and the others pulled long faces.

"Sorry, my knowledge is limited. We can come to the mysterious world every hundred years only," said Princess Piao Xue apologetically.

"No problem. Let nature take its course. Let's go back." said Lin Feng icily.

"Go to the city? And kill the other invaders?" asked Princess Piao Xue to Lin Feng.

"We can crush that stupid thing and then look for the historical remains, we'll find them sooner or later," said Lin Feng, releasing terrifying energies. The Princess shuddered with dread.

They headed for the castle, the spirit was waiting for them. He said indifferently, "Have you made a decision?"

Lin Feng jumped forwards, his eyes turned pitch-black, death intent rose up into the air. The evil spirit grunted icily, startled at the sudden attack. He started playing the zither again.

However, at the same time, Lin Feng's blood started boiling. Flames appeared as he started shining with power. A fire Holy Spirit appeared in the air and turned into a sun sword. A death

demon Holy Spirit also appeared and glanced around. Lin Feng threw himself at the evil spirit.

“You don’t know how to differentiate good from bad!” snarled the evil spirit. Silhouettes appeared and charged Lin Feng.

“Wisdom King Holy Spirit!” Lin Feng opened his third eye and five Wisdom Kings appeared. They looked wrathful as they attacked the spirits. Imprints crashed down onto the evil spirit.

“Die!” Lin Feng raised his fist and the five Holy Spirits continued crushing the evil spirits. A dazzling sharp sword appeared and streaked across the sky, splitting heaven and earth.

The sword cut the evil spirit, and many spirits flew towards Lin Feng

“You’ll die!” shouted a voice. Princess Piao Xue and the others tried to chase him but suddenly, a mist appeared and turned into millions of threads. The evil spirit disappeared within.

“Without him leading the way, it won’t be easy to find the correct path,” said one of Princess Piao Xue’s guards.

“Since there are nine palaces, I’m sure the other guardians know where historical remains are. If they don’t lead the way, we’ll just kill them all and then we’ll bring natives to help us find them,” said Lin Feng icily.

The old men shivered. The Imperial Concubine had a good sense of judgement. Lin Feng was really strong and smart. Even though the evil spirit wasn’t too strong, he was still a great emperor, really strong with a powerful soul. However, the five Wisdom Kings had oppressed him and he hadn’t withstood a single attack.

—

Lin Feng and the others continued flying. Prince Yan and the others suddenly returned. Prince Yan asked Princess Piao Xue, “Did you kill the spirit?”

“He wouldn’t have led the way anyway,” replied Princess Piao Xue.

“Stupid! Don’t you know that without him, we probably won’t find the entrance? We should have only oppressed him a little bit!” Prince Yan said icily.

“Prince Yan, Princess Piao Xue is from the Tianci Dynasty, watch your words!” said an old man next to Princess Piao Xue.

“Bastard, who do you think you are to talk to me?” spat Prince Yan impolitely.

“I decided to kill the evil spirit,” said Lin Feng calmly.

Prince Yan slowly turned to Lin Feng and said, “Lin Feng, even though you have been invited by the Tianci Dynasty, you better not ruin my plans.”

“I do whatever I want, I am not your servant. Don’t try to play smart with me,” retorted Lin Feng icily.

Prince Yan stared at Lin Feng, remaining silent for a few seconds and said icily, “You better find the historical remains.”

“You better talk to me in a different way,” replied Lin Feng. Prince Yan and the others faces stiffened. An invisible and intangible oppressive strength began to build.

“Brother, we’ve just arrived, and we need to find the historical remains,” said Princess Piao Xue broke in icily.

Prince Yan glanced at her and said icily, “Let’s go.”

They continued flying towards the center of the nine castles here. Everybody was looking for the historical remains!

Chapter 2015: Incredible Sword

The evil spirit was in the central part of his territory, he had been injured by Lin Feng's sword Qi. He needed to absorb human beings to recover his pure Qi. If those people continued collaborating, he'd die forever.

When he thought about that, he started to leave the area. However, a group of people arrived at that moment. The leader of the group was an old man in black clothes. When he saw the evil spirit's Qi, he smiled sinisterly.

"Where are you going?" the old man in black clothes asked icily.

"Why do you care?" replied the evil spirit, equally icily.

The old man in black clothes smiled even more nastily and said, "Everybody, I'll injure him, and we'll take his castle. He can't protect the historical remains anymore."

"You..." the evil spirit's turned deathly pale. He hated Lin Feng. If he had known they'd cooperate no matter what, he wouldn't have taken the actions he had...

The wind roared with a thundering rage, carrying a rolling Qi. Blood strength filled the air. One of those strong cultivators raised his fist and struck out in the evil spirit's direction.

The evil spirit turned to smoke again. However, he was already weakened.

"Where are you going?" asked the evil old man. The group chased the smoke. The old man released a black imprint and stamped the smoke. The smoke disappeared, but not the black imprint.

The old man laughed frantically. Without him, they were sure they were going to die in the historical remains...

Lin Feng and the others ran and saw a group of people chasing smoke. They were startled at the sight.

“Capture it! That black smoke is the evil spirit!” shouted the old man in black clothes to Lin Feng and the others. Lin Feng ran after the black smoke, releasing his dozen Holy Spirits. A terrifying sword Qi also streaked across the sky.

“Appear!” said Lin Feng icily.

The evil spirit appeared again, looking exhausted. Half of his transparent body had disappeared, and he was looking more and more like an illusion. Lin Feng released sword intent, the evil spirit was terrified.

“Where are the historical remains?” demanded Lin Feng icily.

“Block them and I’ll take you there!” said the evil spirit icily.

In response, whistling sounds grew, caused by Lin Feng’s sword energies.

“I’ll tell you, the historical remains are under the lake, there’s a seal there, I can open it. Help me block them and I’ll take you there,” said the evil spirit hastily. Lin Feng and the others gazed into the distance. There were many buildings. The lake the evil spirit was talking about was the lake where he was playing the zither a moment before. No wonder they hadn’t found it. Lin Feng had actually inspected the water with his godly awareness, but hadn’t found anything.

“Who can open the seal?” asked the man in black clothes. The evil spirit looked terrified. He wanted to escape, but the man in black clothes released a terrifying curtain of black energies to envelope him.

Lin Feng’s sword energies disappeared. He didn’t save the evil spirit. He had unceasingly been trying to fool them.

The man in black clothes laughed frantically and said, “How awesome! If I can absorb a few more evil spirits, that’d be

awesome! Everybody, help me attack the castles, I'll tell you where all the historical remains are! Now, let's injure these people badly, but don't kill them, I need them!"

He slowly rose up into the air. The old man in black clothes was also an evil spirit, and not only did he want to absorb the other evil spirits, but he also wanted geniuses.

"Tianci Dynasty, Princess Piao Xue," said a young man icily.

"Prince Damo, we should join hands to oppress the evil spirits and force them to tell us where the historical remains are, then we can kill them." said Princess Piao Xue indifferently.

"I want to help him, he'll tell me where the historical remains of the nine castles are. Why would I kill him?" said Prince Damo icily.

"You think he'll help you?" said Prince Piao Xue. Prince Damo was one of two princes from the Great Desert Dynasty. They had invited extremely strong cultivators from Tian Yuan Ancient City's Yunxiao University and some strong cultivators from Ancient Holy Clans. Lin Feng noticed some people he knew: Shi Yun Feng and Wang Zhong. Another one of them looked at Lin Feng icily, but Lin Feng didn't know him.

"Who are you?" Lin Feng asked that person.

"Heaven Clan, Cang Ye!" said that person icily. Lin Feng remembered the Heaven Clan, and wasn't surprised. He had killed so many people from the Heaven Clan back in the day. He had even exchanged the indestructible Deva-Mara skill with them back then. Lin Feng didn't know how well they could use such a skill. If someone wasn't strong enough, giving them such a powerful skill was useless, and even dangerous for them.

The prince of the Great Desert Dynasty smiled coldly when he heard Princess Piao Xue. "Even if we can't get the nine castles, this one should be fine."

"No wonder the evil spirit said we had no choice, there are so

many morons. You think those evil spirits are stupid? If you don't kill them when you have the chance, do you think they'll let you off?" Princess Piao Xue spat icily.

"Princess Piao Xue, you talk too much. Since you're from the Tianci Dynasty, I'll give you an opportunity, fight on our side and we'll let your people off. Then, we will head to the other castles." said the Great Desert Dynasty's prince indifferently.

"We can't be your allies," replied Princess Piao Xue icily.

"Since it's that way, I don't need to be polite!" said the Great Desert Dynasty's prince grimly.

"You think you're smart, but you're ridiculous." said Lin Feng mockingly, releasing a Holy Spirit. The others frowned. A Holy Spirit? That was a technique used by the Holy Spirit Dynasty. But Lin Feng had several Holy Spirits, and they were all really strong!...

When all the Holy Spirits transformed, the air began to hum. Lin Feng also released sword energies, his whole aura like an indestructible sword.

He absorbed threads of sword intent. The crowd sensed several sorts of cosmic energies. The cosmic energies condensed in those Holy Spirits and his sword became even more terrifying.

"If anyone makes a step forwards, I'll kill them!" said Lin Feng aggressively. His sword emitted whistling sounds and moved towards the black evil spirit.

The evil spirit grunted icily. He raised his hands and broke the sword strength. However, the crowd was stupefied because Lin Feng's sword intent was incredible and explosive.

"Lin Feng managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage, it proves that he's talented, but it doesn't prove he's strong!" shouted the Great Desert Dynasty's prince.

"Since it's that way, I'll show you!" sneered Lin Feng mockingly.

“Anyone want to see how strong Lin Feng is? Why don’t you try?” said the Great Desert Dynasty’s prince icily. Cang Ye released terrifying Heaven Dao power, bearing down with it as he ran forwards. Sword intent appeared in front of him, crackling with power.

“Brother Cang Ye is the strongest emperor of the Heaven Clan. He’s not weaker than Ji Chang. Let’s see how strong Lin Feng is,” said the Great Desert Dynasty’s prince indifferently. Cang Ye was definitely powerful, truly not weaker than Ji Chang. However, Prince Damo said that because he wanted Cang Ye to use his full strength. Since Prince Damo had complimented him, Cang Ye had to be strong. Lin Feng couldn’t kill Cang Ye, there were too many people who supported him there.

Cang Ye jumped forwards, his Heaven Dao power filling the air, breaking Lin Feng’s sword Qi apart. Cang Ye smiled coldly, “I already have the advantage, you can’t kill me!”

Just as Cang Ye finished talking, a terrifying sword energy rose up. It was extremely fast, striking like lightning. It contained wind, empty space, earth, fire and cursing strength. Just the sound it made as it cut the air felt like it was slicing through their souls!

Cang Ye’s face turned deathly pale. He shouted furiously. Heaven strength swelled around him. However, it was all useless. The sword cut apart everything, sword lights appearing from his right foot to the left part of his head.

Suddenly, the air became very calm.

Chapter 2016: Gloomy Historical Remains

Many people ran away at this display. After the sword lights pierced through Cang Ye, they continued moving past him.

The crowd saw buildings explode in the distance. How awesome!

The atmosphere became eerily silent as everyone looked at Cang Ye. There were the sound of an explosion, and a moment later Cang Ye's body exploded. In midair, the multiple energies continued corroding the pieces of flesh and his body turned to ashes in midair. His group was astonished and shaken.

What kind of strength? So many cosmic energies, they thought, staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng's Holy Spirits twinkled and continued absorbing cosmic energies. Lin Feng's grabbed his sword and said icily, "Prince Damo, why don't you try fighting against me yourself?"

Prince Damo's face stiffened. Lin Feng's sword was deadly! Even Cang Ye hadn't had time to react!

Even though Jian Mang hadn't seen Lin Feng's sword attack, he had sensed how terrifying it was; Lin Feng's sword wasn't any slower than his now, fast and explosive. He had also noticed, from the whistling sounds, that Lin Feng's sword had traveled faster than sound. He had probably used soundwave energy, too. Jian Mang knew that Lin Feng was an incredible sword cultivator, and seemed to have learned a new skill on top of that!

"He only managed to kill one person, if you join hands, you can easily kill him," prodded the evil spirit. Lin Feng raised his head to stare at the spirit, and sword intent dashed to the skies.

At the same time, in the distance, some splashing sounds were heard. Prince Yan and his group, in the central part, had started attacking the lake to open it up. Water kept spraying spectacularly into the air.

A silhouette entered the lake. The crowd was angered: Prince Yan and the others were trying to steal the historical remains before everybody else!

“Let’s go!” Silhouettes flickered. Many people forgot about the Great Desert Dynasty’s prince. Those people were geniuses from powerful groups, they didn’t care about Prince Damo’s orders.

Prince Damo looked at Lin Feng icily and then continued flying away too. The old man in black clothes looked surprised. These bastards, they were going to look for historical remains just like that?

At that moment, Lin Feng was surrounded by sword determination which kept exploding. His energies dashed to the skies. The evil spirit turned into black smoke.

The sword sliced apart the black smoke and cut off a small part of it. Lin Feng rose up into the air and Holy Spirits roared in a thundering rage, continuing to absorb cosmic strength. Lin Feng continued releasing cosmic energies.

Lightning, fire, and death strength surrounded the evil black spirit. However, there was still a lot of black smoke. After a short time, a silhouette reappeared. The old man looked much weaker now. He shouted furiously and glared after Lin Feng ferociously.

This bastard. He ruined my plan. Without absorbing human and spirits’ lives, I can’t become stronger. I don’t want to be a guardian my entire life. I want to access the historical remains!, thought the evil spirit. He glanced at the people who were trying to break the seal icily and thought, Go. Go in there and die. I’ll benefit from you people’s misfortune.

The spirit was convinced their death was going to be tragic. When the foreigners started breaking the seal, they were all very excited. It was an opportunity people had only every hundred years.

—

At that moment, Lin Feng and the others also arrived above the lake. The ancient seal was there. The stronger cultivators kept attacking it like madmen. Finally, they heard it cracking, and the seal started breaking. Rumbling spread out as the ground started shaking.

“What’s going on?” Lin Feng and the others frowned. The castle was slowly starting to rise up into the air.

The crowd was frozen, watching all this. Very quickly, the castle turned into a country and Qi filled the air.

“Are there really historical remains under the ground?” Everybody was amazed. Some people started flying away. People outside of the castle looked at it sharply.

Some people opened the seal!, thought the crowd, shaking eagerly. For those people, the historical remains didn’t represent an opportunity. Some flew towards the entrance.

Lin Feng and the others looked at the Qi. They were sure that these historical remains were very old.

“Let’s go in,” said Lin Feng, flying towards the entrance. There was a pale light in the ancient historical remains. It was cold, and things hadn’t rotted.

“Be very careful, my mother warned me, those historical remains have been left by Saints and might be dangerous,” said Princess Piao Xue. Everybody nodded and released their godly awareness to inspect the area.

It was like another world inside. They had crossed a forest and then seen a mountain range. They all jumped onto a mountain.

“How dark, there are caves there,” noticed Lin Feng after glancing around. Lin Feng just had to make a step forwards and he’d be in a pit. They all contained a gloomy Qi.

“I have the sensation we’re being watched...” said Jian Mang. Everyone shivered at his words.

“I do too, but I can’t see anything with my godly awareness,” agreed Hou Qing Lin.

“Let’s not go in yet. Let’s first go and see what there is here,” said Lin Feng walking forwards.

—

Lin Feng and his friends weren’t the only ones there. Prince Yan, Prince Damo, and many others were there already. Prince Yan and his people were extremely careful. However, on Prince Damo’s side, someone was alone, a member of an Ancient Holy Clan. He was traveling alone in a desolate forest.

Suddenly, that person stopped walking, he turned around and saw a terrifying silhouette, moving towards him extremely fast.

“Die!” A terrifying Qi invaded the atmosphere. However, the silhouette didn’t fight against him, it grabbed his body and penetrated into him. They became one. Suddenly, he shouted explosively. His soul shook violently as if it were about to explode. His face became ferocious.

A horrible shriek broke the silence and echoed far away. The whole crowd shivered.

When that person came out of the forest, his eyes were extremely sinister.

——

Chu Chun Qiu was also in the historical remains. He had come in from another castle. The evil spirits had deceived everyone. There were passages between the different castles, they were in those passages. What the evil spirits wanted was these humans to kill one another.

Chu Chun Qiu was traveling alone, so the same thing happened

to him. However, the consequences were completely different. When that silhouette tried to penetrate into his body, Chu Chun Qiu blocked him. His vitality and determination were incredible. The silhouette tried to escape, but Chu Chun Qiu had bound it. He immediately absorbed it entirely. The exact opposite had happened!

Chapter 2017: Sword Determination Which Never Disperses

Lin Feng and the others also heard the shout, which startled them. The historical remains were gloomy, and everyone felt cold.

“Someone has run into danger. The historical remains are even scarier than we thought, it seems. We didn’t even hear a battle,” said Princess Piao Xue. The ancient Qi in that place made everyone feel uncomfortable.

Even though they were scared, they continued moving forwards. The place was extremely vast. It wasn’t merely as big as the castle.

“There’s someone in front of us,” said Jian Mang. He was blind, therefore his other perceptions were more acute than the others.

“Are you sure?” asked Lin Feng. He had seen some smoke pass quickly, but it was so fast that he wasn’t sure.

“I sensed blood Qi. I shouldn’t be wrong,” said Jian Mang evenly. Lin Feng and the others released their godly awareness and inspected the area.

“It will be extremely difficult to find anything here, especially since these historical remains were left by the Saints in the ancient past,” said Princess Piao Xue with a sigh. Every hundred years, people of their Dynasties came to that world, they had never stopped. They all hoped they would find their own ancestors’ vestiges. After the dismantling of the Qi Tian Dynasty, the Dynasties had never had Saints again. The Saints had all disappeared together. They had never received the original legacy of their ancestors. They had never been able to practice their incredible skills or spells, and they had never seen their ancestors. Maybe their ancestors had left small threads of soul in this world?

They had never found a way to become Saints because their ancestors, the Saints, had never come out. They were usually stuck

when they became Saint Emperors, they couldn't transcend worldliness.

There were half-Saints. They were extremely rare but they existed, they had already broken through, but not entirely.

Suddenly, a strong wind started blowing behind them. Lin Feng turned around and saw a gigantic black eagle, its claws pointed in their direction. The eagle spat out Qi with a horrible putrid stench like death.

Princess Piao Xue punched out in that direction. Water appeared, even as Jian Mang also released an incredible light sword.

The gigantic eagle caught Jian Mang's sword with its claws. The sword sliced into the claws and the eagle gave out a horrible shriek, spinning away.

Lin Feng and the others continued moving forwards.

Suddenly, an old man appeared, stretched out his hand and the eagle fell onto his grasp.

"Eh?" Lin Feng frowned. The old man's blood Qi was extremely powerful. He looked like a human being, but he also looked enigmatic and unfathomable. He was probably a great emperor already, but human beings couldn't be great emperors in this world. Besides, what was he doing in the historical remains?

He didn't look like someone who had come from outside, he looked like someone from the historical remains.

"Master, are you a human being or a spirit?" Lin Feng asked the old man.

However, the old man merely smiled darkly. His silhouette flickered and he disappeared as if he had never appeared.

"Was it a human being or a spirit?" People's eyes glittered. Not far from Lin Feng, another group of people arrived: Prince Yan and his followers. When they saw that person disappear, they were

astonished. Were there great emperors hiding in here? If that was the case, it wasn't a good thing.

"Did you find anything?" Prince Yan asked Lin Feng and the others.

"And you, brother?" retorted Piao Xue for everyone.

Prince Yan looked at Piao Xue for a few seconds and then continued walking on, ignoring her.

Lin Feng also continued advancing. Danger came from all sides in this place. All those who were alone were attacked. Only those who stayed together were out of danger. The geniuses who had gone there were terrifying, so in groups, they were not easy to defeat, and the evil spirits didn't dare attack them.

"There's someone." Lin Feng and the others gazed into the distance and saw a new group of people. Lin Feng knew one of them: Ji Chang!

"The Tianci Dynasty invited him and he's staying with people from other Dynasties," said Princess Piao Xue when she saw Ji Chang. She told Lin Feng, "There are some people from the He Clan, Tian Yuan Ancient City. The He Clan has several people who are disciples of the Fortune Shrine, some of them have the Fortune Shrine's techniques. Even though the disciples aren't as strong as the elders, they probably can find something."

"He Clan." Lin Feng remained silent. Back in the Holy City, he had heard of the He Clan. He knew that the Ying Clan had invited a member of the He Clan to come to use their Destiny Vision to find Mister Xiao. That's how they had found out about Lin Feng and Ji Qing Song!

"Apart from Ji Chang, there are some other people. They've been invited by the Qin Dynasty, have you ever seen them?" asked Princess Piao Xue.

"I know Yin Gu Tian," said Lin Feng. Yin Gu Tian's arm had been

regrown by some method. They had probably made great efforts to heal him.

“And there’s Ying Mo, Ying Cheng’s younger brother. You probably don’t know him because he doesn’t practice in the Holy City, he lives in Qi Tian Holy Town. He’s very famous here, he’s very strong,” said Princess Piao Xue. When those people finally noticed them, they looked at Lin Feng icily, especially Ji Chang.

Lin Feng looked indifferent. He said to Princess Piao Xue, “Let’s follow them, we might find something.”

Prince Yan had the same idea. They all followed the Qin Dynasty. There were some people from the He Clan, so they would have more chances to find things.

Nobody knew where they were, so they wandered aimlessly. They arrived at the top of a mountain. The member of the He Clan looked at the mountain and said, “Raze that mountain to the ground.”

When he said that, everybody started attacking the mountain at the same time. Gigantic hands descended from the sky and crushed the mountain, explosions going off everywhere. The mountain started breaking apart.

Under the mountain, there was a hole.

“A cave!” the crowd exclaimed. Something shrieked through the air and one of their men jumped away, but a gigantic eagle appeared and grabbed him with its claws before flying away. Blood kept dripping from the sky and the cultivator kept giving off horrible shrieks.

“Is he inside?” Lin Feng and the others were astonished when they saw a hand come out of the cave. The old man slowly came out. He was still smiling evilly. The eagle came back and landed on the old man’s shoulder. Blood was dripping from the eagle’s beak.

That eagle is so fast!, thought the wary crowd.

“His clothes.” Someone had looked at the old man’s clothes carefully, They looked ragged, but actually, when looking closer, there were mysterious words and patterns on them.

“Is he from the old days?”

“Master, who are you?” someone asked the old man. The old man was just smiling. He stepped backwards and disappeared again.

“Who is he?”

“He looks like a human being. His Qi is incredible. However, his Qi doesn’t seem human, it seems ghostly.”

“There must be something in that cave,” said the member of the He Clan.

“I sensed something too. A powerful sword Qi.” said someone else. They were all staring at the cave. Some sword lights glittered inside, the sword Qi looked ancient, as if it had never dispersed. There was a skeleton lying underneath it...

“Gigantic cave, mysterious old man, immortal sword Qi, skeleton.” The crowd shuddered with dread. Someone punched out, his attack moved straight into the cave. The walls of the cave exploded with a roar, and it became wider. However, the sword Qi didn’t disperse.

“What kind of sword intent is that? Does it belong to a Saint? It seems like it has not dispersed since the old days.”

How terrifying would it be if people could use it to kill?

Chapter 2018: Saint's Skeleton

“There are bones and sword Qi, is it a Saint's skeleton?” wondered someone. Everybody shivered. Even if it wasn't a Saint's skeleton, it looked terrifying, especially that the sword Qi around it that had never dispersed.

“We can't destroy that sword Qi. We need to take out the skeleton,” someone proposed.

People quickly started moving, they started digging all around the cave, they were deeper and deeper under the ground. Very quickly, they were standing under the sword Qi curtain.

“Come out!” shouted someone furiously. The skeleton hummed. The immortal sword determination suddenly exploded, sharp energies filling the air. The crowd had the impression they were being attacked by ancient swords.

“Be careful!...” Lin Feng shouted loudly. He rose up into the air, grabbing Meng Qing and jumping aside. However, they were too slow, sword lights pierced through Lin Feng's body and blood splashed out.

Everybody remained silent. What a terrifying pressure!

“Pfew...” Lin Feng took a deep breath, it took him a while to relax. He wasn't badly injured. None of them had managed to escape completely unscathed, everybody had been injured at least a little bit by the sword Qi.

“That immortal sword Qi is natural. It's not as explosive as if someone used it to attack, or we would have all died,” said Princess Piao Xue. She had not thought it would be so terrifying.

Everybody was looking at the skeleton. The skeleton was changing, floating in the air and sword intent kept undulating around it. The crowd was now a fair bit away, but they could sense how terrifying the energies were. That sword determination was

indeed strange...

That skeleton is even more precious than Marks of the Path, thought the crowd. Their eyes glittered, staring at the skeleton emitting sword intent.

“Maybe it’s really a Saint’s skeleton and it contains a strong cultivator’s thread of consciousness.”

“Even if it’s only a thread of consciousness, it’s still a precious treasure!”

They gradually started stirring with excitement. However, as they glanced at one another, they also remembered they had to be careful. Stealing the skeleton wouldn’t be that easy!

“That skeleton might be a Saint’s skeleton. It contains intent. Taking it won’t be easy,” murmured Hou Qing Lin. Lin Feng nodded. That skeleton’s sword Qi intent was incredible. Even though it was only a skeleton, the Qi was still powerful.

People remained silent for a long time. Finally, someone moved. People just watched him. He ran at full speed towards the skeleton as a strong wind started blowing.

His speed is incredible. But even if he obtains it, there are so many strong cultivators, someone is going to kill him, thought Lin Feng. The strong wind blew around the skeleton, sword intent started erupting. The crowd sensed the terrifying Sword intent. The skeleton was threatening the cultivator...

Time seemed to stop, an ancient cultivator’s sword streaked across the sky like they were traveling back in time, leaving the crowd astonished.

The wind stopped, the genius reappeared. He was surrounded by Sword intent. There was no sword light, no sharp sword, only Sword intent. It was corroding his body.

“Kasyapa sword,” murmured Lin Feng. Many people looked at him.

“Kasyapa sword?” The princess shivered. She had heard of a Saint who was a sword cultivator. His Kasyapa sword was famous.

Kasyapa was the name of some ancient Buddhist scriptures, the Kasyapa Bodhisatva was a Buddha. The Kasyapa sword could destroy time. According to ancient stories, even the Saints back then didn’t want to fight against him.

“You surprisingly know about the Kasyapa sword?” asked Princess Piao Xue to Lin Feng.

“I’m a sword cultivator too, I’ve naturally heard about it,” Lin Feng smiled. He didn’t tell her the truth, it was too important to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. The Holy Spirit Dynasty already wanted his bloodline, so he had to be discreet.

The one who had gone to grab the skeleton died to the Sword intent. The group then continued slowly walking forwards. However, they were extremely careful, as they weren’t only facing the other geniuses, they were also facing a dangerous skeleton.

Next to Prince Yan was Wang Jian, his body shining. Armor had appeared around his body, he looked like a warlord. He started walking ahead of everyone else slowly.

It’s Wang Jian, he practices weapon cultivation. He’s extremely strong. The weapon he condenses are terrifying, thought the others. Wang Jian raised his left hand, and a shield appeared. He raised his right hand and a gleaming long golden spear appeared.

However, someone else jumped forwards... Zhuo Qing! He released formidable golden lights, a shining golden wind appearing behind him, pressing down on everyone. He had a king-type body: a Diamond Indestructible King-type Body. Like Wang Jian, he was wearing an indestructible armor.

In the distance, someone else arrived like a celestial being. The atmosphere was distorting around them. It was a celestial woman, the Holy Jade Princess!

Chu Chun Qiu also arrived. He was surrounded by ancient kings and Sky Absorbing strength. He looked like an Emperor. Nobody dared underestimate Chu Chun Qiu, he had proven how strong he was. First on the Imperial Ranking List of the Holy City, then on the Holy Way Stage. Apart from Lin Feng and him, nobody else there had managed to do that. Lin Feng was more talented, but Chu Chun Qiu was a high-level emperor and controlled Sky Absorbing strength. People feared Chu Chun Qiu more than they feared Lin Feng.

Some other people were moving: Crazy Bull, Ying Mo, the strong cultivator of the He Clan, Prince Yan, they all moved to different places and released Qi towards the skeleton. This was the first thing they had noticed in this world which could be a precious treasure. It might well be the skeleton of the Kasyapa Saint, filled with his Will!

Lin Feng released Qi around him. He had also gotten ready. Nobody paid particular attention to him. Of course, if he obtained the skeleton, they'd try to get it from him, but that wasn't the case yet.

Lin Feng really wanted the skeleton, he could use the Sword intent, and the skeleton also seemed to be able to control time. That was very useful too, including for Ruo Xie, Lin Feng would be happy to share with him. If Ruo Xie did obtain it, his life would completely change, as he controlled time strength!

Chapter 2019: Fighting Over the Skeleton

Wang Jian jumped ahead, shaking the ground. He was getting closer and closer to the skeleton. People were going crazy watching him.

“Go!” shouted Wang Jian furiously. A gigantic gold alms bowl moved towards the skeleton, Sword intent rising up. The gold alms bowl shook violently, but didn’t break as it enveloped the skeleton.

The gold alms bowl came back to Wang Jian, but Qi invaded the atmosphere, how could the others let him leave with the skeleton?

Zhuo Qing jumped forwards, a strong oppressive wind filling the air. Golden kings appeared holding religious tools, rumbling and shaking the air. The gold alms bowl broke apart in front of Wang Jian. Wang Jian sensed the danger, raising his hand and moving backwards. At the same time, a long spear moved towards Zhuo Qing like thunder.

Zhuo Qing grunted icily, the atmosphere made everyone catch their breath, more explosions sounding between them.

“I remember someone once said Zhuo Qing and Wang Jian were similarly strong. If they fought for real, I wonder how terrifying their battle would be.”

The two cultivators continued fighting. At the same time, around the Holy Jade Princess, the air was starting to bend. She shook her hands and empty space energies moved towards the skeleton and surrounded it.

Chu Chun Qiu immediately reacted when he saw that, the skeleton was possibly a Saint from the ancient days, it was a great treasure for him. He couldn’t give up, the reason why he had come to the Holy Place was because of the other geniuses and because of the treasures. He could swallow their wills and make them his own.

Chu Chun Qiu shook his hand and a terrifying strength enveloped the distorted area, the Holy Jade Princess grunting icily. She made some hand seals, the atmosphere became even more distorted. Sky Absorbing strength collided with it and the skeleton was stuck between their energies.

Zhuo Qing ran forwards and stretched out his hands. His whole body was surrounded by a thick armor, his helmet was the thickest and hardest part of his armor, he preferred being careful.

A terrifying strength whistled, Wang Jian's spear streaked across the sky and thrust at Zhuo Qing. His whole strength surrounded the Saint.

The skeleton seemed furious at that moment. An invisible and intangible sword appeared and cut apart the Sky Absorbing strength. Sword intent rolled in waves all around those four people.

"The Saint has a soul. We must join hands, otherwise he'll get furious," shouted Chu Chun Qiu loudly. Determination emerged from his third eye and absorbed the sword intent. The crowd shivered at seeing that. That guy was insane, Sky Absorbing strength was just too terrifying!...

Zhuo Qing was wearing armor, Wang Jian had a shield, the Holy Jade Princess was surrounded by distorted empty space energies, the Sword intent couldn't affect them. At that moment, cyan lights streaked across the sky.

The crowd was stunned when the skeleton suddenly disappeared.

"Who?" shouted someone explosively. The crowd gazed into the distance and found Lang Ye running away.

"Lang Ye, World King Body!" the crowd snarled. It was him! He had used world strength and had managed to take the skeleton!

"Chase him!" the crowd followed him at full speed, Wang Jian and the others looked particularly angry and pulled long faces.

“Don’t run chaotically, this place is very dangerous,” said Lin Feng to Princess Piao Xue.

When Princess Piao Xue looked at Lin Feng’s eyes, she shivered. He looked firm and aggressive, she knew that place was dangerous, but how could she give up the skeleton, but she also knew that obtaining the skeleton would be dangerous.

“Alright, let’s go together,” said Princess Piao Xue.

“Wait for me.” said Lin Feng to Meng Qing and Hou Qing Lin. Then, he moved away in a blur of movement. Holy Spirits appeared, Lin Feng jumped onto its back and accelerated.

After Lang Ye took the skeleton, he flew away. He could feel the pressure from behind him.

“Stop!” shouted someone explosively, making his soul shake violently. Wang Jian chopped down and a trail of sharp sword energies appeared.

Lang Ye was surrounded by lights. When the sharp sword appeared near him, the atmosphere became distorted, cyan lights appeared and the sword energies disappeared inside.

“World strength.” Wang Jian’s eyes glittered darkly as he snarled furiously. Many sharp swords appeared as he continued running after Lang Ye.

Chu Chun Qiu also chased him, continually releasing ancient king intent. Even though he was some distance away, Lang Ye felt under pressure. Ancient kings appeared in his mind, wanting to kill him.

Lang Ye suddenly had a headache as all sorts of strength bore down on him. He was terribly annoyed. Would he be able to keep the skeleton?

Lang Ye stretched out his hands and released cyan world lights. However, they quickly disappeared. He felt dispirited, he had no choice but to give the skeleton up.

“Lang Ye!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. Lang Ye turned around and saw Lin Feng on his sword, moving extremely fast.

“Grab it!” Lang Ye threw the skeleton at Lin Feng. Lin Feng’s sword whistled as a mysterious Qi rose up into the air.

“Lin Feng.” Chu Chun Qiu and the others suddenly turned around. They looked at Lin Feng and stopped chasing Lang Ye, turning towards Lin Feng. They were interested in the skeleton, not Lang Ye!

“Can that guy absorb the skeleton?” thought Lang Ye in the distance. He was annoyed by his weakness. If he had been really strong, with his world strength, nobody would have been able to chase him. He needed to become much stronger. Back then, Chu Chun Qiu and Lang Ye were similarly strong in the Vast Celestial Ancient City, but now things had changed...

Lin Feng was on his Holy Spiritual Sword and moving blindingly fast. However, the others were still chasing him. Chu Chun Qi shouted explosively. His vitality and determination strength became even more powerful, his Qi even scarier. A sharp sword appeared under his feet and he accelerated.

The Holy Jade Princess was the fastest one. She looked like a celestial being. Surprisingly, Zhuo Qing was the slowest one, not quite as fast as the others.

Some people started using Great Imperial Weapons to chase him. They were all geniuses who had Great Imperial Weapons. In normal circumstances they didn’t use them, but now chasing Lin Feng was more important.

These guys are so fast, thought Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn’t want to do the same as Lang Ye and give up the skeleton. After a short time, Lin Feng arrived in front of the valley with the gigantic black hole. Suddenly, he turned around and his Holy Spirits appeared in front of him. He also released Sword intent, and in front of him a dozen swords suddenly appeared.

Chu Chun Qiu and Wang Jian suddenly stopped, as did the Holy Jade Princess. They were all surprised and staring at Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, the Tianci Dynasty invited you, we should join hands. You can’t absorb that skeleton on your own. Give it to me,” Wang Jian said to Lin Feng sharply. Lin Feng merely smiled coldly.

Chapter 2020: Darkness

“Whether I can use it or not has nothing to do with you. I already have the skeleton. I won’t give it to you,” said Lin Feng icily. A strong wind started condensing. Chu Chun Qiu also arrived. Nobody dared act recklessly. If they all got angry, the battle would become extremely dangerous.

“Lin Feng, if we join hands to fight against you, you will die,” Zhuo Qing said icily. “You were the most talented at the Holy Spirit Dynasty, dying would be a pity. Since you have the potential to become a peerless cultivator, why would you want to have a peerless cultivator’s skeleton?”

“I do want it,” said Lin Feng indifferently. Then, he stepped backwards and slowly fell down into the abyssal dark hole.

Chu Chun Qiu and the others were astonished and dashed after him. They focused their godly awareness into the dark hole, but saw nothing at all.

Cultivators could see perfectly at night, especially at that cultivation level, but this wasn’t night, and it wasn’t darkness.

They looked uncertain now. If Lin Feng attacked them by surprise in the black hole, they’d die. After all, even though none of them thought Lin Feng was stronger than they were, they didn’t underestimate him either, especially since he had a terrifying Sword intent.

“Lin Feng stole the skeleton, and you let him off?” asked some other people who arrived at that moment. Some of them immediately jumped into the black hole and released their godly awareness to inspect the area, remaining vigilant.

——

Lin Feng fell and fell. It seemed like an endless black hole. After a long time, Lin Feng still hadn’t landed. He could only see a few

centimeters around him, it was too dark. He couldn't see things clearly even when they were a few centimeters away, it was too gloomy.

Princess Piao Xue and Meng Qing also arrived at the top of the black hole, their hearts pounding.

Someone released fireballs to illuminate the black hole, but they exploded without showing anything.

After a long time, Lin Feng finally landed on the ground. He could also see a gigantic black entity with softly humming chains.

“What the hell is that? What are those chains?” murmured Lin Feng, feeling the ancient Qi. This place was so old.

Lin Feng raised his head, his Qi rising. Lin Feng sensed Qi around him and understood that people were still chasing him. His sword Holy Spirits appeared around him once more.

Dazzling lights appeared in Lin Feng's field of vision. Wang Jian was the first one to arrive. They were both blind in here. Lin Feng could only see small lights.

A terrifying Sword intent rose up into the air. Wang Jian was shocked, crazily attacking blindly around him. Crackling sounds announced the incoming sword Qi shattering, but his shield shook and shattered at the impact.

Wang Jian was suddenly surrounded by deadly energies. His armor became even more dazzling. He threw his spear, which streaked across the sky.

Death swords appeared as he continued descending from the sky. A gigantic disc appeared under his feet, and another silver blade appeared in his hands. Even though Lin Feng couldn't see it, he could sense it.

Energies slammed together and exploded. Wang Jian knew he hadn't reached Lin Feng.

Higher up into the air, more people were descending. Lin Feng smiled icily. Suddenly, he struck out skywards, and someone grunted painfully.

“Be careful, he’s underneath us!” shouted Wang Jian. He stopped his attack and continued descending the hole. A strong wind started blowing, bearing down from Zhuo Qing!

Whistling sounds spread in the air. More and more strong cultivators were coming down the black hole. At that moment, Lin Feng could sense that the chains were shaking. He looked at the chains, but didn’t see anyone.

Clang, clang...

The chains shook again and broke the eerie silence. Apart from the sougning of the wind, they could only hear the chains shake. The sound was getting louder and louder. In the end, the ground also started shaking as they heard stone cracking...

“What’s going on?” Lin Feng was wary. He could sense the ground was shaking under his feet. He rose up into the air, but at that moment, a gigantic boulder exploded and stones started falling down from the sky.

The crowd in the black hole heard the rumbling, their Qi rose. When the stones finished exploding, Lin Feng saw a gigantic human silhouette. The chains prevented him from moving.

The crowd above him saw a pair of eyes. Even the darkness of the black hole couldn’t stop the lights emitted by those dazzling eyes. They were suddenly terrified.

“A monster, that’s a monster of darkness...” People’s hearts started pounding. Chu Chun Qiu, Wang Jian, and the others ascended rapidly, they were too scared. They wanted to escape.

A golden wind turned into deployment lights. Lin Feng cast a deployment spell and rose up into the air.

“Pfew...” Lin Feng heard a sigh. A gigantic black stick appeared, a

dazzling light moved, then there was rumbling and an explosive impact. A strong cultivator was crushed instantly by the black stick.

Everyone tried to escape. They couldn't breathe anymore, they were terrified to death!

“Dodge!” shouted Jian Mang. He sensed that something wrong was happening. There were more explosions, and Piao Xue and the others were smashed away. Someone was killed behind them, dead without knowing what slew him.

—

In the depths of the black hole, golden lights glittered. Lin Feng took out a talisman, his silhouette flickering several times as deployment lights kept flashing. He had the sensation he could barely breathe...

“Walla walla!” The monster looked at Lin Feng, seeing that Lin Feng wanted to escape and wanting to chase him, but he was chained. He opened his mouth and spat out Qi. Everybody heard him, the noise shaking everyone's soul and threatening to collapse the cave. Some people kept coughing up blood. Some even exploded and died.

How terrifying!, thought Lin Feng. He kept coughing up blood. He had the sensation his soul was going to explode. Even Saint Emperors didn't have such a terrifying strength. Shi Jue Lao Xian's strength was that oppressive, but Lin Feng had never really tried to fight against him so he didn't know how strong he really was.

Is the Saint still alive?, wondered the shaken Lin Feng. Chu Chun Qiu and the others were also terrified.

Was that really a monster? Or was that a human being? Who had chained such a terrifying creature? How powerful were the chains? Who could chain a peerless monster?

People started panicking in the black hole. Many of them fled blindly. They didn't care about anyone else anymore, they just wanted to survive.

At the exit of the cave, a gloomy black shadow appeared. It looked ancient and was staring at all of them. They felt hopeless.

The dark silhouette suddenly released a gigantic hand, descending from the sky and trailing thunder. Many people were crushed by that hand and collapsed.

Escape, everybody was just thinking of one thing, how to escape! Some people even forgot about the creature in the black hole!

Chapter 2021: Fangs

The situation was chaotic inside the black hole. Some people attacked one another without realizing it.

As Lin Feng was throwing talismans, he was gaining altitude and sensed attacks all around him. He had the feeling he was going to suffocate as he released sword energies in every direction around him.

“How dangerous.” Lin Feng sensed some more punches pass next to him. He was sweating coldly, but he kept calm and continued ascending.

Another roar made the whole cave shake, including those inside it. It sounded like a demon king at the bottom of the black hole was howling furiously.

The cave continued shaking. A gigantic hand emerged from the bottom of the cave, shooting skywards. This time, the demon king wasn't controlling himself anymore. The whole cave was trembling, frightening everyone.

Lin Feng was already high up in the air. Chu Chun Qiu and the others had given up and were running away. They were extremely quick, so they had already passed many other people. At that moment, many people who were not fast enough were still in the cave, and sensed that a gigantic hand was closing in on them from behind.

Chu Chun Qiu roared out like thunder, releasing his vitality and strength of intent. He was surrounded by beautiful lights, and moving incredibly fast. People were astonished as he flew by them in the blink of an eye.

Zhuo Qing and Wang Jian were already using their trump cards. The danger was real, their lives were in peril. Lin Feng also used his full strength, deployment lights appeared around him and he

moved invisibly fast.

The gigantic hand passed near Lin Feng. He managed to dodge it, but several other people weren't as lucky. Ying Mo was also still inside. He was quite strong, so he had dared enter the black hole.

The gigantic hand closed, people outside shuddered with dread and ran away, not daring to stay. There was a furious demon here!

Lin Feng did the same, trying to leave as quickly as possible. Who knew how powerful that chained demon was? If he managed to break free from the chains, he might kill everybody in the blink of an eye!

—

When Lin Feng left the cave, his silhouette flickered and he landed at the top of a mountain. He glanced around, looking stunned.

Outside, everything had changed. It wasn't a castle anymore, there were authentic historical remains! Lin Feng glanced around and saw blood everywhere. What a tragedy!

"Lin Feng!" called out someone in the distance icily.

"Give me the skeleton!" someone else demanded harshly. They were getting closer and closer to him!

At that moment, Lin Feng released Holy Spirits, and on his back, a gigantic sword appeared. The sun was shining upon it as it hummed and glowed.

"Come and take it!" Lin Feng replied indifferently. He didn't sound nervous at all. He just looked at the two cultivators who were coming towards him. To him, they were already dead.

"Die!" said one of them, charging and raising their fist. Five rays of light appeared. The other one released a blood sun, and Lin Feng's blood started boiling.

Lin Feng raised his gigantic sword and grunted icily. He

destroyed the many punches, which exploded and dispersed harmlessly. Even if his enemy used Dao power, he could still crush them!

Lin Feng's sword continued shooting forwards. It was magnificent and its Qi was rolling about it. The scorching blood sun moved to meet the sword, dazzling and beautiful.

The sword pierced through the sun, thrusting towards the man. It cut him apart and Lin Feng charged the other enemy, the wind whistling at his speed.

When the strong cultivator noticed Lin Feng charging him, he looked petrified. He waved his hand, and Lin Feng's blood started boiling even more, and it even seemed his soul was burning. At the same time, his opponent continued moving down to oppress him, sending a fire dragon at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng punched out, creating a golden path in front of him. It pierced through the fire dragon, exactly in the middle of it, and continued towards the controller!

Lin Feng then released a Nihilty Sword. At the same time, he released his five Wisdom King Holy Spirits, all of them looking alive and furious. His enemy had no way to escape!

When his opponent tried to use his mind to protect himself, the terrifying Sword was already in front of him and his face turned deathly pale.

"Prasama Burns!" said the man, raising his hand. However, Lin Feng ignored him and continued charging while condensing Sword intent.

Dazzling lights were shining. Lin Feng's sword continued attacking. Lin Feng and the man were now close to one another. The Prasama Burns fireball was cut in half, and a sword mark appeared on the man's third eye.

Lin Feng put his finger on his enemy's third eye, and the man's

entire body exploded. Lin Feng continued on without breaking a step. To him, he had just killed a random person in his way.

Some people in the distance saw that and were astonished, and suddenly nobody wanted to fight against him anymore. His sword attacks were too terrifying. He had cut apart two geniuses in the blink of an eye.

Lin Feng gazed into the distance and condensed more Holy Spirits, finally condensing a sword technique with a terrifying strength. However, he didn't think he could deal with many emperors at the same time. If they joined hands, it could be dangerous for him.

Lin Feng left without turning around.

After a long time, Lin Feng arrived in another mountain range. He glanced around and carved some deployment marks. At the same time, he informed Meng Qing and the others of his circumstances. He also created a clone and started practicing cultivation on his deployment spell.

Lin Feng didn't take out the skeleton, it was too powerful and he couldn't control it. He continued studying his Holy Spirits.

He sat down cross-legged and forgot about the outside world, descending into a deep meditative state. He observed cursing strength and used his Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures to modify it. He turned it into a Wisdom King Holy Spirit. At the same time, he released Demon intent, trying various things. In the end, he managed to create a Cursing Holy Spirit!

He wasn't done, however. He tried making a Nine Netherworlds Holy Spirit next!

After seeing the demon king in the black hole, Lin Feng had realized that this place was even more terrifying than he had thought. The benighted demon king of darkness was enchained,

but who had bound him? And what was that enchained demon king's cultivation level?

At that moment, Meng Qing and Hou Qing Lin were not together, they had scattered while escaping from the demon in the black hole. Lin Feng had contacted them telepathically, so they were all flying in his direction.

Someone in blue clothes appeared on Hou Qing Lin's left. That person turned around and saw Hou Qing Lin, looking at him coldly.

The person in blue clothes charged Hou Qing Lin, terrifying energies reaching out to oppress him.

“Chu Chun Qiu.” Chu Chun Qiu was terrifying, his eyes looked even more frightening.

Hou Qing Lin retreated and took out a sword. He immediately released reincarnation energies and a vortex appeared. Hou Qing Lin didn't want to fight, he knew he was too weak compared to Chu Chun Qiu.

Explosions sounded as Chu Chun Qiu destroyed the vortex. He released vitality and will strength and accelerated.

“You won't leave!” stated Chu Chun Qiu icily. He continued chasing Hou Qing Lin. Each time he took a step, he traveled a long distance. It was incredible to watch.

“So this was Chu Chun Qiu's goal?” Hou Qing Lin kept running away. Chu Chun Qiu had studied the Sky Absorbing Scriptures, he could absorb people's vitality and will strength and use it for himself. Chu Chun Qiu used to be discreet, but after the Pathfinder Day of the Imperial Ranking List, he had started baring his fangs!

Chapter 2022: Brought To Light

Hou Qing Lin had guessed right, Chu Chun Qiu had started showing his strength, his plot was coming to light. In the historical remains, there were only geniuses, their vitality and willpower were incredible. Hou Qing Lin controlled reincarnation strength and was walking on the Path of Reincarnation. Chu Chun Qiu wanted to absorb that strength and use it for himself!

With such powers, he had the potential to become a peerless cultivator and if he did, he'd become really terrifying.

“Reincarnation intent! I want it!” shouted Chu Chun Qiu explosively. He accelerated and released even more vitality and will strength. Hou Qing Lin's mind was trembling as ancient kings kept penetrating into his brain. Chu Chun Qiu released more vitality and will which surrounded, Hou Qing Lin. He couldn't escape anymore!

“Dong!” Hou Qing Lin suddenly stopped. Since he couldn't escape, he had no choice but to fight. His reincarnation strength turned into a hurricane. He started moving, and releasing sword strength too. His reincarnation strength surrounded Chu Chun Qiu, driving Chu Chun Qiu to reincarnate.

“I want your reincarnation strength!” Chu Chun Qiu shouted excitedly when he sensed the reincarnation strength. He released an endless stream of vitality and will, shaking the air. The reincarnation wind broke apart as a gigantic hand descended from the sky towards Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin looked glum and a bit crazy. A vortex appeared around him, his strength dashed to the skies and rolled in waves towards Chu Chun Qiu.

Chu Chun Qiu was manically staring at him, and grunted icily. He didn't dare absorb the reincarnation strength immediately. He used several sorts of strength to attack the reincarnation wind,

hammering Hou Qing Lin. At the same time, Chu Chun Qiu didn't stop, continuing to fly towards Hou Qing Lin.

Hou Qing Lin's face turned deathly pale. He took a deep breath and released intent again. He hadn't thought Chu Chun Qiu would ever attack him like this...

Chu Chun Qiu was getting closer and closer. Hou Qing Lin wasn't happy, but he didn't look scared, just angry. However, at that moment, a coffin appeared containing terrifying cyan lights. A hand emerged from the coffin and moved towards Hou Qing Lin. The cyan lights blotted out the sky.

When Chu Chun Qiu saw that, his face stiffened. However, he didn't chase the coffin, he just stared at the cyan lights icily as they swept Hou Qing Lin away.

"World King Body. I'll capture you someday too!" swore Chu Chun Qiu icily.

—

Hou Qing Lin and Lang Ye reappeared somewhere well out Chu Chun Qiu's range. "Thank you very much, Lang Ye!" said Hou Qing Lin.

"It was just a slight effort. I've always known that Chu Chun Qiu was terrifying. I am from the Vast Celestial Ancient City, too. Now, we finally know he's evil," Lang Ye said calmly.

Hou Qing Lin nodded, "He's definitely fearsome, talented and strong. He tried to attack me, which means he probably intends to attack other geniuses."

"He probably won't dare attack geniuses in front of everyone. Back in the days, the insane cultivator of the Chu Clan was aggressive and violent too, but he was more discreet. He had absorbed many strong cultivators' strengths. Many Ancient Holy Clans wanted to kill him, and all because of him, the Chu Clan fell and was destroyed. I wouldn't have thought an even scarier

cultivator would emerge in the Chu Clan. Chu Chun Qiu knew he had to remain discreet,” Lang Ye said solemnly.

“Chu Chun Qiu is very dangerous. If you hadn’t helped, he would have killed me.”

“Before I left to travel alone, the elders of my clan warned me that the geniuses of the Chu Clan were dangerous. They were wise.” They were traveling and chatting at the same time. After some time, they arrived at the mountain range where Lin Feng had fled to, and landed near him.

“Brother, Lang Ye, how come you’re together?” asked Lin Feng, nodding at both of them. It was his clone. He was practicing cultivation with his real body inside his deployment spell.

“Lang Ye found me and saved me after Chu Chun Qiu tried to kill me. Lin Feng, you have to be very careful,” Hou Qing Lin warned Lin Feng. Since Chu Chun Qiu hadn’t hesitated to attack him, it meant that Chu Chun Qiu would also dare attack Lin Feng at some point, he was just waiting for an opportunity. Chu Chun Qiu was probably very interested in absorbing Lin Feng’s strength, since he had proved he was the most talented back at the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

When Lin Feng heard Hou Qing Lin, he was astonished and asked, “Chu Chun Qiu attacked you, brother?”

“Indeed, I bumped into him and he tried to absorb my strength using Sky Absorbing strength. Lang Ye rescued me. Chu Chun Qiu probably wants to absorb all the geniuses’ strength here in this mysterious world,” Hou Qing Lin nodded. Chu Chun Qiu was dangerous, Lin Feng had to understand that.

“Chu Chun Qiu!” Lin Feng was furious. He knew that Chu Chun Qiu absorbed people’s strength to become stronger. He also knew that he was very talented, but he initially didn’t care. But now Chu Chun Qiu had attacked Hou Qing Lin, it was the same as if he had been attacked personally, there was no difference!

“By the way, have you seen Meng Qing?” Hou Qing Lin asked Lin Feng. If Chu Chun Qiu bumped into Meng Qing, it would be a catastrophe!

“Yes, she’s already inside the deployment spell,” said Lin Feng, pointing at the illusion behind them. Hou Qing Lin was relieved.

In the distance, some people had noticed the deployment lights behind Lin Feng. They stared at Lin Feng icily; he had obtained the skeleton, they wouldn’t forget that!

When they saw Lin Feng and his friends, they didn’t dare act recklessly. Lin Feng saw more and more people gathering in the distance, but he kept calm.

“What should we do?” Lang Ye asked Lin Feng.

“There are many geniuses in the historical remains. But we still haven’t had a big battle. If we did, it’d be funny!” whispered Lin Feng. Lang Ye glanced at Lin Feng, thinking he was crazy. Lin Feng wanted to fight against all the geniuses directly?

“People from Goblin Spirit University,” Lang Ye pointed out. Lin Feng nodded. Prince Chen was there, too!

“Lin Feng, I’ve heard that you have the skeleton!. Since you were invited by the Tianci Dynasty, give it to me. The Tianci Dynasty will pay the price for it!” Prince Chen proposed loudly.

“I was invited by the Tianci Dynasty to come and explore historical remains, but nobody told me it was to give you treasures. Princess Piao Xue has never told me that, either. So I won’t give you anything!” replied Lin Feng indifferently.

Prince Chen frowned and smiled, “Lin Feng, I’m being nice, but you will encounter more and more people. Some of them won’t be as nice as me.”

“Don’t worry about me, Prince Chen,” Lin Feng answered mock-gratefully.

“You managed to sit on the Holy Imperial Throne on the Holy Way Stage in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. If you died, it would be a pity!” said Prince Chen, sounding colder and colder.

“Prince Chen, you are a prince! You have a high social status, if you died here, it’d be a pity!” was the instant comeback.

When Prince Chen heard Lin Feng’s taunt, he was furious and asked, “On the other day, Crazy Bull didn’t use his full strength against you, so you won, but what if he had?”

Crazy Bull slowly appeared and looked at Lin Feng grimly. “Lin Feng, I progressed a lot! Now, we’ll see if you can still compete with me!”

Lin Feng’s real body came out of the fog behind him. He looked at those people scornfully and said breezily, “Try and you’ll see!”

“Alright!” shouted Crazy Bull loudly. He released a terrifying bestial Qi, shaking the air about him, and charged ahead. Crazy Bull struck out as he rose into the air, dust billowing around him.

Chapter 2023: Carving Deployment Marks

Lin Feng ran forwards, his Holy Spirits turning into gigantic swords. He waved his hands, and the gigantic swords flared with light, the sun shining down upon them as they hummed with power.

Lin Feng stretched his finger out, and the swords merged into one. The Prince's people started suffocating. Lin Feng moved his finger and his swords started destroying everything in their way.

The Sword intent surged to meet Crazy bull, whose face stiffened when he sensed the Sword intent. His heart started pounding. What a sharp sword intent, it could cut him apart! He didn't have time to think of what to do, the sword was too fast!

"Argh!" he shouted desperately, a gigantic bull appearing and blotting out the sky. The gigantic sword began to distort, the air sealed with all those energies. However, it still seemed that nothing could stop that sword!

The gigantic bull roared and disappeared. Nothing could stop the sword! More and more bulls appeared and tried to block it. The gigantic bulls fused together into a single gigantic bull which lashed out at it.

Explosions rocked the sky. The gigantic sword and the gigantic bull dispersed. Crazy Bull dropped from the sky and landed on the ground. He looked at Lin Feng, who was still in the sky. There were several more swords suspended in front of Lin Feng. His heart began to pound. He remained silent for a few seconds and then said, "I wouldn't have thought you were so strong. What is that spell you're using? It's from the Holy Spirit Dynasty!"

His Dao strength couldn't stop the gigantic sword!

Prince Chen was surprised too. He knew perfectly well how strong Crazy Bull was, he was a fearsome Champion! Surprisingly,

Lin Feng could compete with him!

In the distance, many other people had arrived. Prince Chen turned around to look at them, then he said to Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, you’re very strong, but you can’t fight alone against so many geniuses. You can’t protect the skeleton. We should join hands! Give it to me for now, and when we go back to the Dynasty, I will let you study it, you will be able to absorb some of its strength.”

“You want to take my item and then lend it to me, you think I’m stupid?” Lin Feng replied icily to Prince Chen.

“You want to bring about your own destruction,” said Prince Chen calmly. More and more strong cultivators were gathering and looking at the three of them.

“Lin Feng, give me the skeleton!” demanded Wang Jian icily. He was holding his spear and Qi spinning around him. Some people had died in the black hole because of Lin Feng, and they still didn’t know what that demon king was.

Princess Piao Xue had also arrived. When she saw the three cultivators at the top of the mountain, she was nervous. How brave! There were so many geniuses, yet Lin Feng didn’t mind, he looked calm and fearless.

“Lin Feng, you’re lucky, you have the potential to become a peerless cultivator, you have to understand that if you don’t hand the skeleton over though, you will definitely die.”

“He wants to die. We don’t need to be polite to him.”

People spoke up one after another. The wind howled past them, fluttering Lin Feng’s clothes. He looked quite calm and unimpressed, not nervous at all.

“Die!”

“Kill them!”

“Kill him and take the skeleton!”

People started releasing energies. They all looked at him icily.

Behind Wang Jian, many spears appeared, he looked even more ferocious and fierce.

Wang Jian started charging, his spears pointed at Lin Feng. It seemed like they could pierce through anything.

“Go!” Wang Jian’s spears streaked across the sky, diffusing ice-cold Qi, aimed at Lin Feng. Lang Ye also started moving. He raised both hands and dazzling cyan lights appeared, turning into a hole that bent the air and light around it. The spears looked extremely sharp. Lang Ye kept waving his hands, and when the spears penetrated into the cyan lights, it was as if they had broken in two and simply disappeared.

“World Empty Space!” Wang Jian grunted icily. More people rose up into the air. Lin Feng watched them grimly. He waved his hands, and a blade-sharp golden wind started blowing. Empty space deployment lights appeared everywhere.

Lin Feng stretched out his hands and used his celestial stage deployment spell, several mountains appearing.

“Since Lin Feng is not willing to cooperate, we don’t need to be polite to him! Kill him!” Prince Yan ordered at that moment calmly.

Several cultivators started flying towards Lin Feng. The earth and sky started resonating and shaking violently. Energies rose explosively to meet them. Fissures appeared in the mountains underneath Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at the crowd icily. A Holy Spirit appeared and moved into the celestial stage deployment spell, followed by several others. Lin Feng was surrounded by lights of wisdom.

Wang Jian grunted icily. His golden spears continued shooting out. However, even though they pierced through the Wisdom Kings, they didn’t destroy them!

Lin Feng released five more Holy Spirits. At the same time, his five Wisdom Kings surrounded the incoming crowd. Wisdom Kings appeared in their brains and their souls started trembling.

One more silhouette appeared, a Nine Netherworlds Demon King! He started singing, and the soundwave caused by the melodies pierced through their bodies, trying to control them!

“Move!” shouted Wang Jian. He frowned as more Qi rose, the swords also humming along. The sounds kept piercing through people’s ears.

The attackers realized it didn’t look good for them. Lin Feng’s deployment spells were incredible, and his strength kept gaining in intensity.

There were multiple explosions as Lin Feng attacked all those cultivators at the same time. Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin landed on Lin Feng’s left and right. Lang Ye released world lights which, a few seconds later, spat out three corpses. Hou Qing Lin also released reincarnation strength, and even though he didn’t manage to kill enemies, he could at least prevent them from moving forwards.

Stars appeared and descended from the sky, shooting towards Lin Feng. The air became ice-cold around them, but Lin Feng ignored that, his hair fluttering in the wind, free and unrestrained. He released death Kalpa swords, which kept fusing together with the celestial stage deployment spell. Holy Spirits kept condensing in front of Lin Feng.

A gigantic sword slashed across the sky. The strong cultivators were stunned. They all used their most powerful attacks to stop it, but Lin Feng’s attack still killed someone, his head flying away.

A strong wind kept pushing against them. Lin Feng released World of the Living Imprints, fusing them with the celestial stage deployment spell. The combined energies surrounded the crowd. Lin Feng didn’t stop after having released World of the Living

Imprints, he continued releasing Holy Spirit lights, and his sword continued humming ominously.

“Let’s move back,” said Lin Feng calmly. They slowly moved back into the fog of the deployment spell. He couldn’t kill those geniuses easily, but at least he could teach them a good lesson, and they wouldn’t forget how strong he was for a while.

“Boom boom!” The attackers converged on the celestial stage deployment spell. Even though Lin Feng had killed several people already, they were so furious that they didn’t want to let him off.

“Die, die, die!” Whistling sounds spread out as the crowd attacked. The strong cultivators wanted to attack Lin Feng and the two others, but realized that they were merely smiling icily back at them.

“Illusion, it’s a deployment spell again!”

“Go in, break the deployment spell, and kill them!” exclaimed Wang Jian, surging ahead. A dazzling armor appeared around him, and he condensed a spear and a shield, all in the blink of an eye.

They charged into the deployment spell. They were all really strong, all of them geniuses, and they didn’t fear the deployment spell.

Chu Chun Qiu was standing in the distance and calmly watching the battle. He didn’t go into Lin Feng’s deployment spell, as he knew perfectly well how powerful Lin Feng’s deployment spells were.

Chapter 2024: Collapsing Sky

In the fog of the deployment spell, the strong cultivators had the impression they were in a dream. Deployment lights kept twinkling and undulating around them, and they felt strength condense.

“Break!” Wang Jian shouted icily. He waved his hand, and his spears thrust into the ground. He leapt away as golden marks appeared on the ground. It was like the deployment marks were about to break.

“Sky Destroying Weapon!” Wang Jian shouted furiously. He summoned weapons, and at the same time he attacked all parts of the deployment spell. There were rumbles of defiance, the deployment spell sounded like it was going to explode.

The others also used powerful attacks against the deployment spell.

At that moment, a powerful Death intent rose up and started eating away at their life force!

“Hmph!” someone grunted icily. Someone rose higher and released explosive and dazzling lightning bolts all around. Purple lights assaulted the deployment spell as a strong wind started blowing.

—

Lin Feng was watching them coldly. All those people were all geniuses, relying solely on deployment strength to defeat them would be difficult.

Sword intent filled the air. The crowd saw millions of threads of light, raised their heads and shouted furiously.

However, the Death intent was also becoming ever more intense, their lives were being corroded. Faces started turning grey. Someone said icily, “We need to destroy the deployment spell as

soon as possible, or we'll die!"

"We can also kill him, I'll use Star Dao to find Lin Feng inside the deployment spell!" someone spoke up. Dazzling Dao power filled the sky. A constellation appeared, and inside the deployment spell, people were suddenly marked by star imprints, including Lin Feng.

A destructive spear shot towards Lin Feng. Lin Feng was surprised by the move, but he released World of the Living Imprints to counter the attack.

"Freeze!" shouted someone icily. The death strength inside the deployment spell froze.

Lin Feng merely smiled coldly. The strong wind turned into a hurricane, and started moving out of the deployment spell.

"Get out of the deployment spell!" said Lin Feng. In a flash, Lang Ye, Hou Qing Lin, Meng Qing and he left the deployment spell. The enemies inside it lost track of him.

"Can the stars find him outside of the deployment spell?"

"The deployment spell contains illusion strength, the stars can find people inside. We can't find him outside, all we have to do is break the deployment spell!" said the Star Dao controller. A terrifying great imperial strength emerged. The crowd was startled. Someone was using a Great Imperial Weapon! People didn't care about anything else if they could get the skeleton!

Lin Feng looked at the deployment spell icily. He was furious. Surprisingly, someone dared use a Great Imperial Weapon!

Lin Feng took out his Celestial Evolution Chessboard, and his deployment spell started changing. Gigantic waves of energies gushed forth. The Celestial Evolution Chessboard became gigantic, and Lin Feng jumped atop it. His Death intent blotted out the sky and absorbed ever more power. At the same time, Lin Feng released two demon punches.

The strong wind roared violently. Lin Feng descended from the

sky and penetrated into the demon spell, his demon punches striking out. The two gigantic punches were monstrously strong, and faces stiffened. They could sense that the death energies were becoming much stronger. At the same time, a death pattern was pressing down on them. Death lights twinkled around the Celestial Evolution Chessboard, and those trapped within looked increasingly desperate.

“Kill Lin Feng!” said someone icily. A gigantic black bell appeared, the Qi which emerged from it kept turning into threads of energies which looked like mahoragas. At the same time, Lin Feng released lightning, which fell onto them like a storm.

[Editor’s Note: A mahorga is a type of Buddhist earth deity.]

Lin Feng moved around, his silhouette kept twinkling here and there on the Celestial Evolution Chessboard. Thunder rumbled darkly as death strength kept bearing down on the trapped men. They saw Lin Feng for a few seconds, he looked crazy as he used his Celestial Evolution Chessboard to even dodge their attacks!

Many of them were now surrounded by death Qi, and had the sensation they were losing control. Some of them started regretting having engaged in a battle with him, including the one with the Great Imperial Weapon.

Lin Feng released more Holy Spirit swords, and at the same time continued striking out with demon punches. He really wanted to kill these people, otherwise the same thing would happen over and over again. It would be too troublesome!

At that moment, Wang Jian took out a real spear. It was 33 chi long, and strength condensed around it.

{33 chi =~11 meters}

“Everybody, lend me your Imperial Weapons. We’ll see if we can break his Celestial Evolution Chessboard!” Wang Jian said icily. He stretched his hand, suddenly, the atmosphere became even more oppressive and lights dazzled.

“Monarchic Long Spear!” People started handing Wang Jian their weapons. An ominous strength started gathering. Lin Feng suddenly turned around on his Celestial Evolution Chessboard, rising up as the board began to hum beneath him.

In the deployment spell, all the Great Imperial Weapons condensed into a single gigantic sword, the atmosphere around it extremely domineering!

Even Lang Ye and the others sensed the terrifying strength. Lang Ye’s face changed and he said, “It’s a Monarchic Long Spear! Go into my Monarchic World Coffin!”

Lang Ye took out his world coffin, which descended from the sky. Lin Feng promptly took his Celestial Evolution Chessboard away, and jumped into the world coffin. Behind him, the air blew apart in a monstrous explosion. The deployment spell was torn apart as the world coffin disappeared. A light beam appeared and shot away into the sky.

The crowd was shaken. The geniuses had Great Imperial Weapons, but those were their trump cards, they usually didn’t use them. Even to steal the skeleton they hadn’t brought them out, because otherwise a great battle would have broken out, and the consequences could have been tragic. But now they had all taken out their Great Imperial Weapons to fight against Lin Feng!

However, the crowd didn’t even have time to be surprised, as the cyan lights dashed to the skies. Their hearts were pounding, the sky seemed about to collapse.

The world coffin appeared somewhere else. Lin Feng was sitting atop it. He saw the fissure in the sky. No wonder Ancestor Shi Tian had told him not to fight against Ji Chang. People from Ancient Holy Clans had powerful trump cards to protect their lives, but they could also use them to kill other people.

“The Monarchic Spear is also called the King of Weapons. It is extremely powerful, created by condensing many other weapons

together. It has an overwhelming power,” murmured Lang Ye. At that moment, they were all looking at the hole in the sky. Crumbs kept falling from it, looking quite strange...

“The sky is collapsing. Maybe the Saints created this world back then?” wondered Lang Ye. He was astonished. Back then the Saints had fought a great war, had they created this place? What was going on?

And were the details only known to insiders? Who knew?

The sky kept falling apart. People stopped fighting and looked at the sky. An endless number of golden lights appeared up there, each such light curtain extremely sharp.

“There... it seems like there’s someone up there!” The crowd was astonished as they stared at the golden lights. Someone had appeared up there! A black stone had also appeared, chains attached to it.

“Chains!” Lin Feng started trembling. What was going on?

“Was a Saint, or several, bound here?” murmured someone. The crowd was stunned. That wasn’t really possible, was it? After the Saints’ battle, they had sealed this world, how come some people were bound here? And who was that person in chains? What was their cultivation level?

Chapter 2025: Ancient Saint?

“I have the impression that everyone is wrong,” murmured Lang Ye. Lin Feng and the others looked at him.

“Why?”

“Back then, the elders of my clan said that when you’re a saint, you become indestructible. Zun cultivators can use their blood to regenerate body parts. In the case of Saints, if they only have a drop of blood or a thread of soul left, they can survive. The only way to kill them is to destroy their soul so that it explodes into a million pieces, and that’s impossible. The Saints couldn’t possibly have sealed this world to die, there must be some behind-the-scenes story,” said Lang Ye gravely. Lin Feng and the others could only mutter to themselves at his words.

Lin Feng had seen the ancient battle with his own eyes. Even though all the Saints were injured in the end, the battle hadn’t ended. Had they really fallen? The ancestors had sealed this world for their descendants to come there every hundred years, it couldn’t possibly be because they wanted to kill themselves. It was simply impossible!

What was that chained entity? A terrifying demon?

“The Kasyapa Will which the skeleton contains might be the Kasyapa Saint’s Will. If I’m not mistaken, all the Saints had remorse and sealed that world, maybe they didn’t fight against one another, right? If the Saints didn’t fight against one another, who fought against the Kasyapa Saint?” Lin Feng mused. He looked at Lang Ye and said, “Lang Ye, if you had taken out the world coffin first, you would have been able to protect the skeleton.”

“Indeed, I think the same as you, that skeleton probably is the Kasyapa Saint. Who could have killed him to the point that he would have died and turned into a skeleton? I sensed his energies when I took it. However, it’s useless to me. I don’t need it. I want

to see the other treasures. That skeleton will be more useful to others.”

“Maybe in this place, there aren’t real historical remains per se. Or maybe there are other places with real historical remains which belonged to the Saints.”

At that moment, Princess Piao Xue slowly walked up to Lin Feng. He looked at her and said, “Princess Piao Xue, don’t get too close to me.”

“They aren’t insane, they won’t dare attack me,” said Princess Piao Xue smiled.

Lin Feng nodded and asked, “Princess, have you ever heard of anything concerning this place in the Tianci Dynasty?”

Princess Piao Xue muttered to herself for a moment, looking thoughtful, before nodding and saying, “I have, actually. Many people have been to the historical remains, and each time, they see different things. We even have books in which people write some things.”

“Have you ever seen those books?” asked Lin Feng.

“I have,” Princess Piao Xue nodded. “It’s supposed to be a secret of our Dynasty, we’re not supposed to tell other people. The dark abysses, the chant valley, the emerald green forest, the golden mountain range, all those places are forbidden areas. The chained spirits are envoys from Hell. This place might be the place I’ve been looking for.”

Lin Feng was startled. The Ancestors had already realized that there were demon kings in this place, not only in the black hole, but also in the other locations. But there weren’t really strong cultivators here, so if Wang Jian hadn’t used his Monarchic Spear, the sky wouldn’t have broken.

“Forbidden areas, so those forbidden areas might be places where the Saints have left historical vestiges, like the black hole.”

“Maybe,” Princess Piao Xue nodded.

Lin Feng glanced upwards, just as the gigantic enchained silhouette opened its eyes. His soul shook. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to be paralyzed if he looked at those eyes!

If that creature was as strong as the creature in the black hole, one breath and he could kill all of them!

There was an ear-splitting crack of thunder, the very space shook, more fissures in the sky appeared, and the chains vibrated madly as the wind howled.

“Oh no, let’s go!” said Lin Feng. His expression changed. Their group dove down and flew off into the distance.

The others also realized that something wrong was going on. If they stayed, they might die!

The violent windstorm was more and more intense and oppressive, the thunder rolling every louder. The earth and sky truly shaking violently.

Lin Feng turned around. The growing whirlwind was terrifying, nobody could escape from it.

“Get into the world coffin again!” said Lang Ye. The group of friends jumped into the world coffin and Lang Ye closed it, before streaking across the sky and disappeared from there. The other strong cultivators also used their Great Imperial Weapons to escape as quickly as they could!

An extremely loud voice roared out and made the sky shake. More fissures appeared in the sky, light shining through them as shattering sounds filled the air. The chains kept shaking and vibrating.

Inside the black hole, something roared violently in response. More shattering sounds spread out, the rattle of the second pair of chains joining the first. People raised their heads, watching the chains keep vibrating. Those chains could bind even space and

light, but now...?

Lin Feng and the others arrived somewhere else. That world seemed to be isolated from the rest of the cosmos, a world which couldn't handle chaotic situations.

“Princess, when geniuses come every hundred years, apart from the few authentic forbidden areas, have they talked about other historical remains?” Lin Feng asked Piao Xue.

Piao Xue was surprised. She had not thought of that. People had been coming to the world for a long time, and they had probably inspected the most ordinary places already, but maybe some uninhabited places had been completely forgotten.

“Relying on our strength, we can't obtain historical remains anyway,” said Piao Xue smiled wryly.

“However, back in the days when the Saints sealed the area, maybe that they were scared of something. I have the feeling that it could have something to do with the chained creatures. If those people break free, we might very well be doomed. I don't think those people could be the Saints, the Saints wouldn't have bound themselves,” Lin Feng conjectured. The Ancestor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty had transmitted memories to Lin Feng and he had told him about “it”... What was “it”? Maybe it had something to do with the enchained people?

The wind moaned. Lin Feng turned around and saw a silhouette had somehow appeared behind him.

It was an old man. Lin Feng had seen him before, it was the old man who had appeared around the black hole. What was he doing here?

“You want to know the truth?” the old man finally asked. Lin Feng was startled, but nodded, “Master, if you can tell us, please do!”

“Come with me and you'll understand,” said the old man

pointing off in a direction. “The Saints couldn’t have died that easily.”

Lin Feng was intrigued. His friends and he glanced at one another and nodded, and followed the old man.

The mysterious old man took them to an altar, with pillars on both sides. There was a flight of stairs in front of it. A silhouette was seated cross-legged in front of the altar. That person had no life Qi, it was impossible to detect their presence.

Lin Feng stared at the mysterious silhouette, remaining vigilant.

The silhouette suddenly opened its eyes and looked at Lin Feng and the others, “A hundred years have passed again.”

“Who are you, Master?” Lin Feng asked suspiciously.

“Saint Tianhun, have you ever heard that name?” replied the old man evenly. Princess Piao Xue was astonished and frowned. The old man looked at her and smiled, “You’ve heard about me?”

“The ancestor of the Celestial Soul Dynasty! Are you really Saint Tianhun?”

“Celestial Soul Dynasty?” repeated the old man, and asked, “The Celestial Soul Dynasty must have been created by my descendants, are they all right?”

“They disappeared a long time ago...” replied Princess Piao Xue.

“Oh...” the Saint sighed. He looked extremely sad.

“Master, what are those enchained creatures? What happened at the end of the Saints’ war in the ancient days?” asked Princess Piao Xue.

Saint Tianhun smiled and said, “Little girl, the enchained creatures are evil spirits. We sealed this world because of them. For that, we had to pay the price. Many of us died because of them. As for me, I had practiced broken soul strength, so I managed to

stay alive.”

When Lin Feng heard Saint Tianhun, he was astonished. Evil spirits? Lin Feng found it hard to believe. He had heard the Ancestor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he had told him that “it” had caused trouble. Saint Tianhun didn’t mention “it” at all, he was talking about evil spirits?!

Chapter 2026: The Gigantic Foot in the Valley

“Master, why did all the Saints fight a great war in the old days?” Lin Feng asked calmly.

Saint Tianhun looked at Lin Feng and replied, “We disagreed on many things, but we hadn’t thought that the evil spirits would attack us at some point. The Qi Tian Dynasty was so powerful that we could have easily killed them, we wouldn’t have just sealed this world. Now, they are starting to recover. If they break free, you will notice it quite quickly.”

Lin Feng immediately understood that Saint Tianhun was lying. He wasn’t sure that person was really Saint Tianhun.

“Master, why do you want our younger generation to come here?” asked Lin Feng.

“We need your help. I need to recover, those five pillars can activate the altar, you can stand on the one in the middle, the others can stand on the four other pillars. Don’t worry, it’s not dangerous for you,” said Saint Tianhun slowly.

Lin Feng nodded and said, “Alright.” Then, he said to Lang Ye and the others telepathically, “If anything is wrong, we must escape immediately.”

Lang Ye and the others understood. They all listened to the orders, Lin Feng walked to the pillar in the middle, next to the old man, while Lang Ye and the others jumped onto pillars.

“Is this okay, Master?” asked Lin Feng asked Saint Tianhun.

“Yes, thank you very much,” Saint Tianhun smiled. He released soul strength, which moved straight to the altar. However, at that moment, Lin Feng suddenly disappeared and reappeared in front of Saint Tianhun.

“Die!” shouted Lin Feng while releasing death sword strength. At the same time, his sword Holy Spirit pierced through Saint Tianhun’s head, the Death intent corroding his body.

Saint Tianhun was stupefied, he suddenly raised a hand which had turned black, trying to catch Lin Feng.

“Let’s go!” shouted Lin Feng extremely loudly. Lang Ye’s expression changed drastically. At the same time, the old man reappeared in front of him. Lang Ye could only retreat.

At the same time, Saint Tianhun activated the altar. Two light beams illuminated him and Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the impression he was being teleported.

“Why did you do that?” asked Saint Tianhun, staring icily at Lin Feng.

“You keep lying,” replied Lin Feng grimly. He immediately released sword strength and cut into the old man’s hand.

Saint Tianhun? Even if it was really a Saint, so what? Lin Feng didn’t want to lose his body.

Saint Tianhun’s Qi kept shaking as if he were about to die. “I’ll take your body!”

A powerful strength penetrated into Lin Feng’s brain. Lin Feng’s face stiffened. He released Holy Spirits strength which bombarded the altar, tearing it apart, and then ran away.

“Die!” shouted Saint Tianhun furiously. Lin Feng had the sensation his soul was going to explode. He released his five Wisdom Kings to protect his soul, as his Godly Awareness Palace also appeared. At the same time, death strength surged back to counter the attack. Saint Tianhun’s soul strength weakened a lot. However, it didn’t disperse and continued vibrating in Lin Feng’s brain.

Saint Tianhun was furious. It was difficult for him to recover, and now Lin Feng had almost crushed him! Saint Tianhun looked ferocious. His Qi was still surrounding Lin Feng.

“Go!” shouted Saint Tianhun. In a flash, his soul strength raged out and sheered through the air, heading for Lin Feng.

At that moment, the old man’s face stiffened, he went back to the altar and knelt down before it respectfully. “Master, I failed.”

“It has nothing to do with you. Use some spirits to capture him. He can’t die. We must capture him alive,” said Saint Tianhun icily. Many spirits emerged from his mouth, and at the same time, many evil spirits in the historical remains received the same orders.

“Yes, Master,” said the old man. He ignored Lang Ye and the others, they were escaping. He just chased after Lin Feng.

—

Lin Feng jumped into his boat and fled. Soul strength kept following him.

It might be Saint Tianhun, but now he needs a body, thought Lin Feng angrily. He had injured Saint Tianhun, the consequences were too dreadful to contemplate. Saint Tianhun hadn’t expected Lin Feng would use a talisman to escape, however.

How fast. Surprisingly, he’s a little bit faster than my boat, thought Lin Feng, pulling a long face. Saint Tianhun couldn’t travel far for some reason, obviously he had to stay near the altar. Lin Feng took out a Great Imperial Weapon and flames appeared everywhere around him... and he saw the soul strength move right through it. After a few seconds, Lin Feng decided not to use his Great Imperial Weapon to stop the attack.

“Lin Feng!” At that moment, someone was startled to see Lin Feng. Then he saw the soul strength chasing Lin Feng and smiled coldly.

Lin Feng released death strength, and a dozen Holy Spirit

gigantic swords appeared.

The person's expression changed drastically. An ancient bell appeared and swung at Lin Feng, ringing loudly. Lin Feng smiled coldly. He took out a talisman and threw it. As it exploded, Lin Feng teleported himself, reappearing behind that man, whose face changed drastically again. The ancient bell came sweeping towards Lin Feng, who turned around and released sword energies, cutting apart the man.

Lin Feng didn't stop though, jumping onto his boat again and continued his escape. The crowd on the ground sensed that he was extremely strong, and that they couldn't stop him.

That soul strength is really powerful. Lin Feng can't escape, thought some of them, their eyes glittering. Lin Feng just continued his escape. He flew towards a mountain range, and saw many buildings there. The soul spear continued chasing him though. It would not disappear until it reached him.

Saint Tianhun was still seated cross-legged by the altar, his eyes closed. He was forming some hand seals and chanting, and the soul spear was changing. Lin Feng sensed that some strength was fusing together with the soul strength.

He controls it perfectly, thought Lin Feng, annoyed. He couldn't use Great Imperial Weapons to stop it, and his enemy could also control it even from thousands of kilometers away. Lin Feng couldn't use his own soul to fight against it, it was too dangerous.

At that moment, a sound pierced through Lin Feng's eardrums, and his mind shook. He gazed into the distance and saw a mountain range. An invisible and intangible strength surrounded it. The sounds came from there.

"There's someone!" Lin Feng saw someone in a valley. He had to be vigilant...

That must be... Chant Valley!, thought Lin Feng with a frown. He

accelerated, and the soul spear accelerated too. Lin Feng dove into the valley.

“There’s music!” Lin Feng shivered. He had to protect his soul above anything else. He continued diving towards the mountain. Some people outside were stupefied after noticing it was Lin Feng.

The terrifying spear suddenly stopped in front of the mountain.

“Since you want to die, I’ll help you. It’s such a pity though, you have a perfect body,” said the Saint back by the altar icily. He condensed his soul strength even more, it turned into a gigantic spear and shot towards Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was startled, but continued racing forwards. He had to rely on the strength of the mountain to help him. Otherwise, that soul spear would continue chasing him forever.

The music grew louder, and Lin Feng’s soul started to shake. The soul spear also kept dispersing as it collided with the soundwaves.

The music is getting louder and louder, thought Lin Feng. His soul shook more and more violently, but the soul spear was being destroyed too!

——

At that moment, inside Chant Valley, Ji Chang, He Can, Yin Gu Tian, and some people from the Qin Dynasty were gathered about a gigantic foot. The foot was oppressive, and the music wasn’t that loud there.

“We found something! He Can, you’re amazing. You found this place!” Prince Qin complimented him. This was his Ancestor’s vestige! Unfortunately, he had probably died. There was still a gigantic foot left behind, however.

“It’s all thanks to your talent and our luck. After all, my destiny technique isn’t almighty,” said He Can quietly.

Prince Qin nodded and replied, “No matter what, we found my

Ancestor's historical remains. I've heard how dangerous it is here, I hope we won't have any problem here."

Chapter 2027: Dialogue

Prince Qin looked at the gigantic foot, which contained a foreboding Qi. He had read about things like this in books he had found in the Qin Dynasty, and the Qin Dynasty used some techniques which used such a Qi.

Prince Qin stretched out his hand and tried to take the foot into his ring. However, the foot didn't move. It was too gigantic and heavy. He glanced around, they could still hear the music a little bit...

The others were stupefied when they saw that Prince Qin couldn't take the foot.

In the distance, they heard the wind whistling of something moving quickly, and then they saw Lin Feng.

Lin Feng was borrowing the strength of the valley to weaken the soul chasing him. He was startled when he saw Ji Chang and the others in front of him.

“Lin Feng!” Ji Chang's eyes twinkled. He slowly rose up into the air and his Qi rolled out towards Lin Feng.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng icily. Ji Chang grunted icily and punched out. His punch contained Destructive Dao, it was every bit as oppressive as before, smashing into Lin Feng's sword energies. However, even though the earth and sky seemed about to collapse, Lin Feng's sword continued slashing forwards!

Cyan Dragon Totems appeared, and Ji Chang condensed more Destructive Dao. Lin Feng countered by taking out a talisman and continued moving towards Ji Chang.

“Die!” Ji Chang shouted furiously, thunder rolling with the force of his attack. Lin Feng had the sensation his brain was going to explode. Lin Feng broke another talisman at that moment and disappeared.

Terrifying energies shrieked. Ji Chang's soul trembled as he saw the gigantic soul spear. It had weakened a lot, but it was still terrifying, everything turning black around it.

—

“Bastard!” Saint Tianhun was furious. He realized he couldn't capture Lin Feng anymore.

—

The spear altered course towards Ji Chang and suddenly Ji Chang realized he was in grave danger.

“Lin Feng!”

Ji Chang hated Lin Feng. He had failed to harm him, and the spear which had been chasing Lin Feng was now shooting towards him. He released Cyan Dragon Totems which turned into a gigantic dragon. Destructive Dao filled the air around him as well, rumbling and exploding as it fought against the advance of the spear. The spear continued moving towards his head. It wasn't as powerful as before, but was still moving!

After breaking the talisman, Lin Feng appeared above the foot. World strength appeared and surrounded the foot. Prince Qin looked at the foot, only to see it disappear in front of him. Only a silhouette remained.

Ji Chang was smashed towards Prince Qin. Prince Qin shouted furiously, slapping Ji Chang away hard. Ji Chang coughed up blood and his face turned deathly pale. Prince Qin raced after Lin Feng.

Yin Gu Tian and He Can were astonished and looked at the blood on the ground. Ji Chang was badly injured!

Poor Ji Chang!, thought Yin Gu Tian. Prince Qin had seen Lin Feng steal the big foot, then they had only heard the moaning of the wind. He was so furious, he had attacked Ji Chang and injured him!

Ji Chang stood up, shaking violently, and furious beyond measure.

“Argh!” Ji Chang shouted violently, like an animal, he immediately attacked one of Prince Qin’s guards. The guard was stunned. However, Ji Chang was lucky he was a Champion, as even if that guard was strong, he couldn’t do anything against Ji Chang.

At that moment, Ji Chang was really furious, he released Destructive Dao which exploded out. The enemy’s veins exploded. Ji Chang then smashed his face, and the guard’s head exploded, blood gushed out and pieces of brains splashing everywhere.

The two other guards pulled a long face. They stared at Ji Chang icily. Ji Chang was humiliating Prince Qin!

Ji Chang promptly attacked them and crushed them. Yin Gu Tian and He Can gulped when they saw that. They were now frightened of Ji Chang. He was a Champion! Even though he had been defeated by Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu, he was still a genius, and a high-level genius at that!

Lin Feng continued flying across the valley. The music was getting louder and louder. Maybe he was going to bump into an enchained creature...

He suddenly felt strength building beneath him, strong enough to kill. He shivered, and the invisible and intangible strength passed under his feet.

Lin Feng felt very cold. More strength rose up in the air in front of him.

Another huge foot appeared in front of Lin Feng. More strength emerged from it, it was extremely formidable.

I got the left foot, now there’s the right foot. Do they belong to a saint?, thought the stunned Lin Feng. He was very vigilant, as he could still hear the music. However, Lin Feng still landed at the

base of the foot, he tried to lift it with raw strength, but it was extremely heavy. He could only make it shake a little bit.

If I don't use the world of my spirit, I can't take it, thought Lin Feng. He released his spirit world strength, it surrounded the foot, and whisked it away.

The song continued about him. The soundwaves looked like a deadly river, strong enough to kill people.

Lin Feng's face stiffened. He swiftly took out the foot again and placed it in front of him, but it was too late, the river still passed next to him.

—

Prince Qin was chasing Lin Feng. He had also arrived, but the soundwaves pierced through his ears painfully. He pulled a long face and moved back.

A terrifying strength emerged in front of him as he grimaced. Energies swirled about him. He jumped aside, but more strength was converging on him. Prince Qin suddenly looked desperate and shouted furiously, "No!..."

The soundwaves pierced through his body. His face turned grey and then he exploded, his blood flying everywhere. Scarlet blood twinkled in the sun.

—

Lin Feng was hiding behind the foot. The scene had taken place behind him, and he had seen it all. The Chant Valley was dangerous, it was a forbidden area after all, and he was still nervous. The soundwaves were not that intense thanks to the foot, otherwise, they would have flowed far away.

Lin Feng realized how terrifying the place actually was.

At that moment, Lin Feng pulled a long face. He understood that if he strayed a bit too far, he'd end up like Prince Qi, and the

soundwaves would kill him.

In the depths of the valley, an enchained silhouette appeared. At that moment, he suddenly opened his eyes. His eyes were silver and he looked ferocious.

“Little boy!” said a voice at that moment, resonating in Lin Feng’s brain.

Lin Feng twitched. He remained silent and didn’t hear the voice again. Lin Feng asked, “Are you talking to me?”

“Indeed, little boy,” said the voice. Lin Feng realized that the soundwaves around him had suddenly weakened.

There’s really someone there!, thought Lin Feng, trying to hide his astonishment. Was it another enchained creature?

“Master, how may I help you?” asked Lin Feng.

The voice said, “Come and help me. You won’t die here. I will also offer you a Saint’s body.”

“A Saint’s body?” Lin Feng shivered. The two feet really belonged to a Saint, it seemed. Who was the enchained person then? How come there were so many terrifying creatures here?

“I already stopped the soundwaves. Come. I will do what I told you. I won’t deceive a little boy like you” said the voice. Lin Feng laughed at himself. He was already quite strong and someone had called him a little boy, but he really felt very small in front of such people.

Lin Feng took away the foot and his silhouette flickered. He flew into the depths of the valley, wondering if he was going to see a powerful ancient creature?

Chapter 2028: Dangerous Game

Ji Chang, He Can, and the others arrived outside the valley after escaping. When the music stopped, they turned around in dread.

“Lin Feng and Prince Qin must be both dead,” said Yin Gu Tian, staring at the valley.

Ji Chang said icily, “If Prince Qin is dead, good for him. However, it’d be a pity if Lin Feng was dead.”

“Ji Chang, I thought you wanted Lin Feng to die,” He Can said to Ji Chang.

“I want to kill him myself. He’s a genius, it would be a pity if he died in the valley,” said Ji Chang. He almost felt sad for Lin Feng. He hated him, but Lin Feng was famous and extremely strong. Even though Ji Chang hated and had been humiliated by Lin Feng, he admired him for his talent. He hoped to fight against him again someday. If Lin Feng had just died in the valley, then it would never come to pass!

—

At that moment, Lin Feng was traveling across the valley. Finally, he arrived in front of an enchained silhouette. His hair was messy, and his face was silver. Even though he was bound, his Qi was still unbelievable. Lin Feng had the impression he was facing a king.

Lin Feng looked around, and saw two gigantic hands and a gigantic cauldron. The only thing which protected the area was the music.

“Saint’s hands?” Lin Feng shivered and stared at the trapped man. “Master, how may I help you?”

“I’ve been waiting for so long... Little boy, you’re lucky, you’ve obtained two feet, and now you can take these two hands and the cauldron. That way, you’ll have obtained the whole body of the

Saint. For you, these items must be precious. The Saint wasn't a mere emperor. With the body of an emperor, you just deserve to be called a cultivator. A Saint's body, however, is incredible, it's the body of someone who has transcended worldliness and attained holiness," the man said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng remained silent. To this man, a emperor barely deserved the right to be called a cultivator.

A Saint's body was complete!

Lin Feng glanced at the hands and the cauldron and looked at the strong cultivator. "Does the Saint's body prevent you from doing anything?"

"Of course, it oppresses my strength. You can take it away," replied the silver-eyed cultivator.

Lin Feng understood that he was too weak to negotiate. That strong cultivator just had to exhale and he could kill Lin Feng. Besides, taking the Saint's body was a great thing for him!

Lin Feng whisked away the hands and the cauldron. The silver-eyed cultivator raised his head and took a deep breath. He looked extremely happy.

"Thank you very much, little boy. Now, things should change here," said the strong cultivator. He sounded like an ancient person. He took a deep breath and suddenly, more soundwaves condensed, and dashed to the skies.

"Come out, dear friends!" said the bound man. The soundwaves thrummed and echoed far away. The music could be heard everywhere in the area.

Many people raised their heads after hearing the soundwaves above their heads, and had the sensation they were going to collapse. How oppressive! They felt so tiny...

The terrifying soundwaves spread across hundreds of kilometers, and moved towards the hole in the sky. Golden pieces kept falling

from the sky. A strong cultivator in the golden lights opened his eyes, the orbs shining with light.

Finally, after so many years, they were recovering!

The soundwaves continued spreading. They moved into the black hole, it seemed about to collapse. The cultivator in the black hole raised his head, his eyes ice-cold.

In the emerald-green forest, the golden mountains, the ice world... the soundwaves kept spreading, and all the historical remains started shaking violently. Those who were in the historical remains were shocked. The evil spirits in the historical remains also started trembling.

Outside of the historical remains, many waiting emperors who were waiting gazed into the distance. Many geniuses had already died, how many more would die? How many people would obtain ancient treasures?

Geniuses of every generation went to the historical remains. Many of them had the impression it wasn't worth it, but at the same time, many geniuses really wanted to try because if they obtained anything, it was something incredible. If they did, it was also great for their Dynasties!

The people who were waiting outside looked calm. They knew that the geniuses wouldn't come out of the historical remains that quickly.

Explosions began to shake the air and interrupted the soundwaves. They all opened their eyes and stared at the entrances of the historical remains.

“What’s going on?”

Those just watching shivered as the thunder seemed to spread. Had a great battle started?

BOOM!

A gigantic hole appeared in the side of the mountain, and a new world appeared. The people were astonished. Had the entities the Saints sealed had just been released?

What happened?, thought the shaken watchers.

“Quick, inform the Holy Emperors and the elders!”

“Tell them to come!”

People were panicking. The creatures of the historical remains had surprisingly broken free. It meant that this world could also be connected to the outside world.

“This world has broken apart?” The Holy Spirit Dynasty received the news, people were trembling. It was the second astonishing thing that had happened in such a short time. The previous time was because of Lin Feng!

“Has it broken apart?” The Tianci Dynasty also received the news.

“My son died, the world of the historical remains has broken apart, I really want to see what’s going on inside!” said a voice in the Qin Dynasty.

Qi Tian Holy Town started bursting into motion. All the Dynasties dispatched people to the historical remains.

At that moment, in the world of the historical remains, the people there were stunned. The most surprised person in the world of the historical remains was probably Lin Feng, however. His eyes were glittering. He was staring at the strength rolling through the sky. He had never thought that taking the Saint’s body would have such consequences. He had taken a big risk!

At the broken altar, Saint Tianhun shivered. He had chased Lin Feng, Lin Feng had gone to the valley, and now something big was

happening, was that the will of Heaven?

He was grim. For him, all this wasn't a good thing. He finally had the opportunity to gain a body, and in the end he failed.

Chu Chun Qiu killed another strong cultivator at that moment, and then the ground started shaking. He sighed, knowing it wouldn't be easy to kill more people now. Otherwise, everybody would attack him. He recalled his Qi, and the sense of evil about him faded away. He knew that if he wasn't discreet, people wouldn't be nice to him. He also knew that after breaking through to the Di Qi layer, things would get easier. He had not managed to absorb a king-type body yet!

Some new people started coming into the world of the historical remains, and very quickly they bumped into geniuses who told them the news.

A strong cultivator landed on the ground and asked, "What happened? Have the Saints appeared?"

"We don't know. We haven't seen the historical remains. We only saw a skeleton, which was taken by Lin Feng. Then, we ended up in a dark hole and there was a terrifying demon within, it might have been a saint."

"Bring me to the demon in the dark hole," ordered the leader of the new group. By the time they arrived, the black hole had already exploded, turning into a gigantic crater. The terrifying demon raised his head and looked up at them icily.

Chapter 2029: Saint's Body

When the group saw the demon king's eyes, they were terrified. Who was that? They couldn't even see this cultivator's cultivation level.

“Argh...” the terrifying monster roared in a thundering rage. A gigantic black hand appeared above him.

“Let's go!” The strong cultivators shot up into the sky, lights glittered. However, grinding explosions threw back their power. The stronger cultivators made some hand seals.

“Pfew...” a loud sound emerged from the gigantic crater, and a black light surrounded the group of people.

An elder's face turned deathly pale and he waved, “Let's go!”

The group of people quickly fled.

—

In a distant place, the group of people gathered with some others, all of them pulling a long face. “What's going on? Why are those enchained cultivators so strong? They just have to exhale, and even their breath contains a terrifying strength!”

“And are there more there? Like in the books, the demon king of the dark abysses, Chant Mountain, the Death forbidden area... if those people break free, they might destroy Qi Tian Holy Town, but who are they?”

“They are not Saints. I just want to know what really happened back then, the behind-the-scenes story. And where are the Saints?”

“Where are the Saints?”

They all looked around. Were the Saints still alive?

——

The voices spread far away. The evil spirits didn't dare come out,

all rushing towards the altar. Saint Tianhun was there, his eyes gleaming.

“The Celestial Soul Dynasty doesn’t exist anymore, nobody listens to my orders,” muttered Saint Tianhun. He wasn’t as strong as in the past anymore, and his descendants had been killed. If other Dynasties knew he existed, they wouldn’t listen to his orders, they had to cooperate with one another.

Now, he needed a body, like the little boy who had tried to kill him.

He took a deep breath, the evil spirits looked scared. However, they couldn’t stop Saint Tianhun. They existed thanks to him. They absorbed people to become stronger. If Saint Tianhun absorbed them, they wouldn’t be able to resist.

Many evil spirits were drawn towards Saint Tianhun, and he started absorbing them quickly. His Qi became more and more powerful. The old man was still next to him, on his knees. He looked solemn and respectful. He was the strongest evil spirit, he had absorbed many spirits and people. His body even looked real, and his mental abilities were advanced. Even Lin Feng had thought he was a real human being. However, if Saint Tianhun wanted to absorb him, he couldn’t do anything about it, either.

More people arrived in the distance. Some people landed in front of the altar, watching Saint Tianhun as he absorbed all the spirits.

After a short time, Saint Tianhun had absorbed all the spirits except the old man. Saint Tianhun opened his eyes and looked at the people who had arrived.

“If we were in the old days, you wouldn’t dare do that, I’d slap you and you’d die,” said Saint Tianhun icily.

The Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty was astonished. “How arrogant, who are you?”

“Saint Tianhun.”

The Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty was astonished. He looked at the old man and at Saint Tianhun. Impossible!

“The Saints fell during the battle of the old days and sealed this world. How could you be a Saint? Your Qi is so weak!” said the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty icily.

“You’re a Holy Great Emperor, you know how difficult it is to kill people like you, almost impossible! But us Saints, even if we only have a drop of blood left, or a small thread of soul, a small thread of vitality and will, we can come back to life. To kill a Saint, you need to attack their soul and make it explode into a million pieces. It is almost impossible, and not all the Saints died during the war. In the end, there must always be someone left. Did you think all the Saints had died?” asked Saint Tianhun.

The Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty was stupefied. He had also had doubts about that in the past. Saint Tianhun’s explanation made sense.

“Can you prove you’re a Saint?” the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty pressed.

“Look carefully,” said Saint Tianhun. A light penetrated into the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty’s third eye. He saw the memories, and was astonished.

Some Saints were still alive! The Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty was confused. There were Saints, but they weren’t as strong as in the past.

“Get down!” shouted the Holy Emperor explosively. He had landed on a pillar, but now he jumped off it, landing on the ground and bowing before Saint Tianhun. “I’m Qin Gan from the Qin Dynasty. A pleasure to meet you, Saint Tianhun.”

“Alright,” Saint Tianhun nodded.

Qin Gan continued, “Saint Tianhun, you must feel lonely here. You are one of our ancestors, since you were a Saint of the ancient

Dynasty, please come to the Qin Dynasty if you wish.”

“Haha, you’re right, Brother Qi Gan! Qi Tian Holy Town is made of Dynasties which used to be one in the old days. Since Saint Tianhun is from the old days, he’s also an ancestor for the Great Desert Dynasty! You can come and rest in the Great Desert Dynasty if you wish. We will do all we can to help you!” said the Holy Emperor of the Great Desert Dynasty who had just arrived.

“Mo Xiao.” Qin Gan’s eyes glittered. A Saint was still alive. He wasn’t strong yet so everybody wanted to recruit him.

Saint Tianhun’s eyes twinkled and he said, “I’m badly injured. I need a body. Help me find a perfect body, a cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer. I liked one, but unfortunately he went to Chant Valley. I don’t know whether he’s alive or not,” said Saint Tianhun, he waved his hand and Lin Feng’s image appeared. Qin Gan and Mo Xiao’s eyes glittered. Lin Feng!

“I’ll dispatch people to look for him.” Qin Gan waved and people’s silhouettes flickered. They immediately left to go and search for people. The Holy Emperor of the Great Desert Dynasty didn’t want to seem weaker, he also dispatched people. They didn’t leave to search themselves, opting to stay here.

Saint Tianhun closed his eyes. He looked detached from worldly affairs. He knew why those people were staying here.

“Master, are there other Saints left alive?” asked Qin Gan.

“I’m not sure. Even if they’re not dead, even if some of them are still alive, they must be as strong as me or almost dead. Have you seen the evil spirits? They’re really strong. They sealed this world,” said Saint Tianhun calmly. The two Holy Emperors’ hearts quickened. Ancient evil spirits?

——

Lin Feng had already left Chant Valley, and was some distance away. Now and then, he saw some strong cultivators. He had taken

big risks. The passages between this world and the world outside were surprisingly open now. The soundwave strength was truly terrifying. People were astonished.

Lin Feng arrived at a mountain range. He found a cave, entered, and sat down cross-legged. He released spirit strength, which surrounded him as he entered his small world.

Lin Feng was stunned when he arrived. According to the enchained cultivator, the cauldron was the Saint's body. It had just transformed. The two feet and hands were with the cauldron there and were connected. He had obtained the whole body!

The strong cultivator hadn't fooled him. Lin Feng was standing in front of a gigantic Saint's body! The Qi around it was awe-inspiring.

"His physical body reacted on its own!" Lin Feng shivered. He had put that body in his small world, and in there, it had turned into a full and intact body. The pressure around it was dreadful. The Saints who had fallen were all incredibly strong!

Saint Tianhun is also a Saint, but his body is weaker. Maybe that Saint Tianhun died and then came back to life?, wondered Lin Feng. After all, Saint Tianhun controlled soul strength...

Lin Feng walked up to the body, so gigantic and spectacular. He uttered in a low voice, "Master, are you still conscious?"

If he had no consciousness anymore, how could he have turned into a full body? How could he oppress the peerless demon music?

"Pfew..."

The Saint sighed. Lin Feng trembled, staring at the gigantic Saint. Did the Saint still have a consciousness?

Chapter 2030: Saint's Awareness

Lin Feng looked at the gigantic body, his heart pounding. The body might still had a thread of consciousness? After all, even broken into pieces, he had still been able to nullify the soundwave strength.

“He must know a terrifying oppressive strength!” muttered Lin Feng. Even when his body was divided into several pieces, it still had an incredible power. Ancient Saints were indeed astonishingly strong. Lin Feng wondered how strong the enchained demon was. What had happened back then, during the great war?

“Master, I will put my godly awareness in your brain. If you are conscious, please don’t blame me,” whispered Lin Feng. Could the Saint hear him? Lin Feng’s godly awareness moved towards the Saint’s third eye and penetrated into his brain.

Suddenly, a terrifying strength appeared and surrounded his godly awareness. Lin Feng could only freeze. He had the impression his soul was being sucked in, and his consciousness was being oppressed. He couldn’t resist!

He really is conscious!, thought Lin Feng. His heart was pounding. A terrifying godly awareness strength rotated and turned into an illusionary body.

“Master.” Lin Feng looked at the hologram. He felt tiny.

“Pfew...” the Saint sighed again.

“I thought I’d stay in Chant Valley forever, I wouldn’t have thought someone would come and take it. Little boy, you’ve brought a disaster.”

Lin Feng shivered and said, “Master, you’re a Saint from the Qi Tian Dynasty?”

“Indeed, my name is Qin Shan. I was one of the Saints back in the days.”

Qin Dynasty, an Ancestor of the Qin Dynasty?, thought Lin Feng. He wasn't sure. He asked, "Master, what are the enchained people? You used your life to protect Chant Valley?"

"Eh... That was a disaster back then. We wouldn't have all fallen otherwise. I don't know how many of the Saints are still alive. The enchained people are extremely dangerous, that's all you need to know. Back in the days, if we hadn't been too greedy, things could have happened differently. So many things have happened. The chains have become weaker and weaker with time, and they became stronger again. They will soon all break free. The Qi Tian Dynasty will be destroyed."

"The Qi Tian Dynasty doesn't exist anymore. It has divided into many different Dynasties. Now, all the Dynasties are gathered in a city called Qi Tian Holy Town," said Lin Feng.

The Saint remained silent for a few seconds and said, "I am not surprised. We were so greedy that our descendants divided. Little boy, are there Saints in Qi Tian Holy Town nowadays?"

"In Qi Tian Holy Town, the Holy Emperors of the Dynasties are rulers. They are not Saints. I don't know whether they still have Saints, actually. But even if they do, they probably only have one or two. Otherwise, they would not have sent young people to the sealed world to look for your historical remains."

"It's a disaster. When the chains break, Qi Tian Holy Town will be destroyed," Saint Qin Shan sighed. "Where are we now?"

"We're in my spirit world," said Lin Feng honestly. He didn't need to lie. The Saint couldn't even control his own body anymore.

"Spirit world." The Saint was surprised and said, "I wouldn't have thought I wouldn't be able to control my body anymore. I only have a thread of consciousness left, and I am so weak. My consciousness will never disperse. Since you're so talented, I will give you some things. I created some Ancient Holy Techniques, they can destroy the strength of the ten thousand things of

creation. They are an ancient strength. Without a body, they can be used to create the shape of the ten thousand things of creation. I will transmit them to you, just learn what you can.”

After that, some memories penetrated into Lin Feng’s godly awareness, and he suddenly had the knowledge of the Ancient Holy Techniques in his brain. Lin Feng visualized an ancient world, it looked awesome. Nobody could resist the power of the Ancient Holy Techniques!

He also visualized an invisible and intangible strength, it was a sort of intent and a sort of force at the same time. It could be use to give a shape to things: dragons, elephants, lions, phoenixes, great rocs, cauldrons, ancient bells... as long as it was a solid shape, it worked. It could also be used to oppress people’s consciousness.

Ancient cultivators didn’t receive skills and techniques directly. They would only transmit the rudiments, Lin Feng realized. It was incredible to receive them directly from a Saint, because the inheritances were the original core versions. If they were transmitted from generation to generation, they changed over time. No wonder the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s ancestor had transmitted the images of the great war to Lin Feng. For Saints, such things were incredible treasures!

After a long time, Lin Feng opened his eyes and asked, “Master, Saints’ skill, techniques and spells formed one entity?”

“Saints have transcended worldliness and attained holiness. Saints forget everything about their past. They create their own strength, their own reality. Skills and techniques are all spells for peerless cultivators. Someday, when you become a Saint, remember to forget everything about your past.”

“Thank you very much, Master, for everything you’re teaching me. What can I do to help you come back to life?” asked Lin Feng. He was touched.

“Saints can’t be destroyed. Their bodies can’t decompose. I don’t

have a mind anymore, I only have a thread of consciousness. Unless you find a peerless medicine cultivator, I don't think I can come back to life. You're kind to think about me, though. Someday, when you reach the clouds, if Qi Tian Holy Town faces a fatal disaster, I would be happy if you could take assistive measures. Back then, the Dynasty was prosperous, but because of us, things changed. I don't want it to disappear, though."

"I will remember that," replied Lin Feng. A peerless doctor, were there such cultivators?

"Besides, if you are in danger, you can use my body, I will help you. However, there won't be many cases where you'll need my help, I would guess. Otherwise, I will disappear," the Saint sighed. Even though he only had a thread of consciousness left, he didn't want to die. He knew it would be difficult to come back to life, but he still hoped.

"If I were in danger, I wouldn't dare use your body," said Lin Feng respectfully. The Saint sighed, and his godly awareness left Lin Feng's mind.

Lin Feng opened his eyes. He looked at the body, having the impression he had just had a powerful dream.

I wouldn't have thought that this body would be so incredible, thought Lin Feng. He left his spirit and continued traveling.

With my current strength, I can't find a peerless doctor. I wonder whether the Qin Dynasty could find one or not, thought Lin Feng. He was annoyed because the Saint hoped he could have good relations with the Qin Dynasty, but the prince of the Qin Dynasty had died in Chant Valley. Ji Chang and the members of the He Clan had seen that. If they informed the Qin Dynasty of that, they would probably say that Lin Feng had killed him!

——

Lin Feng continued moving onwards. Finally, he saw other

people gathered.

Ji Chang was among them and saw Lin Feng. He was stupefied. Lin Feng hadn't died? How had he resisted the soundwaves in the valley?

The Tianci Dynasty's Holy Emperor was stupefied, landing before Lin Feng and saying, "Lin Feng, you're still alive!"

Lin Feng felt bad. But when he saw Ji Chang, he understood what was going on, he nodded and said, "I was lucky."

"Lin Feng!" said a voice icily at that moment. A few strong cultivators released a terrifying Qi and landed in front of Lin Feng.

"Holy Emperor, Lin Feng stole our Ancestor's body, our prince followed him and died tragically. I hope you can make Lin Feng give us the body back," said a strong cultivator of the Qin Dynasty, staring icily at Lin Feng.

"In the mysterious world, people hunt treasures, it's normal. Your prince died in the valley, so what? It has nothing to do with Lin Feng. Don't talk to me about that again," rebutted the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty.

Lin Feng looked at him and said, "Prince Qin couldn't take the body, I only took it afterwards. He chased me and some kind of soundwave killed him. I'm quite sorry. I can't give you the big feet, but I am willing to come to the Qin Dynasty at some point to tell you more."

Lin Feng had taken their ancestor, after all. He wanted to have good relations with them. He wanted to help the Saint come back to life too. If the Qin Dynasty could help him, he would be happy.

However, the cultivator didn't want to accept Lin Feng's apologies and said icily, "Come with me and we'll talk about it!"

"Lin Feng, don't go now. They want to steal your body!" the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty told Lin Feng hastily.

Steal his body?

“Hmph! Holy Emperor, it’s for our ancestor! You are going against our ancestor’s will?” demanded the Qin speaker icily.

“Ancestor’s will?”

“Bullshit! Saint Tianhun is not the ancestor of the Tianci Dynasty! We don’t even know whether he’s telling the truth or not!” retorted the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty. “Don’t forget that Mister Shi Jue will get furious if you steal Lin Feng’s body,” added the Tianci Holy Emperor.

They had different opinions when it came to Saint Tianhun. And if a Saint rose in one of the Dynasties, they would be able to control all the others!

Lin Feng’s eyes glittered. Saint Tianhun wanted to steal his body and some people wanted to help him... Fine, then. Qin Shan was Qin Shan, the Qin Dynasty was the Qin Dynasty. Lin Feng wouldn’t try to be nice to them anymore!

Chapter 2031: Holy Emperors Under Pressure

“Holy Emperor, whatever you say, all the Holy Emperors want to see Lin Feng. If you want to protect him, let him go and see Saint Tianhun first,” said the cultivator of the Qin Dynasty indifferently.

“Hmph! Impossible!” said the Tianci Holy Emperor, rolling up his sleeves. However, at that moment, two people landed and looked at Lin Feng. They smiled and said, “There’s a Saint here, since there’s a Saint in the historical remains and he wants to see Lin Feng, he must see him.”

“What does that have to do with you?” asked the Tianci Holy Emperor, glancing at that person icily. That person was also a Holy Emperor.

“Saints are our ancestors. We must respect our ancestors,” the other replied indifferently.

Lin Feng looked at the crowd coldly. Saint Tianhun truly was a Saint after all, otherwise these people wouldn’t have tried to cooperate with him. They wanted to give the Saint a body to make him happy and also make their dynasties strong again.

“I’ll come with you,” said Lin Feng calmly.

The Tianci Holy Emperor was stupefied and said, “Lin Feng, you can’t...”

“Don’t worry, Holy Emperor. That guy with one foot in the grave doesn’t even have a body. We’ll see what kind of Saint that is!” said Lin Feng rolling up his sleeves and flying in Saint Tianhun’s direction. The crowd there closely followed behind him, thinking how brave he was. Saint Tianhun wanted to steal his body and surprisingly, he took the initiative to go. He was truly acting recklessly!

The Holy Emperors of the Great Desert and Qin Dynasties were still there. Many other people had gathered there and were looking into the distance. “Saint, Lin Feng is here.” They smiled.

Saint Tianhun watched Lin Feng and the group of people arrive, his eyes glittering. Surprisingly, the one he wanted hadn’t died, everything was perfect. Lin Feng’s body was perfect. He was convinced that with Lin Feng’s body, he’d manage to regain the strength he had as a Saint.

After Lin Feng arrived, he stood up in the air and said to everybody, “Greetings, Holy Emperors, greetings Mister.”

“Greetings Saint, Lin Feng,” replied the Qin Holy Emperor indifferently.

“Saint?” Lin Feng looked at Saint Tianhun and smiled, “His cultivation level is so low that the Tianci Holy Emperor could destroy him in one slap, is he a Saint too?”

“Insolent!” shouted the Qin Holy Emperor furiously. He said icily, “The Saints sealed the evil spirits, he was injured because of that! Now, Saint Tianhun is interested in your body, that’s a honor for you! You can give your body to a Saint, how wonderful is that!”

“Is that so? So why don’t you cherish that opportunity and give one of your descendants’ bodies to the Saint, then?” replied Lin Feng, smiling coldly.

“Saint Tianhun likes your body, it’s an honor for you.”

An oppressive strength surrounded Lin Feng. Lin Feng laughed and said, “So if someone wants my body, they can take it if YOU wish? You think you can decide what I have to do with my life or not? You really respect the Saints?”

“Of course, the Saint sealed the evil spirits in the historical remains, they are like gods to us.”

“Is that so?” Lin Feng smiled and said, “You’re saying they’re like gods for all of you, so the Saints are like gods for the Qin Dynasty?”

“I, Qin Ji, have an enormous influence. Even if Shi Jue Lao Xian protects you, the Saints of the dynasties are more powerful, you must offer your body to the Saint!” said the Holy Emperor. He mentioned Shi Jue Lao Xian on purpose, he was really scared of him, otherwise, he wouldn’t have talked nonsense and he would have captured Lin Feng straightforwardly.

“Since it’s that way, Qin Ji, kneel down before me.” said Lin Feng rising up in the air icily. The crowd was stupefied and fixedly staring at Lin Feng. Had he gone insane?

“What are you saying?” Qin Ji was stupefied too.

“Hmph!” Lin Feng jumped forwards and Holy Spirits appeared before him. He said, “Saint Tianhun, if you’re a Saint, you should be able to recognize this spell?”

“Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill!” Saint Tianhun was stupefied. Even though Lin Feng’s Holy Spirits were weak, it was the real Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill.

“Since you know it, then fine. So, Qin Ji, you know I was on the Holy Way Stage and I managed to sit on the Holy Imperial Throne. I received the legacy of the Saint of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, and now I am the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. If you respect the Saints, then you must kneel down before me as a sign of respect for the Saint of the Holy Spirit Dynasty.”

The crowd was astonished. This guy wanted a Holy Emperor to kneel down before him?

Besides, he had received the legacy of the Holy Spirit Dynasty? The Holy Spirit Dynasty was going to protect him since he was their Holy Dynasty Prince?

“Empty words.”

“Insolent, you don’t respect elders!”

“Shut the fuck up!” shouted Lin Feng explosively. He glanced at all of them and said, “Haven’t you heard Qin Ji? The Saints are the

gods of all the dynasties. If you dare disrespect them, Qin Ji might take your children to sacrifice them.”

“Haha, Lin Feng is right! He has really received the legacy of the Holy Spirit Saint. He’s really our Holy Dynasty Prince, even Saint Tianhun recognized his spell. Since Qin Ji respects the Saints, he must respect the young master too. Kneel down as a sign of respect!” said the Holy Emperor, laughing.

Qin Ji pulled a long face and retorted, “He said he received the Saint’s legacy, but why would we believe him?”

“Qin Ji, stop talking bullshit, Lin Feng said he had received the Saint’s legacy, you saw he has the spell, and now you contradict him? Do you think people are stupid?” asked the Holy Spirit Holy Emperor, smiling coldly.

Lin Feng stepped forwards and said to the crowd icily, “Today, I’m here, is there any Holy Emperor who wants me to sacrifice my body? Come and try.”

“Indeed, and if anyone wants to, what can they do against the Holy Spirit Dynasty, Champion University, the Animal World of the Vast Celestial Ancient City, the World Clan, and Shi Jue Lao Xian?” asked the Holy Spirit Holy Emperor. Many people shivered.

The Holy Spirit Holy Emperor had told everyone about Lin Feng’s background, it was not something they could brush off!

Lin Feng grunted icily and stepped. He glanced at Saint Tianhun, his Holy Spirits rotating around him, and released his Sword intent. Saint Tianhun looked back at Lin Feng icily.

Sword lights appeared, shaking the air, and the altar and the pillars around it broke apart. The Saint was astonished and furious. Lin Feng had dared break the altar!

A terrifying soul strength filled the air. Lin Feng glanced at Saint Tianhun and said, “You want my body? You’re a nobody. You were a Saint but now you’re worthless.”

“A little boy is surprisingly humiliating me, I’ll get you, sooner or later,” replied Saint Tianhun, staring at Lin Feng ferociously. He hadn’t thought this boy would have such a terrifying background. Even Saint Emperors were scared of some of the people who supported Lin Feng.

But he couldn’t forget about Lin Feng.

“Hahahaha!” At that moment, someone laughed frantically. Energies began to build and whistle.

“You’re Saint Emperors, if you can break our chains, we’ll help you become Saints. No need to consider such a weakling as a god!” said a loud voice in the distance. It came from Chant Mountain. His voice carried powerful energies and could destroy historical remains even from very far away.

The Holy Emperors raised their heads and looked in the direction of Chant Valley. Unchain those demons? They could help become Saints?

“They’re evil, don’t listen to them. They’re all evil, if you unchain them, the city will be destroyed!” said Saint Tianhun, “Hurry up and get a body for me!”

“I’m an evil spirit? How ridiculous. Let me tell you the truth, back in the days, the Saints had started fighting because they were greedy, they wanted our help to become Saints. If you break our chains, we’ll help you!” said the voice in the distance. The crowd was stunned. However, nobody dared act. What if the spirits were too strong, and attacked them? Saint Emperors didn’t want to act recklessly and die.

Saint Tianhun was different, he had been badly injured in the ancient past. He could be useful to the dynasties.

“I have nothing to do here anymore,” said Lin Feng dismissively. His silhouette flickered, and he departed. However, as he started leaving, some people followed him closely. Those people weren’t

great emperors, and they weren't Holy Emperors either. They were geniuses who had entered the mysterious world, just like him. Since the Holy Emperors couldn't fight against Lin Feng, they could try their luck!

Lin Feng continued flying away. Two soundwaves spread out in the air behind him, Wang Jian had released his Qi, and looked like a ready sword. Lin Feng had obtained the Saint's skeleton, and a Saint's feet, they couldn't let him off so easily!

Chapter 2032: Killing a Prince

More silhouettes flickered about here and there in the air. It was a spectacular sight. The peerless cultivators who were chained didn't shout out anymore. The historical remains had been destroyed, and the passage between this place and the outside world was now open. They needed to break free from the chains, and only Saint Emperors could help them break free.

“That's Lin Feng, he obtained the Saint's skeleton, it contains a terrifying Sword intent. I wonder if it also contains the Saint's legacy.”

“We have the opportunity to come here once every hundred years, but only a few people really benefit from the experience. This time, Lin Feng obtained great things; the skeleton and the Qin Dynasty's ancestor's feet. That's why these people are chasing him. They want to steal those precious treasures from him.”

“Let's go, let's watch who will obtain them in the end.”

Many people followed after Lin Feng and the others. More and more geniuses appeared behind Lin Feng. He acted as if he hadn't seen those people behind him. He was moving neither too fast nor too slow. He didn't try to escape. That battle couldn't be avoided, he couldn't escape it. Shi Jue Lao Xian and Champion University weren't here, he had to rely on his own strength, it was the best way to survive in this world.

Lin Feng landed at the top of a mountain, stopping and turning around. He looked at all the geniuses and smiled arrogantly, “You keep following me, do you want to fight or not?”

Their eyes glittered back at him. The members of the Tianci Dynasty were here in the mysterious world, too. If they joined hands to kill Lin Feng, the Tianci Dynasty might get involved. What they wanted to do was follow Lin Feng until they found a remote place where they could kill him without being seen.

“You want the skeleton? You want the feet? If you are strong enough, come and get them. Come and fight. If anyone can kill me, you will be able to obtain everything I have. Of course, if you start a fight, be ready to die too,” said Lin Feng to them, “Who wants to fight? If you’re strong enough, come and get the skeleton.”

Lin Feng’s robe and black hair were fluttering in the wind. His eyes were dazzling. Alone, he was challenging all those geniuses.

If they killed him, they’d be able to obtain all his treasures. Of course, if they failed, they would die!

Princess Piao Xue arrived too. When she heard Lin Feng, she was shocked. This guy was really brave. He was facing many geniuses and he dared challenge them! Prince Yan was there, and she knew that he was astonishingly strong. She was also aware that he rarely showed how strong he really was. Wang Jian was there, and his weapon cultivation was incredible. Zhuo Qing had a king-type body! Apart from them, there were many other princes! Lin Feng was challenging all those people, it was incredible to see!

Princess Piao Xue knew that Lin Feng was talented; he had managed to get onto the Holy Way Stage, and he had sat on the Holy Imperial Throne, after all! But he was only a medium-level emperor, most people there were high-level emperors!

Energies as sharp as blades moved towards Lin Feng, and a strong wind started blowing. More and more strong cultivators landed in the area. Many strong cultivators from the Tianci Dynasty were there too!

“Lin Feng, you said it, if someone manages to kill you, the skeleton will be theirs!” repeated a strong cultivator icily. “The Tianci Dynasty can’t get involved.”

“The Tianci Dynasty won’t get involved, but if I kill you, I hope the members of your dynasties come and make fools of themselves,” said Lin Feng to the crowd icily.

“Can we fight with Great Imperial Weapons? It’s better to clarify things, otherwise some people might just attack by surprise.”

“Of course you can’t. You all have terrifying Great Imperial Weapons, how to fight in such conditions?” said the strong cultivators of the Tianci Dynasty supporting Lin Feng.

“Alright, no Great Imperial Weapon. We’ll see how you intend to fight against so many geniuses!”

“You will regret not having given us the skeleton earlier.”

“Come and fight instead of talking shit,” said Lin Feng disdainfully.

“Kill him and take the Saints’ things!”

“Lin Feng, I will kill you!” Someone jumped forwards. He was wearing a robe made of swallow’s feathers. His Qi was extremely powerful and filled the air, giving him an extraordinary appearance. It was easy to guess that he wasn’t an ordinary cultivator at first glance.

Lin Feng had already proven he was a good fighter, even with the strength of a medium-level emperor. Ordinary geniuses didn’t want to fight to the death against him. And now he was saying, If you want to get the Saints’ treasures, come and take them, and be ready to die.

“Mo An Ran, Prince of the Great Desert Dynasty.”

“He is extremely strong. A brushstroke, and he can carve gigantic deserts, mountains, rivers, countries. It’s a peculiar power some strong cultivators of the Great Desert Dynasty have. Some people say they walk on the Path of the Thousand Autumns.”

“If you understand Dao strength, you can create an unprecedented and unique Dao. You can study other people’s Dao and make them your own.”

“Indeed, some legendary cultivators don’t fear any Dao, either.”

“Such people are beasts and rare. It’s easy to imagine a peerless cultivator do that, but not anyone else. Peerless cultivators can break free from the Great Dao.”

Many people were chatting about cultivation on the ground. They weren’t strong enough to fight Lin Feng. Mo An Ran had already jumped over in front of Lin Feng. A white picture scroll appeared at his back, it was shining and seemed like it could contain an endless amount of strength.

Mo An Ran pointed at Lin Feng and blinding lights filled the air. He took out a brush and moved it in the wind, painting a landscape with rivers and suns. He wanted to crush Lin Feng with the landscape, a magnificent and spectacular attack.

Lin Feng’s black hair fluttered in the wind. Holy Spirits appeared in front of him and an infinity of sword intent filled the air. It was like a dozen ancient swords had appeared.

He chopped his hand, sword Qi lit up and cut apart the rivers and suns. Everything disappeared in the blink of an eye. However, Mo An Ran continued advancing, moving his brush and painting a desert and dragons which bore down on Lin Feng.

What a strange Dao, thought Lin Feng. He continued releasing Sword intent. Death strength penetrated into Mo An Ran’s brain.

Mo An Ran refused to be the weaker one, he grunted coldly and started drawing again, the landscape of the Ten Thousand Autumns. The sharp orange lights made Lin Feng’s soul shake.

“Die!” Lin Feng’s Dao intent turned into a sharp deadly sword. At the same time, one of his Holy Spirits glittered with Nine Netherworlds light, striking into Mo An Ran’s brain. He was stunned, the Nine Netherworlds gave him the impression he was going to suffocate. His soul started turning black. Lin Feng was about to take control of him!

Lin Feng’s sword lights cut through the air, and all the orange

attacks were destroyed. At the same time, Lin Feng continued releasing more Holy Spirits.

“You will die today!” Lin Feng said to Mo An Ran. Mo An Ran’s soul shook violently. It was a cursing Holy Spirit!

Mo An Ran used his brush to cut through the air. A galaxy appeared in the sky.

“You can’t escape!” shouted a Wisdom King Holy Spirit in Mo An Ran’s brain. The five Wisdom Kings kept attacking his soul. At the same time, Lin Feng cut apart the galaxy with his sword energies. An ancient path appeared and Lin Feng stepped up on it.

Mo An Ran joined his hands, made a cross with his fingers, and a dozen whirlwinds appeared and blotted out the sky, Mo An Ran in the middle of them.

What a powerful attack!, thought many people when they sensed the oppressive energies. At the same time, Lin Feng stopped, releasing more sword energies through his finger. The Holy Spirits kept humming as his energies gathered into a gigantic sword.

Lin Feng charged ahead once more. Each time he took a step, he released death strength. Mo An Ran was shaken, closing his eyes and shouting furiously. He released his Thousand Autumns Dao strength, which turned into a tornado.

At the same time, Lin Feng’s sword streaked across the sky. The gigantic sword could cut through anything. He destroyed the whirlwind attacks one after another. The crowd had the impression they were going to suffocate.

“You’re already dead!” said Lin Feng, his voice resonating in his opponent’s brain. The death sword slashed out, as a demon king jumped out and attacked Mo An Ran’s third eye. At the same time, his soul quaked. Lin Feng’s gigantic sword continued descending from the sky.

The terrifying godly awareness strength exploded. Lin Feng had

the impression his godly awareness was going to explode. His enemy had an incredible godly awareness defense! However, the sword didn't stop and continued descending from the sky. There was an explosion as he cut his enemy in two!

Chapter 2033: Understanding

Lin Feng's sword tore Mo An Ran's body apart. At the same time, the many sorts of strength exploded, and the prince turned into ashes.

The crowd trembled. This was terrifying! Lin Feng had cut apart a prince of the Great Desert Dynasty, and on top of that a prince who had been strong enough to come to the historical remains. People who could come to the historical remains were all outstanding, and Mo An Ran was no exception. He was one of the most outstanding cultivators who had come to the historical remains, but Lin Feng had still killed him!

However, two silhouettes jumped out. One was an old man was carrying a soul, Mo An Ran's soul. As Lin Feng was attacking Mo An Ran's godly awareness, his soul had been kicked out of his body, and he had managed to avoid Lin Feng's deadly sword attack.

"Hmph!" Lin Feng grunted icily and jumped forwards. His Holy Spirit thrust out, sword lights filled the air. At the same time, a death sword bombarded Mo An Ran's soul as he fled. The old man's face stiffened, and he grunted coldly. A soul punch lashed back, surrounded by desert sand.

The two silhouettes left. Lin Feng observed icily, "We just agreed that people from the Great Desert Dynasty couldn't get involved, and you didn't respect your promise in front of so many geniuses."

Mo An Ran could only snarl furiously. He had no physical body, and couldn't fight against Lin Feng anymore.

Nobody had anticipated that Lin Feng would destroy Prince Damo's physical body. If he hadn't been protected, he would have died already. Many people who were initially motivated to fight against Lin Feng started hesitating. Getting Lin Feng's treasures

wasn't so easy...

The people who weren't princes were even more vigilant. Even if they found a way to take Lin Feng's treasures, the princes wouldn't let them leave with them!

"Any other prince wants to kill Lin Feng?" asked Wang Jian at that moment. His voice sounded like his Dao, extremely sharp.

The princes looked at him furiously. Was he making fun of them?

"I want to ask, since Lin Feng challenged the crowd, and since he has received a Saint's legacy, the dynasties should fight first. If a prince can kill Lin Feng and steal the Saint's treasures, we won't continue fighting against him. If the princes stop fighting against him, we can try fighting against him," said Zhuo Qing. The others were startled. Zhuo Qing, who had a Diamond Indestructible King-type Body, also wanted to fight, but he first wanted to see if princes were going to fight against Lin Feng or not.

"That's exactly what I meant." Wang Jian was putting pressure on those princes!

Princes first. If the princes didn't want to fight, then the others would try.

"Here, apart from princes, nobody can compete with Zhuo Qing and Wang Jian. If princes don't fight, only they can kill Lin Feng. Lin Feng is in danger," mused those watching. Everybody knew how strong Lin Feng was. He had just killed the Great Desert Dynasty's prince, and had destroyed his physical body. Lin Feng was a beast. Not many people here could compete with him.

"You continue chatting. I'm waiting here," said Lin Feng glancing at the crowd scornfully. He went back to the top of the mountain and sat down cross-legged. Surprisingly, he was practicing cultivation while they dickered!

A clone appeared and Lin Feng's real body forgot about the

outside world. The determination of the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree filled the air. Many sorts of cosmic energies condensed: the strength of the ten thousand things of creation!

The determination of the Blue Uptala Lotus also filled the air. The Qi of the ten thousand things of creation rolled out. Lin Feng sensed the energies of enlightenment, and started visualizing Qin Shan's Ancient Holy Techniques.

Lin Feng forgot everything about the outside world, he just studied the holy technique. It was extremely impressive, as impressive as the Great Dao.

He was into a deep meditative state.

The Ancient Holy Techniques are Qi, force, and mind, thought Lin Feng. His blood flowed faster. It felt as if it contained an infinite amount of strength. A domineering shape appeared before him that could oppress anything. It looked like a gigantic ancient animal, but it could also look like an earthquake, it didn't have a stable shape.

Ling Tian looked at the gigantic form. A gigantic oppressive foot appeared and fell upon the ground, it couldn't shake anymore. It was incredible to watch. Nobody could forget such a technique. Without a Saint, it was almost impossible to create such a technique.

"Eh?" At that moment, the Holy Spirit Dynasty's strong cultivators looked at Lin Feng. His blood seemed to be boiling. Force rose up into the air and strength condensed. The strength of the ten thousand things of creation and the earth and sky appeared around him and penetrated into his body.

What a guy, he's meditating. What a strange man, thought the people of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. No wonder he had been onto the Holy Way Stage and Holy Imperial Throne. No wonder he even dared challenge all these geniuses!

The others also realized that something was going on with Lin Feng. They were initially stunned that Lin Feng was practicing cultivation there. Those kinds of Qi and force were extremely powerful. People could sense his strength even from far away.

There's force in that strength. He can make stones explode. An attack using such strength is dangerous!, thought the crowd. They could sense how fearsome Lin Feng's strength was.

The strongest cultivator of the Qin Dynasty frowned when he sensed Lin Feng's explosive force. It was very similar to that of the Qin Dynasty-?

Lin Feng had taken their ancestor's feet, had he obtained something else?

Prince Yan jumped forwards. Princess Piao Xue was stupefied and said, "Brother, Lin Feng is nice and the Tianci Dynasty invited him. He's our guest of honor. Other people can attack him, but you can't!"

"Saint's treasures belong to dynasties. Since Lin Feng is arrogant, I want to try too," said Prince Yan calmly while releasing soft water energy.

Five threads of water strength started flowing in the air, moving erratically. People from the Tianci Dynasty controlled water-type cosmic energies.

Prince Yan ran forwards, the sound of waves crashing filling the air. Water energies surged towards Lin Feng. However, a Holy Spirit Dynasty cultivator waved his hand, releasing strength and destroying the energies as he said, "Lin Feng is practicing cultivation. You can't disturb him."

"It's alright, I'm done." said Lin Feng's clone. He was still seated cross-legged and looked pensive. Even though his clone couldn't practice cultivation, thinking was fine. Lin Feng's clone was wondering whether the Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill could be

used to condense many Holy Spirits and then merge them into one Holy Spirit. If he could make three thousand Holy Spirits at the same time, his attacks would be truly terrifying!

The Ancient Holy Techniques weren't as complex as the Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill, which was pure. However, his goal was to carry out explosive attacks, so he had to master the skill to its highest level.

Lin Feng was wondering whether he could make the Holy Spirits evolve, too...

At the same time, Lin Feng's real body released a dreadful strength. He condensed it, and at the same time multiple Holy Spirits appeared around him. His Holy Spirits absorbed the strength of the earth and sky, and were growing stronger!

Chapter 2034: Destructive Oppression

“Be careful, he is my imperial brother,” said someone to Lin Feng telepathically. It was Princess Piao Xue, she was worried about him.

“Alright,” replied Lin Feng telepathically. He looked at Prince Yan as the Prince’s spirit suddenly appeared. He was moving gracefully, like water...

“My imperial brother’s spirit is unique, and so is his Dao. He can make them fuse together with water. It’s difficult to defeat him.” said Princess Piao Xue. At that moment, Lin Feng only saw the body of the prince moving like water. It seemed unreal, as if he were going to disperse at any time.

Lin Feng punched out, and the Holy Spirits turned into raging sharp swords. Prince Yan stepped forward, and the sharp sword quickly cut through him. His arm waved, and he suddenly fused together with his spirit. He became transparent, and his arm looked like water. When the sword pierced through his arm, there was no blood, merely a fissure appeared and flowed together again.

“Prince Yan’s strength is really mysterious. People rarely have the opportunity to see him fight. However, the geniuses never dare underestimate him, even Wang Jian doesn’t,” whispered someone.

“What a terrifying power.” When Lin Feng saw the prince’s defense, he was amazed. Princess Piao Xue had told him the truth, it really was a strange Dao. However, how could he use that kind of Dao to fight?

Cultivation strength was the strength of the thousand worlds!

Prince Yan ran towards Lin Feng. He waved his arm and a lake appeared, turning into a water pillar which descended from the

sky above Lin Feng. It looked like Lin Feng was about to drown.

Lin Feng looked at the prince icily. He condensed another Holy Spirit which struck the water pillar, breaking it into two. A powerful strength crashed onto his sharp sword and just missed him. Water strength could be that impressive?

Suddenly, the lake turned into a whirlpool and surrounded Lin Feng as it turned into ice, attempting to freeze him. At the same time, it turned into sharp ice swords which closed in on Lin Feng.

Normal swords can't break the whirlpool, however, can water cut a sharp sword?, thought Lin Feng releasing Sword intent, Qi, and force, all of which condensed into a sword. His soul, blood, and flesh all seemed to have turned into a sword. The Qi and force seemed to be condensing in, around and on his body. He didn't look like a human being anymore, he looked like a sword.

Lin Feng pierced through the water attacking him and flew out of the whirlpool, destroying everything in his way.

Prince Yan grunted icily when he saw that. His body seemed to melt. Lin Feng's sword pierced through him, however, something shattered in the air and water strength penetrated into Lin Feng's brain.

An ice-cold energy gave Lin Feng the impression his soul was going to freeze. A terrifying turbid yin strength bombarded Lin Feng's soul violently. That wasn't a real attack, it was even more terrifying than a real attack.

This is Prince Yan's real Dao?, thought Lin Feng. He had the sensation that not only was his soul going to freeze and explode, but his body too. The turbid yin attack was really painful!

"Destructive curse!" Lin Feng released cursing strength, which filled the air. The water progressively disappeared around him. A human shape appeared in front of him, resolving into Prince Yan. He kept hiding in the water and flowing through it.

Waves rushed and streamed around him. Prince Yan's water was trying to fuse together with Lin Feng's body. Lin Feng had the sensation his blood was being corroded by the turbid yin strength. It was becoming fluid and turning water.

"Prince Yan's strength is impressive!" said those watching. They had underestimated Prince Yan's power. His attacks weren't aggressive, but they were sly, which was even more terrifying.

A dragon appeared behind Lin Feng and the air began to hum. A terrifying absorbing strength filled the air, and started absorbing the water. There was draining sounds as the dragon drank up the water. Lin Feng released sharp Qi, his blood roaring with rage. His entire body turned into sword lights. He also released a terrifying cursing strength. He wanted to get rid of all the water in his body. Of course, he also released dreadful death energies.

Lin Feng expelled the water out of his body, tainting it with death strength as he did. It was already grey.

Prince Yan had been expelled out of Lin Feng's body, and Lin Feng looked at him icily. His soul still felt ice-cold because of the turbid yin strength.

Prince Yan controls water type strength. It's difficult to kill him. Maybe I could have killed Wang Jian or Zhuo Qing with my attacks, but I still haven't managed to kill Prince Yan, thought Lin Feng. If his soul, mind, and body hadn't been powerful, he might have died. Prince Yan had started corroding his body with turbid yin strength, it could have killed him.

In return, because of his particular abilities, killing him was very difficult...

"The Ancient Holy Techniques can oppress the universe, including the Great Dao. Even though I can't do that, at least, I can oppress the water a little bit," muttered Lin Feng. At that moment, he closed his eyes, and a wind started blowing, Holy Spirits appeared in front of him and turned into Sword intent.

At that moment, Lin Feng was bathing in ancient energies, and releasing endless amounts of Qi. It was like he had been separated from the outside world, and was alone in his world. The force of the earth and sky penetrated into his body. His body, and soul turned into a sharp sword.

He spat out oppressive strength. The crowd was shocked to see this. What kind of strength was Lin Feng using? What a terrifying force! They had the impression that Lin Feng was all alone in the world. He looked like a solitary, ancient sword!

He condensed his vitality Qi too. His whole body turned into a sword. Lin Feng disappeared, no longer a human being, he was a sword, and apart from being sharp, his sword was also oppressive. With that gigantic sword, he wanted to oppress the world!

The sword streaked across the sky, its terrifying strength filling the air. Prince Yan had the sensation that he was going to be crushed by that sword. His confident, unperturbed expression changed as his water began to crack and shatter. His whole body blew apart into a lake. Without a hard body, how could he resist?

The gigantic sword crashed onto the lake. It looked like a sword from ancient times. At that moment, the lake suddenly became rigid, not like a fluid anymore. It became rigid and extremely hard. The sword could oppress anything!

The lake started breaking apart, and then it disappeared.

“He even managed to oppress and destroy invisible and intangible water!” someone exclaimed. They were all astonished. That ancient sword was really domineering!

“Even though people can’t easily attack Prince Yan, the problem is that when he turns into water, his strength is spread all over, and he can’t focus on one point. Unfortunately, Lin Feng is already oppressing him too much. His spells are terrifying.”

“That’s the holy technique of the Qin Dynasty’s ancestor.” The

stronger cultivators of the Qin Dynasty were astonished. That was definitely their Ancestor's technique! The technique had evolved over time, but the technique Lin Feng used looked like the one they had read about in books. It was similar to the one they used, but still different!

“Lin Feng, you obtained our Ancestor's technique with the big feet!” shouted the strong cultivators of the Qin Dynasty. They couldn't keep calm anymore. They didn't have access to the original technique of their Ancestors, but Lin Feng had learned it!

The Holy Spirit Dynasty cultivators were startled. Lin Feng had learned the Qin Dynasty's ancient technique, they were even more responsible, all the geniuses were jealous of Lin Feng. No wonder his oppressive strength was so terrifying. Prince Yan wasn't even able to compete with him anymore!

At that moment, Prince Yan's body appeared indistinctly. He was still in the water but his silhouette was distorted. He couldn't do much though because his strength was spread all over.

“Lin Feng, stop!” shouted some senior cultivators of the Tianci Dynasty loudly. However, Lin Feng continued oppressing the water and destroyed it. At the same time, Lin Feng started condensing a new gigantic sword.

“Let's go!” Another cultivator jumped out, a strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Lin Feng was surrounded by sword energies as he followed the strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. He glanced at the crowd disdainfully. He had killed Prince Yan in front of all the geniuses!

“How insane!” Princess Piao Xue was astonished when she saw that, sighing despite herself. Lin Feng had killed her half-brother!

Chapter 2035: Fighting For The Nine Magical Characters

Wang Jian, Zhuo Qing, and the others geniuses looked desperate. They were furious at the cultivators of the Qin Dynasty. Now, the Tianci Dynasty would take care of Lin Feng, which meant they wouldn't be able to do anything anymore. They could only forget about Lin Feng's precious treasures.

They were all determined people. So when they saw they couldn't obtain Lin Feng's treasures anymore, they went back to the historical remains. The chained cultivators had already calmed down. Lin Feng had managed to find Saints' treasures, so they could probably do the same, especially since there were many Saints in the old days.

There weren't just two Saints, there were many others, and maybe that they could find other Saints' historical remains.

Not just the members of the Tianci Dynasty, other people also thought it was a pity that Prince Yan had died... but all in all, people didn't really care.

Prince Yan was extremely strong, but Lin Feng had studied an incredible ancient technique which could oppress the earth and sky. He had crushed Prince Yan alive. They wanted to find their own historical remains even more!

The Holy Emperors were still arguing over Saint Tianhun.

As all this was going on, three people arrived in an ice world. That ice world was hidden under the ground. There was a small path in a valley which leading here, Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin had found the place accidentally. After Lin Feng had been chased far away. Meng Qing, Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin had separated.

In the historical remains, Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin encountered

Chu Chun Qiu. Chu Chun Qiu had attacked Hou Qing Lin once, therefore, he didn't mind attacking him a second time. Besides, he also wanted to attack Lang Ye, who had rescued Hou Qing Lin the previous time. Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin, if they joined hands, were extremely dangerous. However, Chu Chun Qiu was sly. Chu Chun Qiu had managed to win against Ying Cheng before he had broken through to the Di Qi layer. Now, Chu Chun Qiu was one of the strongest geniuses you could find in the region.

He chased them for a while and the two cultivators accidentally ended up there. They could see a chained cultivator in the ice world.

At that moment, Lang Ye, Hou Qing Lin and Chu Chun Qiu were shivering because of the cold, and starting to freeze. They kept releasing powerful energies to protect themselves. As they ran forwards, the sensation was getting worse. It was more and more difficult to move forwards.

"Chu Chun Qiu, if you attack us again, we don't mind freezing to death here with you. We'll see if anyone is lucky enough to escape!" declared Lang Ye icily. Chu Chun Qiu glanced at Hou Qing Lin and Lang Ye aggressively and then gazed into the distance. He looked determined.

Around the three cultivators, there were many human silhouettes, however, they were all frozen corpses. Some people's eyes were still open, from the look in their eyes, one could guess that they had begged for their lives before dying.

Those people had died a hundred years before, or two hundred, or even more for some of them. Being able to come to the historical remains was a good opportunity but those people had been unlucky.

In front of them, there was a gigantic silhouette in chains. The man within looked as sharp as a sword. His eyes were terrifying. He looked at the three people mockingly. Every hundred years,

some people came and in the end they died. Even though he didn't look happy, he was actually happy to see people.

Chu Chun Qiu and the two others noticed that that person was looking at them as if they were interesting little insects, but they didn't mind. They even continued running forwards. If they were careless, that cultivator could probably kill them, but they didn't give up.

In front of the gigantic chained cultivator, there was a word carved in the snow. Each letter contained a terrifying strength. As long as those letters were there, the ice Qi of this area couldn't expand.

Even though many years had passed, the letters still contained a terrifying strength. If they managed to grab those words, they'd obtain that incredible strength.

Chu Chun Qiu and the two others struggled to move forwards when they saw those letters, they wanted them.

"Seven more steps and we'll be there." Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin were moving shoulder to shoulder. Chu Chun Qiu had made one step more than them. He had six more steps to go, but it was extremely difficult.

"A Saint carved those letters using his life. If you manage to get them, you'll obtain that spirit and marrow strength," said the chained cultivator calmly. He was trying to tempt them even more.

Many geniuses had died when only seven steps were left. The corpses around them were the proof. Sometimes, people managed to make it almost to the end, one step was left, and then they died.

Chu Chun Qiu was extremely determined. At that moment, he looked like a blinding sun. He had an aura of Will around him. The ice around him started breaking. Nothing could prevent him from doing what he wanted.

The letters contained a terrifying strength. That strength was

very useful for all of them. They really wanted it.

Chu Chun Qiu took another step, the ground crackled.

Lang Ye was releasing world lights, which absorbed the ice and kept him relatively warm at the same time. Hou Qing Lin was surrounded by reincarnation lights. His sword kept cutting through the ice around him. The three people continued walking forwards, they were drawing ever closer to the letters. Chu Chun Qiu was two steps away and stopped in the face of the terrifying pressure. Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin were four steps away from the letters. Their souls and veins seemed like they were going to freeze. If they weren't careful, they could die!

Many geniuses had missed opportunities in that world, maybe they would miss a great opportunity here...

“Lang Ye, he'll arrive before us. I will condense my full strength to open the way for you, when you obtain the incantation, protect us with your world coffin,” Hou Qing Lin said to Lang Ye.

“Isn't it too dangerous? If I obtain the incantation and something unexpected happens, it could get dangerous.”

“Sometimes, we have to take risks!”

When Lang Ye heard that, his heart twitched and he said to Hou Qing Lin telepathically, “Alright, since you want to try and gamble, let's do it!”

At that moment, Chu Chun Qiu had the Will of a king, an ancient king had appeared at his back. One more step and he'd be one step away from the incantation. The chained cultivator was amused as he looked on.

At the same time, Hou Qing Lin and Lang Ye ground their teeth and continued walking forwards. They were three steps away.

Chu Chun Qiu looked crazed and kept shouting furiously. His hair was fluttering in the wind. He really considered himself a king!

Hou Qing Lin and Lang Ye took another step forward. Hou Qing Lin released terrifying reincarnation sword energies which could absorb anything. A strong wind started blowing, and the ice around them broke apart.

Hou Qing Lin kept releasing energies to open the way for Lang Ye and make things easier for him so Lang Ye could move easier. They were catching up with Chu Chun Qiu, one more step! But Chu Chun Qiu started his last step...

“Argh!” Lang Ye shouted furiously. World lights dashed to the skies, the space around them became distorted. Chu Chun Qiu was only half a step away from the letters, and at the same time, Hou Qing Lin’s body froze and he turned into a statue.

“Die!” Chu Chun Qiu shouted furiously and released energies towards Lang Ye. However, Lang Ye released hand imprints which moved towards the letters, like he wanted to destroy everything. Crackling sounds spread in the air, the letters were drawn towards Hou Qing Lin and penetrated into him. As they did so, Chu Chun Qiu was hurled away as blood splashed.

Lang Ye moved again. Nine lights appeared around him. He walked up beside Hou Qing Lin and broke the ice around him. Then, his world coffin appeared and he took Hou Qing Lin away. If he had used the world coffin before, it would have been easier to move forwards, but getting out of the coffin right before the letters could have been extremely dangerous, the ice strength could have crashed down and killed him!

“You three are interesting,” said the chained cultivator indifferently.

Chu Chun Qiu shouted furiously, “Lang Ye, Hou Qing Lin, I will kill you!”

Lang Ye had taken the incantation even though he had almost reached it, and now he was even injured. What a humiliation! He had to absorb their wills!

Chapter 2036: Helping Each Other

Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin quickly fled the historical remains, Hou Qing Lin was still surrounded by ice energies and he was shaking violently. He had used his full strength to help Lang Ye. His body and soul had both been injured.

“How do you feel?” asked Lang Ye to Hou Qing Lin.

“I’m alright. If we had stayed there for a few more minutes, I would have died,” said Hou Qing Lin. He shivered uncontrollably.

“We succeeded though, we obtained the incantation! The spirit and marrow strength is also in my body, I’m afraid I can’t transmit it to you, though,” said Lang Ye, frowning. He could sense that the spirit and marrow strength could be transmitted by Saints to other people. He had the sensation he couldn’t pass it on, not able to copy the incantation perfectly and then paste it onto Hou Qing Lin’s memories.

“Just transmit as much as you can,” said Hou Qing Lin smiled. They had taken it, it was better than if Chu Chun Qiu had obtained it. Chu Chun Qiu was dangerous, and with the spirit and marrow strength, he would have become even stronger.

——

There were still many strong cultivators in the historical remains. Many other powerful groups from Qi Tian Holy Town had heard about what was going on, so they had hurried inside. The Saints’ world was open, why not come and benefit from it?

Lin Feng was already in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Knowing he had received the legacy of the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s Saint and the Qin Dynasty’s Saint, many people envied him.

“Holy Dynasty Prince!” said a strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty to Lin Feng, “We chose a beautiful woman for you. She is extremely beautiful, her Qi is incredible, and she is very talented.

We hope you can give her a child as soon as possible.”

Lin Feng was stunned. They really were in a hurry...

“I know that my wife is on her way to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, wait for her and we’ll talk about that,” said Lin Feng.

The man nodded, not daring to threaten anything. He said, “Alright, I can first take you to her so you can meet. Next time, you can go alone. No need for us to lead the way.”

Lin Feng remained silent. The guide wanted to do that for him so as not to be embarrassed. It would be strange to have someone lead the way to a room for you to have sex with a woman to make her pregnant...

“Alright,” Lin Feng sighed and nodded.

“Holy Dynasty Prince, please come with me,” said that old man to Lin Feng. They left together.

—

Lin Feng followed the old man and they soon arrived in a courtyard. There was a building there, but the old man didn’t enter the room. “Holy Dynasty Prince, she’s in there. She has a strange temper, however. It’s difficult to get close to her, but since she accepted, there won’t be any problem. If you agree, then...”

“You know what I mean, I don’t need to explain those things to you,” said the old man, laughing. Then, standing before the door, he said, “Princely Concubine, the Holy Dynasty Prince is here to see you.”

After that, the old man quickly left.

Lin Feng looked at the door and sighed. What kind of girl had accepted the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s request? For the girl, it was probably a nightmare.

A strange Qi emerged. Lin Feng opened that door, and slowly entered the room.

It smelled good in the room. Lin Feng slowly walked forwards, spotting the back of a woman out on a small terrace, the sun shining upon her. She didn't turn around when Lin Feng entered the room.

She looked beautiful, but was wearing a black cloak. She had voluptuous breasts, but it was difficult to see the rest of her body because of the cloak.

Lin Feng was standing there and remained silent. He didn't know what to say. What could he say, in such circumstances?

After a long time, Lin Feng sighed and said, "I know the Holy Spirit Dynasty really hopes it will happen. However, if you choose otherwise, I can ask them to pick someone else."

The girl remained silent and shook her head. Lin Feng said, "Is it because you're happy to give descendants to the dynasty?"

The woman shook her head again. Then, she said, "Being the mother of a future Holy Emperor of the Dynasty is a beautiful thing, isn't it?"

Lin Feng was speechless. She wasn't talking nonsense. Indeed, their children would maybe become Holy Emperors. How many people had such opportunities? Her voice sounded hoarse though, was it her real voice?

She also sounded a bit gentle. Lin Feng guessed that she was hiding her real voice.

Lin Feng didn't know what to say anymore, so he remained silent again.

"Now?" said the girl calmly. Lin Feng knew what she meant.

"No, I just came to see you. Not now. I'll come back to you..." said Lin Feng, then he turned around and left. The girl turned around hastily at his words. She was very beautiful actually, with particularly beautiful eyes. She was wearing a veil, however.

She had turned around quickly, but Lin Feng had already disappeared.

After a long time, she finally smiled. With the sun shining upon her, she looked stunning.

“Of course I agree. Not only because our child will be a future Holy Emperor, but because it will be yours too!” the woman said gently. Lin Feng did not hear her, however...

Lin Feng had already contacted Meng Qing using his jade talisman. She soon arrived in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. After that, Lang Ye, Hou Qing Lin, and Jian Mang also came to the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

“Are you all alright?” Lin Feng asked Lang Ye and the others.

“Yes, we were lucky, we found an incantation,” Lang Ye smiled.

Lin Feng’s eyes twinkled. He hadn’t thought Lang Ye and Hou Qing Lin would find anything!

“I don’t think it was made by a Saint, I think it comes from ancient Buddhist scriptures. I understand the incantation quite well. It’s become part of my strength. I obtained spirit and marrow strength through it. I can’t transmit the details to you, so you’d have to study it on your own.”

Lin Feng nodded, he had obtained two holy techniques, if he obtained the spirit and marrow strength, that would be even more. Spells changed over time because Saints only transmitted the rudiments of their spells, and people who received them had to be smart to understand and adapt them.

“Because of my connection to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, I can’t really transmit the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s technique to you, and besides, it wouldn’t be useful for you. It’s better for me. However, I will transmit the Ancient Holy Techniques of the Qin Dynasty to you. Even if you understand only a tiny part of them, you’ll

become much stronger, or in any case, it won't do you any harm," said Lin Feng. He didn't mind transmitting techniques, skills and spells to his friends. He had to create his own spells to transcend worldliness and attain holiness anyway. He had to surpass himself someday.

High-level and talented cultivators didn't need to waste too much time studying spells.

——

Lin Feng and the others were helping each other study, the incantation represented an extensive knowledge and profound scholarship. There were nine words:

Temporary: For determination, firm and tenacious, mudra unity, determination of ancient characters, impermanence.

Weapon: For capabilities, indestructibility, mudra unity, determination of ancient characters, ever-conquering.

Battle: For battle determination, resonance of the earth and sky, mudra unity, determination of ancient characters, destruction of the earth and sky.

Each word had a meaning and contained spirit and marrow strength.

Unfortunately, Lin Feng hadn't obtained it from a Saint. He only had the rudiments.

However, he knew that Saints' techniques were all terrifying.

"That incantation would be perfect for our Buddhist fellow disciples," Hou Qing Lin smiled.

"Indeed. Tiantai's core disciples should obtain holy techniques. That way, Tiantai will become awesome," Lin Feng nodded. When Lang Ye heard Lin Feng, he was surprised. Lin Feng wanted to create such a powerful group?

Chapter 2037: Dao Destroying Mountain

Since the Saint's World was now accessible, people in Qi Tian Holy Town couldn't keep calm. Many people from all over the Dark Night Region headed to Qi Tian Holy Town. People also quickly found out that there were chained cultivators there who were stronger than the Saints, and the news spread quickly throughout the region.

The news even spread in some other regions of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Many people wanted to steal things from Lin Feng, but he had a complex background, and he didn't come out of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. The public slowly started forgetting about him. No dynasty dared attack Lin Feng, either. Nobody could compete with Shi Jue Lao Xian watching over him. Even Champion University couldn't be offended anymore.

Lin Feng didn't come out of the Holy Spirit Dynasty for a simple reason; he was busy practicing cultivation and becoming stronger.

Lang Ye, Hou Qing Lin, and Jian Mang headed back to the Holy City. Only Lin Feng and Meng Qing stayed in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. During those days, Lin Feng continued meditating in seclusion. Even the Holy Spirit Dynasty didn't know what he was doing. Even though they really wanted him to give them a child, they didn't put pressure on him. Lin Feng was in the Holy Spirit Dynasty, which was a sign he was not going to forget his promise, anyway.

—

Lin Feng was in a peaceful and quiet courtyard, within his spirit world. His family members were all there.

“Meng Qing, don't stay with Lin Feng too much, it influences his cultivation. We can share a bedroom,” said Yue Meng He, touching

Meng Qing's tummy. She was smiling like a young woman in spite of her age. After Lin Wu Shang had left, Yue Meng He had started feeling lonely again. Lin Feng and Meng Qing were finally going to have a baby, so she was going to be able to care of a baby again, at last.

"Mother, don't forget me," Lin Feng smiled wryly. Meng Qing beamed and looked at Lin Feng and Yue Meng He. She felt extremely happy. Finally, they were going to have a baby!

"I'll take care of Meng Qing. You can stay with Feifei, and even give her a child too," said Yue Meng He, looking at Liu Fei who was standing next to her. Liu Fei went red instantly. She wasn't that talented in terms of cultivation. She was worried that if Lin Feng and she had a child, the baby wouldn't be talented enough.

"Mother, you're right. Feifei and I should also have a child," said Lin Feng putting his arm around Liu Fei's waist and smiling. Liu Fei blushed even more and put her head on his shoulder.

"In the future, our child will be the general of this small world, just like Feifei's father was the general of Xue Yue," said Lin Feng with a smile. His small world kept becoming better. Outside of Xue Yue, he had built many countries. Progressively, there were more and more interesting sites and things to see. He would also leave some historical remains at some point.

"And Yue Xin, don't forget about her," said Yue Meng He to Lin Feng.

"Yes, I know." said Lin Feng nodding.

"When do you intend to go and find Xin Ye?"

"I'm not strong enough yet. Unless Xin Ye takes the initiative to come out, I have no choice but to wait. I'll have to become stronger first," said Lin Feng. He didn't know how to explain but Xin Ye had probably gone to the Moon Palace, and the Moon Palace was a terrifying place.

“Alright, as long as you don’t forget about her. Meng Qing, Feifei, Xin Ye, and Yue Xin are all my daughters-in-law. I don’t want any of them to have a problem. Little Lin Feng, I can’t help you with cultivation though, you must continue making great efforts,” Yue Meng He told her son. She knew that she was already extremely weak compared to her son. She didn’t even know how strong he truly was.

“I know,” Lin Feng nodded. He looked at Meng Qing and smiled, “Meng Qing, be careful. I’m going to go and see Yue Xin.”

“Alright!” replied Meng Qing. She was thinking that Lin Feng was making a fuss about nothing, she wasn’t a weakling, she was strong... but of course, she was also happy that Lin Feng cared about her.

Lin Feng quickly arrived where Yue Xin was staying. She stayed there every day. The emotionlessness strength was too powerful and could burst out at any time.

“Yue Xin!” Lin Feng called out, walking up to her. Yue Xin raised her head, six months had passed, she looked wan and sallow.

“Lin Feng, I want to go to the Dao Destroying Mountain!” said Yue Xin, smiling at Lin Feng. She stood up, looking extremely beautiful and determined.

“Dao Destroying Mountain.” Lin Feng frowned. That place was an ancient site, a forbidden area for many cultivators. It was a place where it was possible to destroy one’s Dao. If a cultivator went there, their Dao had to break, it was how it got the name. Any cultivator would have been terror-stricken to go there.

“Are you sure you want to go there?” asked Lin Feng, looking at Yue Xin solemnly. He didn’t know whether there would be serious consequences.

“Yes,” said Qiu Yue Xin smiled. “I don’t want to be stuck because

of emotionlessness Dao. I don't mind becoming an ordinary person again."

Lin Feng remained silent for a while and stared at her. Then, he nodded and said, "Alright, I'll bring you there to destroy your emotionlessness Dao."

—

Lin Feng left his spirit world and flew towards the exit of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. On the way, he said to an old man, "I'm going out, I have something to do. When I come back, I'll go and see that concubine."

"No problem, go," the old man nodded. He didn't chase after Lin Feng or ask probing questions.

——

Dao Destroying Mountain was a mountain in Qi Tian Holy Town where nobody dared go. Winters were extremely cold there, and there were few people in the surroundings. Cultivators did all they could to learn how to control their Dao, why would they risk breaking their Dao? Nobody wanted to do that. But now, someone was heading there to do exactly that.

Lin Feng and Qiu Yue Xin were in the sky near the Dao Destroying Mountain. There were three connected peaks before them. If a cultivator walked them, their Dao could break.

"Lin Feng, I'm going" said Qiu Yue Xin, smiling at Lin Feng. Lin Feng, who was firmly holding her hand, let go of her reluctantly.

Qiu Yue Xin smiled brilliantly. She slowly walked forwards, letting go of him as well. She hadn't smiled that way in a very long time.

"Yue Xin, if there's any problems, come out!" said Lin Feng, worried for her. His boat was behind him, and he was staying outside the mountains.

Qiu Yue Xin's silhouette flickered. She slowly flew towards the mountain. She took a deep breath, still smiling. She stopped for a few seconds and then she continued flying towards the mountains.

At that moment, Lin Feng sensed a particular strength isolate him from Qiu Yue Xin. Qiu Yue Xin coughed up some blood. Lin Feng was shaking with pain.

Qiu Yue Xin didn't shout, she endured the pain. She was propelled into the sky and blood gushed out of her eyes and nose. Her clothes were even torn apart. It was frightening to see.

Even though she didn't shout, Lin Feng was clenching his fists so tight that his fingernails pierced through the palms of his hand and made him bleed with grief.

Having to break one's Dao was one of the worst things which could happen to a cultivator.

Qiu Yue Xin was attacked a few times. However, she stood up again. Lin Feng didn't know what was going on with her. However, at that moment, demon energies started surrounding him. He wanted to go and rescue her.

Qiu Yue Xin's eyes rolled. Blood kept dripping her. However, she was still smiling brilliantly, trying to tell Lin Feng she was fine, she didn't want him to worry about her.

People who went to the Dao Destroying Mountain and remained calm like Qiu Yue Xin were extremely rare. She had come to break her emotionlessness Dao.

She was enduring it, she was fighting against herself.

Lin Feng made a step and then stopped, demon energies crackled. The air was humming.

Qiu Yue Xin was still being attacked. Lin Feng didn't know how terrifying the strength attacking her was. Demon energies continued condensing around him, but he didn't realize it, Deva-Mara Kalpa strength glittered in the sky. Lin Feng raised his head

and saw Deva-Mara Kalpa strength descend from the sky and assault him.

He remained ice-cold, like a real demon, standing fast and completely motionless.

He slowly turned around and looked at Qiu Yue Xin again. Demon lights continued coming down and cleansing his body. He didn't frown. His woman was suffering more than him!

Qiu Yue Xin turned around, she was floating in the air, she looked powerless and weak. She felt lucky, though. Nothing could prevent her from being with Lin Feng in this world.

Lin Feng felt extremely sad for her. He ran forwards. He wanted to jump into the Dao Destroying Mountain, but at that moment, the mysterious strength filled the air, but in a different way. Lin Feng was startled. The strength penetrated into her body again and suddenly, her face was filled with vitality and vigor once again.

Lin Feng gaped. Qiu Yue Xin was shocked, too. Dao strength emerged from her body and filled the air about her.

Emotionlessness was about emotions. If emotionlessness was destroyed, it was to have more emotions!

Chapter 2038: Strange Story

When Qiu Yue Xin came out of the Dao Destroying Mountain, she looked serene. She looked like a caring and loving woman, as if her heart had been filled with love. She was smiling resplendently and looked extremely beautiful.

Lin Feng's demonic intent disappeared. He walked forwards and hugged Qiu Yue Xin. He felt relieved and took a deep breath, thinking, Good, good!...

Qiu Yue Xin felt Lin Feng's warmth, and put her head on his shoulder. She had no emotionlessness strength anymore. Her heart was filled with love.

“So if you don't believe the Dao Destroying Mountain can destroy your Dao, then your Dao must break. But if you come here with the purpose of breaking your Dao, then it destroys it and then helps you,” whispered Qiu Yue Xin. Lin Feng smiled. The Dao Destroying Mountain was an ancient mountain. It could destroy Dao, but its main purpose wasn't to destroy Dao, it was to allow cultivators to start a new life, on a new path. It allowed people to find their true path!

“Let's go back,” said Lin Feng. He was very happy. Qiu Yue Xin had broken her emotionlessness Dao and now she had emotions again. In the meantime, Lin Feng had just become a high-level emperor. He was in a very good mood!

Qiu Yue Xin was back, she was really back!

The two jumped onto the boat and sat down cross-legged. Qiu Yue Xin looked happy and at peace. She enjoyed the landscapes sweeping by underneath them. She wanted to travel across the world with him like that.

Lin Feng went back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. He took Qiu Yue

Xin to Xue Yue into his spirit world, and she spent some days with his family. Lin Feng took care of Meng Qing, Qiu Yue Xin, and Liu Fei, spending some pleasant days with them.

However, at that moment, a beautiful yet ice-cold woman was traveling to Qi Tian Holy Town. She was radiating a powerful Qi...

It was rainy and windy in Qi Tian Holy Town. There were great battles everywhere. Strong cultivators kept falling from the sky. Even great emperors were dying. The passage between the historical remains and the city was open so many strong cultivators had come, and real historical remains had also appeared. All this had nothing to do with Lin Feng anymore, though. He had obtained enough from the Saints, even the incantation. Even though it didn't have the spirit and marrow strength, he could use the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures on the incantation, it would help him understand it and make it stronger.

Lin Feng was very smart. He knew what he had to do become stronger, he also knew he needed to rest sometimes. Spending days resting wasn't a waste for his cultivation, as he never forgot about cultivation anyway.

Lin Feng was now a high-level emperor, and his Deva-Mara body had been cleansed once more. No emperor could resist his punches, his physical body had become so scary. If he punched an ordinary high-level emperor, he could crush him in a flash.

There were three other people with him in the demon pond whose cultivation levels were higher than his, they were at the very top of the high Huang Qi layer. They were the ones who, with Ji Jiang, had chased Lin Feng back after Pathfinder Day. Lin Feng was doing his best to raise those people and make them into perfect Demon Puppets. He taught them the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, he cleansed their bodies, he taught them Saints' spells,

he taught them everything he knew.

Even though Ji Jiang wasn't as famous as Ji Chang in the Ji Clan, he was still a genius of the Huang Qi layer, or he wouldn't have chased after Lin Feng to kill him. Lin Feng was convinced that with the education he provided them and their high cultivation level, even if they weren't as good as he was at fighting, they would still be great fighters, especially with the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures which could increase their talent. With time, they'd stand out more and more.

Lin Feng left his spirit's world and went back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Half a year had passed. Meng Qing's tummy was getting bigger and bigger. Lin Feng didn't feel like fighting these days, because he wanted to be there for his child's birth. He had a strange feeling; he was going to become a father, he was nervous and excited at the same time.

"Is there anything wrong?" Lin Feng asked someone who was waiting outside of his courtyard. A person from the Holy Spirit Dynasty was there.

"Holy Dynasty Prince!" When that person heard Lin Feng, his eyes twinkled. Lin Feng came out of his courtyard and looked at the strong cultivator who told him, "Holy Dynasty Prince, so much time has passed, shouldn't you..."

Lin Feng perfectly understood. Even though the Holy Spirit Dynasty liked him for his talent and they had also proclaimed him Holy Dynasty Prince, in the end, he wasn't a member of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he didn't have their blood. For them, his descendent was the important thing.

"Alright, don't worry," sighed Lin Feng, nodding. He had to do it.

"Since you say that, I'm off," replied that person respectfully, and then left. Lin Feng took a deep breath, he had no way to avoid

this. He had to do it. It was too strange for him.

If he transmitted his blood to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, what would be his relationship to them? He would become a member of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. He would be the Holy Dynasty Prince and people would think highly of him in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. They would attach importance to him. He might become a Holy Emperor then, or his children would.

—

The moon was shining upon the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Lin Feng appeared in a peaceful courtyard. He didn't hide.

Lin Feng opened the door, there was a curtain behind it and a silhouette within. "You're here."

"Yes, I am here," Lin Feng replied softly.

"Wait for me." Lin Feng saw a blurry silhouette behind the curtain changing her clothes. When she was done, she laid down on the bed and said gently, "Alright, come in."

Lin Feng entered the room. He could see her red underwear in the moonlight. He was able to see her breasts, but she was wearing a veil on her face. She didn't want Lin Feng to see her face...

Lin Feng stood there, he didn't know what to do. He was embarrassed. He shyly walked forwards. Even though she looked very attractive, Lin Feng wasn't really very aroused.

"I'm ready. I don't have any..." said the voice. She was shy too. Finally, she had managed to turn Lin Feng on. He walked up to her, laid down on the bed, and touched her breasts. Her skin was very soft...

Lin Feng touched her everywhere. She was laying on her belly. Lin Feng tried to turn her around, but she whispered, "Don't, it's alright like that."

"From behind?" Lin Feng was startled.

The woman had already bitten her lips to bleed.

“Alright...” Lin Feng was speechless. The Holy Spirit Dynasty’s people hadn’t deceived him, she was really beautiful and it was her first time. He felt even more guilty...

—

After that, Lin Feng came back to her on the two following evenings. Each time it was strange. After all, Lin Feng wasn’t sure he could get her pregnant the first time, therefore, three nights... that way, it could only work.

After the third night, they didn’t need to meet again. What a strange feeling. Lin Feng felt sad. On the third night, Lin Feng also realized that the woman felt nervous, she wasn’t scared, she also didn’t seem to hate it, especially the last two nights, she had loved it. But she was acting strange.

Lin Feng didn’t understand why she didn’t want him to see her face. Was she shy? But she had to meet him someday if she gave birth to their child...

After a few days, the news spread that a princess of the Holy Spirit Dynasty had become pregnant. The Holy Spirit Dynasty’s people were astonished. Many princesses of the dynasty were furious.

When a princess had a man and a child, their child could become Holy Emperors or Empresses.

Lin Feng could only feel strange about all of it.

Chapter 2039: Undercurrent

Elsewhere on the continent, there was a country dominated by snow. It was as beautiful as a painting.

There were many beautiful plants there, deep-rooted in the snow, and very old.

In front of the snowy tree there was an altar with many lotuses, all emitting pale lights.

Three lotuses were especially dazzling, especially the one in the middle. A Celestial Qi emerged from it.

The lotuses were extremely beautiful, even the third one, even if it wasn't as beautiful as the two others. Besides, the strangest thing was that there was a lotus blossom inside the lotus. It was black and a powerful Qi emerged from it and filled the air.

“Very good!” A very old woman in front of the altar was holding a scepter. When she put it on the ground, the whole country trembled. People were wondering who had made her angry.

Next to her were many other old people. They all looked solemn and respectful, and they were all staring at the strange lotus.

That country was the mysterious Snow Clan.

“These hundred years have been among the best in the world. We've become much stronger. We have five geniuses. Two kings, one queen, they come from different tribes of the Snow Clan. Only one of them belongs to my direct bloodline, I order the three of them to practice different types of cultivation, one must focus on cultivation, one must focus on society, one must live in seclusion.

“However, because of what happened back then, someone captured Ling Long and took her away. I asked the shrine, they said she'd have an incredible fate. I agreed to let her grow up outside without disturbing her. I said when she becomes a great emperor, she must come back to the clan and get married with a

king, but now she's the weakest one and she is pregnant. I trusted the shrine too much," the grandmother spoke calmly. Everybody was surprised. One of their most important descendants had become pregnant. The blood of the Snow Clan was going to be mixed?

When the people outside heard that, the grandmother sounded calm and serene, but the crowd knew she was truly furious. Back then, she was convinced that Ling Long would come back at some point to get married to a king from the Snow Clan. But now, the blood of their precious clan had been mixed with that of a foreigner. It was a nightmare for them.

And surprisingly, the Destiny Shrine had made a mistake, Ling Long was the weakest of the three monarchs of their clan, she was growing more slowly than the two others. She wasn't interested in cultivation that much and she was pregnant from an outsider. How could she have the life of a queen? She had soiled the blood of the clan!

"Go and check, where is she?" said the grandmother at that moment.

"Grandmother," said an old man next to her, "Xue Shen Feng is practicing in the Dark Night Region, in the Holy City. He's in Champion University. He noticed a member of the Snow Clan in Champion University in the Holy City. She has a celestial Qi, but she has become the wife of another student."

The grandmother was furious and ice-cold lights glittered in her eyes.

"Go and check. Take Ao out to practice and bring her back," whispered the grandmother. Everybody nodded. Xue Ling Long had appeared outside, she was pregnant, and now they had to take her back.

In the Ancient Jade Dynasty, a special guest had arrived. The Holy Jade Princess was welcoming her, as she was from the Moon Palace.

Empress Xi looked at everyone icily, including Yi Ren Lei and said, "Where's Lin Feng?"

"After having left the historical remains, Lin Feng left with people from the Holy Spirit Dynasty. After that, he didn't show up again. We don't know where he is," replied one of the women.

"He's still in the Holy Spirit Dynasty," said the Holy Jade Princess, smiling evilly, "He's in the Holy Spirit Dynasty and has received the legacy of the Ancestors. The Holy Spirit Dynasty made him reproduce with an outstanding woman of their dynasty. Lin Feng is already the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. His children will become Holy Emperors of the Holy Spirit Dynasty."

Empress Xi looked furious. That bastard!

But now that Lin Feng had a special status in the Holy Spirit Dynasty, they couldn't do much, they could only wait. A dynasty was far more terrifying than an Ancient Holy Clan.

"Thank you for the pieces of information. If Lin Feng comes out, please inform me," Empress Xi asked the Holy Jade Princess. The Ancient Jade Dynasty had power, too. If they watched someone, that person couldn't escape from them.

"Empress Xi, don't worry, I will," replied the Holy Jade Princess, smiling thinly.

.....

In the Tianci Dynasty, in one of their main halls...

People had gathered, looking both solemn and respectful, as they were under great pressure.

"Has Chen recovered?" asked the one who occupied a leader

position in the room.

“He’s okay. He will completely recover at some point,” replied people who were seated lower than him.

The Tianci Celestial Emperor looked furious and said, “Among our best people, Yan was killed by Lin Feng and Chen had problems. Damn!”

“And that little insolent bastard,” said someone, looking at Piao Xue icily.

“Yan was incompetent. It has nothing to do with Piao Xue,” said someone else coldly. “Do you have news from Lin Feng?”

“He’s still in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. He hasn’t come out,” said someone else.

“Watch him!” said another Celestial Emperor icily. Piao Xue was stupefied, she wanted to speak up for him, but in the end she gave up. She wanted to explain that her imperial brothers had bullied Lin Feng, but there was no point.

“Yes, Your Majesty!” replied someone.

.....

Lin Feng didn’t know what was going on in the Snow Clan, of course. He didn’t know that many people were watching him either. Lin Feng spent some peaceful days. However, he was also vigilant. Meng Qing’s tummy was getting bigger and bigger. He knew it was a boy, as cultivators could sense whether their future child would be a boy or a girl.

“Lin Feng, have you thought of a name?” asked Meng Qing. They were in his spirit world. Meng Qing and Lin Feng were seated on a Blue Uptala Lotus. It was a very romantic scene.

“Lin Zhe Tian, what do you think about it?” asked Lin Feng to Meng Qing.

“Lin Zhe Tian!” whispered Meng Qing. She smiled gently and

said, “If you like it, I like it too.”

“So, it’ll be Lin Zhe Tian.” said Lin Feng raising his head and looking at the sky. He whispered, “Our child will become extremely strong. Someday, he’ll be able to destroy the skies with one finger.”

Meng Qing laughed gently and snuggled into Lin Feng’s arms. She whispered, “What about the child you gave to the Holy Spirit Dynasty?”

“They will choose the name themselves,” said Lin Feng smiling.

—

Outside of his world, the Holy Spirit Dynasty had come to Lin Feng, but Lin Feng had left a clone outside, he didn’t need to go out.

“Holy Dynasty Prince!” said an old man, bowing before Lin Feng respectfully.

“What is it?” asked Lin Feng calmly.

“Holy Dynasty Prince, Qi Tian Holy Town is changing quickly. There are many strong cultivators here and we’re under pressure. Many people are watching you. Don’t go out unless it’s necessary,” the old man said to Lin Feng. Lin Feng was startled, many people were watching him?

“Back then during the battle, elders from other dynasties were there, would they dare attack me?” said Lin Feng.

“They won’t dare attack you, of course. You’re the Holy Dynasty Prince. However, the situation in Qi Tian Holy Town is chaotic these days and complex. If someone dares attack you, they won’t let you know who they are, therefore, please tell us if you want to go out,” said the old man.

Lin Feng nodded agreeably. He hadn’t been out for a while and things had changed a lot in Qi Tian Holy Town. “I understand.”

Before his child's birth, he was going to stay in and rest!

Chapter 2040: Xue Ao

Time passed. Lin Feng kept growing stronger. He had already been cleansed twice by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, and his Deva-Mara body had also been cleansed twice. His physical strength had already reached the top of the Huang Qi layer. At that moment, Lin Feng could really sense how powerful the indestructible Deva-Mara body was. After having his Deva-Mara body cleansed three more times and after being cleansed three more times by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, he would have no enemies anymore at the level of the Huang Qi layer.

Lin Feng was wondering whether, if he continued on this path, if he would have the physical strength of a great emperor. That way, he would be sure to have no problems at all!

Something else made Lin Feng speechless those days. Meng Qing had been pregnant for a year and their baby hadn't been born yet. Lin Feng had always said he wanted his first child with Meng Qing, but now the plan was probably ruined. Meng Qing didn't mind, though. Even though she had turned into a human being, she was actually Xue Ling Long, so that probably explained why Lin Zhe Tian hadn't been born yet.

Lin Feng arrived in the concubine's courtyard, the beautiful woman was holding a baby, she looked calm and serene. When she heard Lin Feng, she quickly turned away. Lin Feng was speechless, "You really don't want me to see your face?"

"You came to see the child? I called him Lin Qiong Sheng, he will definitely be very talented. When he's two, nature pills, come and hug him," said the girl in a hoarse voice. She stretched her arms left, but didn't turn around.

"Alright." Even though Lin Feng didn't understand why she didn't want him to see her face and the three nights had been

really strange, he respected her. He walked to her and grabbed the child. He had beautiful eyes. Lin Feng recognized some of his facial features, he couldn't help but smile, "I'm your daddy. In the future, Lin Qiong Sheng, take care of your mummy."

The little boy looked at Lin Feng, his eyes twinkling. Lin Feng felt so happy. He gave back Lin Qiong Sheng to his mother and smiled. "If you need anything, contact me."

"Alright," the woman nodded. Lin Feng walked away and left. After he left, the beautiful woman turned around and said, "Lin Qiong Sheng, do you know why I gave you that name? Because it's your mother and father's story. You're the hope of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Unfortunately, you will never be like your father because your mother will never be able to leave the Holy Spirit Dynasty. I understand your father. I will do my best to protect him."

(Translator's note: Lin like Lin Feng, Qiong in this case means Jade, and Sheng means holy.)

"Pfew..." The woman heard someone sigh. The woman was startled and her expression changed. She looked solemn and respectful. She also felt pressured and said indifferently, "Come in."

A silhouette entered. Lin Feng would have been surprised if he had been there, because it was the Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

"You've known each other for a while, why didn't you want him to see you?" asked the Holy Emperor.

"It's none of your business," said the woman indifferently.

"You're worried about the agreement with the Holy Mother? She's used the strength of the altar to give you all she could. She hopes you can become a protector of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. You promised her, so you can't leave. So even if you show Lin Feng your face, what's the problem? Even if he can't stay here, he would

come to see you quite often, wouldn't it be great?"

"What if he wants to take me away?" replied the girl. The Holy Emperor was surprised. "I don't think I could refuse," said the woman, smiling gently. If Lin Feng wanted to take her away, would she refuse? If she left, what would she do? What about the strength of the sacrificial altar? She had two choices, no matter what, it would be painful. If Lin Feng knew, he'd be sad and tormented. She didn't want two people to suffer, one was enough. And she could stay with their child and raise him.

"Wait until Qiong Sheng is a grown up and has received the legacy of the Holy Dynasty Prince, then you'll be able to go with him," said the Holy Emperor in a low voice, before he turned around and left. Back in the days, the Holy Spirit Dynasty had a Holy Mother, however, she hadn't managed to reach a certain level, she had made a cultivation mistake and had been severely injured. Therefore, she had decided to sacrifice herself and give this woman everything she had. Even though she wasn't a member of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, she had their blood.

"Qiong Sheng, hurry up and grow up," said the woman, kissing the baby with much love.

A group of people arrived at the Tianci Dynasty, wearing snow-white robes. They all had an extraordinary Qi, especially the leader of the group. He looked ice-cold, and his Qi was bestial. People had the distinct impression he was aggressive and violent, and kept their distance from him.

"Who are you and what are you doing here in the Tianci Dynasty?" asked a guard at that moment. However, when the guards sensed the young man's Qi, they shivered, as these people were extraordinary.

"We came to see your Holy Emperor!" said the young man icily, and then continued flying forwards.

“Your Excellency, if you want to see our Holy Emperor, just wait and we’ll inform them,” said the guards.

The arrogant young man suddenly released a terrifyingly cold Qi, shouting furiously, “Insolent!”

He stopped and released even more Qi. With a glance at the crowd, he waved his hands and two beasts appeared, while the air started freezing.

The beasts roared in a deadly rage. The two guards could only look desperate and scream as the two snow beasts devoured them.

The young man shook his sleeves as if nothing had happened and continued striding forwards. At the same time, he shouted furiously, “Holy Emperor, come out and see me!”

“Who dares act that insolently in the Tianci Dynasty?” many voices shouted back icily. Great imperial Qi filled the air. A great emperor arrived and saw Xue Ao. However, Xue Ao merely grunted icily and the air started freezing again. He stretched out his hands and a snowy path appeared, moving straight towards the great emperor.

“Piss off!” shouted the great emperor. A snow spear appeared and shot towards Xue Ao. At the same time, a domain filling the air Dao strength appeared.

“Argh!” Explosions sounded, a snow-filled territory appeared behind the snow young man. The sky seemed to be bearing down, as if millions of mammoths were falling from the sky, and the air creaked and groaned. The incoming spear broke apart. At the same time, Xue Ao continued moving forwards and raised his hands, aiming at the man’s head.

The great emperor pulled a long face. He moved like water, trying to dodge.

“Explode!” shouted the young man furiously. The beasts roared furiously as the air kept exploding. The great emperor dodged

away, but his body kept breaking apart. He gave shrieked horribly, even as Xue Ao grabbed his head and blew it apart. He considered everybody and everything beneath his notice.

Many more cultivators arrived very quickly. Great imperial Qi rose up in the air. Many great emperors appeared before the young man, but when they saw him, his clothes, and the people behind him, their expressions changed slightly. The leader stopped, prevented the others from attacking, and asked politely, “You’re from the Snow Clan, Your Excellency?”

“Snow Clan, Xue Ao,” declared the young man icily. The crowd from the Tianci Dynasty were astonished. The Snow Clan... this young man was terrifyingly strong. The great emperors of the Tianci Dynasty couldn’t compete with him!

“What is the Snow Clan doing here? And why attack our people?”

“We’ve heard that Lin Feng from the Holy City had spent some time here, where is he?” Xue Ao asked icily.

“Lin Feng?” The Tianci were stunned. The Tainci leader said, “We invited Lin Feng to come here, but right now he’s in the Holy Spirit Dynasty.”

“I don’t care where he is. Within three days, go and see him, and make him come here!” said Xue Ao, furiously releasing explosive Qi.

The cultivators behind him remained silent, as Xue Ao was terrifying. The two kings of the Snow Clan were completely different; Xue Ao was violent, brutal and aggressive. He angered easily!

Chapter 2041: Two Taoist Priests

The Tianci cultivators all grimaced, but they couldn't do much against the aggressive prince of the Snow Clan. The strong cultivators who were behind him hadn't even got involved, either.

The young men of the Snow Clan had come to the Tianci Dynasty and dared attack their people. If it had been anyone else, the Tianci Dynasty would have killed them already, but the Snow Clan was a powerful and mysterious clan, and the Tianci Dynasty couldn't afford to offend them. Therefore, even though they were furious, they didn't say anything. The Snow Clan cultivators had come for Lin Feng, but unfortunately, they had come to the Tianci Dynasty to find him!

"We will dispatch people to find him and make him come. Please, you are guests here. Kindly do not cause trouble here," said the old man of the Tianci's group. He was furious but didn't show it. He could only deal with them pragmatically. They were the weaker force here; the Snow Clan was stronger than they were.

The atmosphere calmed down. The Tianci cultivators were furious, but they remained silent. The Snow Clan cultivators, especially great emperors, were terrifying.

——

Lin Feng didn't know that the Snow Clan had come to Qi Tian Holy Town to find him, but the Holy Spirit Dynasty already knew about it. When the Tianci cultivators came to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, the Holy Spirit cultivators could only welcome them.

"I'm going straight to the point, a member of the Snow Clan who has a king-type body has come to the Tianci Dynasty and he's looking for Lin Feng," the Tianci cultivator informed them.

The strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty flung his sleeves and said, "If people want to harm Lin Feng, we won't let him go."

“Lin Feng is the Holy Dynasty Prince of the Holy Spirit Dynasty now, so I understand you want to protect him. Nonetheless, Lin Feng must go this time, otherwise, the Snow Clan cultivators will be furious and will come to the Holy Spirit Dynasty.” said the Tianci cultivator icily. The Snow Clan cultivators seemed insane, if one cultivator dared cause trouble and attack people in the Tianci Dynasty, what else might he do? And could the Holy Spirit Dynasty deal with him?

“No need to talk that much anyway. They said that you have three days to deliver Lin Feng. I’m off,” said the Tianci cultivator icily. Then, he flung his sleeves and left. The strong cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty flung their sleeves, all of them pulling long faces. If it had been anyone else, the Holy Spirit Dynasty could have done something; any other Dynasty, or any other Clan. But this time, it was the Snow Clan, and the Snow Clan didn’t fear Shi Jue Lao Xian.

At that moment, a silhouette appeared, and everybody raised their heads. “Holy Emperor!”

“Alright,” said the Holy Emperor, waving to acknowledge everyone.

Everybody sat down, one person speaking up, “Holy Emperor, the Snow Clan has come to cause trouble. They want to find Lin Feng, but Lin Feng is meditating in seclusion and practicing cultivation. If we don’t tell them anything, they won’t know what he’s doing and where he is. What should we do?”

“The Snow Clan.” The Holy Emperor was stupefied. Why was the Snow Clan looking for Lin Feng? If the problem was too important, things could get serious for the Holy Spirit Dynasty, and they wouldn’t be able to keep the situation under control.

“I’m going to find Lin Feng and then I’ll decide what to do,” said the Holy Emperor calmly, before proceeding to leave. He had to understand what the Snow Clan wanted from Lin Feng first.

The Holy Emperor left and went to find Lin Feng. When Lin Feng saw the Holy Emperor, he was surprised.

“Lin Feng, I need to ask you something.”

“There is no harm in saying what one thinks, Holy Emperor,” said Lin Feng agreeably.

“Are there tensions between you and the Snow Clan?” asked the Holy Emperor. Lin Feng was startled. The Holy Emperor had come personally to ask him that, there was something going on obviously.

“Master, have the Snow Clan come to Qi Tian Holy Town?” asked Lin Feng, without answering the question. The Holy Emperor realized it was a serious problem.

“Some cultivators from the Snow Clan have arrived at the Tianci Dynasty. They said that they wanted to see you within three days, and some people from the Tianci Dynasty just came to us,” the Holy Emperor informed him calmly. However, Lin Feng sensed that he was feeling nervous.

“How many strong cultivators?” asked Lin Feng.

“One of them has a king-type body. Some old men and younger ones also followed him,” said the Holy Emperor.

Lin Feng understood that they had come for Meng Qing, and felt the pressure. The Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty had come personally, it meant that the Snow Clan was extremely powerful. It was difficult to imagine.

“If there is a big problem, the Holy Spirit Dynasty is willing to bear the pressure for you,” said the Holy Emperor. Lin Feng looked at him deeply. He was trying to understand if he really meant it or not.

If the Holy Spirit Dynasty really dared protect him, the Holy

Emperor wouldn't have come personally.

Of course, Lin Feng couldn't blame them. Even though he had an unusual position within the Holy Spirit Dynasty, if the tensions between him and the Snow Clan were too serious, how could the Holy Spirit Dynasty bear the pressure for him? They couldn't afford to offend the Snow Clan, otherwise the consequences would be too serious.

When the Holy Emperor saw Lin Feng's expression, he made up his mind, he turning around and leaving. At the same time, he said, "Lin Feng, I will organize a banquet for the Snow Clan's cultivators. Even if they are strong enough, they probably won't dare attack you in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. At least, we'll do our best to make them keep calm and if you put pressure on them, then that's the best."

"Thank you very much, Holy Emperor," Lin Feng replied gratefully. He watched the Holy Emperor leave. If the Snow Clan's cultivators had come to kidnap him, they wouldn't have sent people of the same age, they would have immediately oppressed him and the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Lin Feng was already grateful. The Snow Clan was probably stronger than most Imperial Clans and Ancient Holy Clans, and Meng Qing was probably a holy maiden from the Snow Clan.

The feast day was set. The Holy Spirit Dynasty would receive the cultivators of the Snow Clan as well as the geniuses of Qi Tian Holy Town. Of course, some outsiders who had come for the historical remains would also attend.

When the news spread, the members of the Tianci Dynasty looked happy, gloating over the Holy Spirit Dynasty's misfortune. The Holy Spirit Dynasty was protecting Lin Feng, and had invited so many geniuses, doubtless they were trying to put pressure on the Snow Clan.

After the news spread, there were no ill consequences, which surprised the Tianci Dynasty.

People hadn't heard anything about Lin Feng for nearly a year. Some people were surprised that he was even in the Holy Spirit Dynasty, and now the Dynasty was even inviting the Snow Clan? The gossips couldn't wait to see what was going to happen!

In the Saint's World, Wang Jian was seated on a mountain, his aura sharp and ready. He hadn't left the historical remains, the members of his clan had also joined him to hunt for treasures in the historical remains. However, they hadn't obtained much. Back then, they had wanted to steal Lin Feng's treasures, but then he had surprised them by killing Prince Yan.

On a flatland of the Saint's World, Chu Chun Qiu looked in the direction of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. During this past year, he had become much stronger. His eyes glittered with subdued fury. He looked like a real king.

Chu Chun Qiu wasn't interested in the historical remains as much as those searching for them. Apart from treasures, he was especially interested in people's lives and souls.

At the same time, white clouds rolled in waves up in the sky. There were many people gathered on a white cloud. At the forefront were two people, both strangely dressed. There was a Taoist priest, posing as person of high morals, and next to him, there was a little Taoist priest.

"Good heavens, I haven't seen that little boy for so many years, and he's causing trouble again," said the Taoist priest, who had the demeanor of a transcendent being.

"Teacher, that's Lin Feng," said the young Taoist priest next to

him, smiling. He looked a bit afraid of his teacher.

“Yes, back then, Lin Feng was an ordinary cultivator, but then I became his teacher, I taught him a lot, he became that way thanks to me. That’s why he’s famous in Qi Tian Holy Town. If he hadn’t left me, he would have become even stronger. He’s not like you though, he could kill you with one finger. You’re a disgrace. But you’re lucky to have found me. Thanks to me, you will definitely become a terrifying cultivator,” said the Taoist priest solemnly. The little Taoist priest next to him winced.

Lin Feng used to be an ordinary cultivator? Back then, the Diviner had said he would become a terrifying cultivator if he didn’t die and wanted to recruit him. Now the Taoist priest was saying that Lin Feng had become so strong thanks to him?

Of course, the disciple was not going to say anything out loud, and the Taoist priest was extremely strong, that was undeniable.

“So you think that if I stay with you, I’ll become even stronger than Lin Feng, teacher?” asked the little Taoist priest calmly.

“Not necessarily. You met me a bit too late, maybe. You could, but Lin Feng met me when he was very young. Of course, you have already become a medium-level emperor thanks to me. If you hadn’t met me, you would not have become a medium-level emperor so quickly,” replied the Taoist priest.

The little Taoist priest sighed and asked, “Where are we going, teacher?”

“We’re going to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Lin Feng is my disciple. Even though he’s a bit famous, he’s still very young and he has offended the Snow Clan. I must intervene!” said the Taoist priest.

The little Taoist priest had cold sweats and exclaimed, “You’re really strong, teacher!”

“Yes!” said the Taoist priest proudly. They were en route for the Holy Spirit Dynasty!

Chapter 2042: Before the Storm

Lin Feng was in his spirit world, seated in front of Qin Shan. He released soul strength and put it into Qin Shan.

“Master, I’m sorry for disturbing you,” said Lin Feng. Qin Shan’s consciousness condensed.

“Do you need help?” asked Qin Shan.

“Yes, Master, I need your help. I might be in trouble soon, otherwise, I wouldn’t have come disturb you,” said Lin Feng. Without Qin Shan’s help, Lin Feng would be in trouble. Lin Zhe Tian was going to be born soon, the Snow Clan was putting pressure on him, and many people in Qi Tian Holy Town were watching him. He needed someone powerful to help him.

“Alright, but remember to ask me for help when you really need it, because after a great fight, I might lose control over this body. I will need to sleep for a very long time, and I won’t be able to help you again. With such a little thread of consciousness, I won’t be able to use my full strength that many times.” said Qin Shan.

Lin Feng was grateful and replied, “I will choose the best time to call you. When I become stronger, I’ll find a doctor for you, I hope to bring you back to life like before.”

“You’re kind. Come, try and put your soul into my brain. We’ll try to control my body together. After a battle, you’ll also become weaker, and you won’t be able to control my body, and you will also need much vitality and vigor. You will also need time to recover.”

“I understand!” Lin Feng replied. He put his soul into Qin Shan’s body. He tried to fuse together with his consciousness to control the ancient body. Walking around was no problem, but fighting was another story.

Lin Feng didn’t want to use the ancient body, it was bad for both

Qin Shan and him, but this was for Meng Qing. This wasn't a game, it was deadly serious.

The two Taoist priests arrived in front of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. The guards looked at them and shivered. What was going in Qi Tian Holy Town? The Snow Clan had come to the Tianci Dynasty, they were aggressive and violent. Now some strong cultivators were in front of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. An old man behind them was trembling.

“Masters, what are you doing in the Holy Spirit Dynasty? If you need anything, I'll inform the leaders,” asked the guard, extremely politely!

“Good Heavens, I'm your Holy Dynasty Prince's teacher. I came to see him.” said the Taoist priest with his palms together. He sounded solemn and respectful. The guards looked at him respectfully and bowed.

“I'm going to inform our Holy Dynasty Prince then.”

“Alright, I will wait here,” said the Taoist priest indifferently. He looked noble and strong.

In the distance, many people looked at him and started immediately gossiping.

“That Taoist priest looks extraordinary and extremely strong. There are many strong cultivators with him. And surprisingly, he is the Holy Dynasty Prince's teacher! No wonder the Holy Dynasty Prince was so strong, he had an incredible teacher who looks unfathomable and enigmatic!”

“Yes, the Taoist priest really looks extraordinary, and now he came to see the Holy Dynasty Prince.”

The Taoist priest ignored what the people were saying.

When Lin Feng heard the guard, he was stunned. His teacher?

His eyes twinkled and he asked, “And what does he look like?”

“He’s a Taoist priest, he said Good Heavens when he arrived. He is with many other powerful cultivators. He came to see you,” relayed the guard.

Lin Feng finally understood, he smiled and said, “That old bastard is here!”

“Old bastard?” The guard shook his head when he heard Lin Feng talk about the Taoist priest like that. He noted that Lin Feng and the Taoist priest were close, the Taoist priest hadn’t lied.

—

After a short time, Lin Feng walked out to the gate, when he saw the Taoist priest, he smiled at him and said, “Bastard, since when are you my teacher?”

Yan Di said, “Little bastard, now that you’ve become an extremely strong cultivator, you’ve forgotten about me!”

“Alright, alright, I became strong thanks to you!” said Lin Feng, smiling happily. He looked at the small Taoist priest next to him.

The little Taoist priest looked happy and said to Lin Feng, “Lin Feng, back then, let’s forget about the tensions, now, I’m our teacher’s disciple. We are fellow disciples, and now you’re the Holy Dynasty Prince. You know many ancient techniques, I hope I can learn from you.”

Lin Feng rolled his eyes and replied, “Fu Hei, I had not anticipated that you’d become his disciple.”

“Eh...” Fu Hei smiled. “Let’s not talk about that. Let’s exchange views on cultivation, teach me some techniques.”

The Taoist priest tapped Fu Hei’s head and said, “Don’t think you can do anything because you’re my disciple.”

“I learned that from you!” protested Fu Hei, smiling wryly.

“Alright, come with me,” said Lin Feng. Lin Feng was really happy that Yan Di had come.

“Lin Feng, the the Snow Clan came because of Meng Qing, right?” Yan Di asked Lin Feng, as they strolled back to his place.

“She has a king-type body of the Snow Clan. They obviously came for Meng Qing, I don’t know why they’re doing that, Meng Qing never goes out,” replied Lin Feng.

“You underestimate the Snow Clan. The Snow Clan is very powerful. They’re not as strong as they once were, but they’re still very strong. They have some terrifying spells you can’t imagine,” Yan Di said calmly, “Where is Meng Qing?”

“She’s pregnant and the Snow Clan came precisely at that moment. Old bastard, help me,” said Lin Feng, directly asking for help.

“No need to think too much, it’s an easy thing.” said Yan Di, rolling his eyes. Lin Feng was surprised, easy?

“How to solve the problem?” asked Lin Feng, his eyes twinkling.

“Give Meng Qing back to the Snow Clan.” said Yan Di.

“Piss off!” said Lin Feng, he looked even more furious than Fu Hei had. What a bastard!

“The Snow Clan has dispatched people to find Meng Qing. They care about her. She won’t be in danger there. I don’t know what the Snow Clan thinks of the child, though. They won’t kill him, since she’s one of them.” said Yan Di. “But you, you did a good job. The Snow Clan will definitely want to kill you. You are under pressure. If you don’t give Meng Qing back, they’ll definitely kill you.”

“Impossible, Meng Qing must stay with me. If you don’t want to help me, then fine,” replied Lin Feng, annoyed now.

“You need an army to block them.” said Yan Di, waving his

hands, “Anyway, with me here, they won’t dare annoy you. After all, I’m your teacher.”

Yan Di was really shameless. Back in the days, Lin Feng used to ride him when he was still Qiong Qi. Back then, Qiong Qi also used to eat his abstruse energy crystals. Remembering those things, Lin Feng laughed.

Finally, it was the day of the banquet. Many strong cultivators arrived in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Many people wanted to see what would happen between Lin Feng and the Snow Clan. Why was the Snow Clan angry at him? Because of it, the Dynasties were also involved!

In a courtyard, a woman in black clothes handed Lin Qiong Sheng over to someone, her beautiful eyes twinkled, she looked angry. Nobody could touch Lin Feng, including the Snow Clan.

Chapter 2043: Discussing the Problem

The Holy Spirit Dynasty organized the banquet. Even though the goal was to discuss Lin Feng's problem, the Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty welcomed the guests. Everybody found that strange. The Holy Emperor had appeared personally, so he could act as a mediator and reduce the pressure.

With the Holy Emperor present, it would be difficult to oppress the Holy Spirit Dynasty, and the Holy Emperor also attached great importance to Lin Feng.

Many strong cultivators from the Qin Dynasty were there, too. Lin Feng had obtained their Ancestor's technique. They wanted it, no matter what!

The members of the Ancient Jade Dynasty also came, along with people of the Moon Palace. Empress Xi was there. There were three old men who looked unfathomable and enigmatic.

Of course, apart from the Dynasties, there were some Ancient Holy Clans. Wang Jian's Ancient Holy Clan also arrived. Zhuo Qing's group also came. Geniuses and strong cultivators from many different places were all in attendance.

"Everybody, come and have a seat," said the Holy Spirit Dynasty's Holy Emperor patiently. The crowd sat down and waited patiently. The Snow Clan and the Tianci Dynasty's members hadn't arrived. They were the real protagonists.

A cold Qi emerged all about them. The temperature dropped down, and snowflakes appeared.

The Snow Clan is here, thought the crowd. Another group of people had arrived. They were wearing snowy white robes, and looked proud and arrogant. The young man at the very front looked incredible, like a real warrior. His eyes were bestial. He looked like someone who could burst into violence at anytime.

The members of the Tianci Dynasty arrived, but they stayed back, as if all that had nothing to do with them.

“What about Lin Feng?” said Xue Ao, looking over the crowd icily.

“Snow Clan, your presence brings light to our humble dwelling. Please come and have a seat,” said the Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. He didn’t reply to the question.

“Where’s Lin Feng?” asked Xue Ao again, coldly. He didn’t give the Holy Emperor any face. He was a beast from the Snow Clan, and very aggressive. In the kingdom of the Snow Clan, nobody could compare with Xue Ao.

“You’re looking for the Holy Dynasty Prince, what is the reason?” asked the Holy Emperor calmly.

“We’re here to kill him.” Xue Ao’s eyes glittered with cold lights. Kill him? The Snow Clan wanted to kill Lin Feng?! What had he done to offend them?

An eerie silence invaded the atmosphere when he said that. The Snow Clan had come to the Holy Spirit Dynasty to kill their Holy Dynasty Prince. How scary. Xue Ao was staring at the Holy Emperor, waiting for him to react. Would they hand Lin Feng over?

The Holy Emperor hadn’t thought the situation would be so bad. A cultivator of the Snow Clan who had a king-type body had come to Qi Tian Holy Town to kill Lin Feng...

“What if I refuse?” The Holy Emperor remained silent for a few seconds and finally asked. He sounded indifferent, even though he was smiling.

Xue Ao stepped forwards and released a terrifying amount of bestial Qi.

“If Lin Feng doesn’t come out, we’ll kill the members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty until he comes out,” snarled Xue Ao aggressively.

He looked furious and scornful. Who would dare attack him if he started killing them?

The Holy Emperor remained silent. Someone near to him said indifferently, “Holy Emperor Ling, Lin Feng is not from the Holy Spirit Dynasty. No need to protect him. Since he has received the legacy of our Ancestors, just ask him to transmit his knowledge to us. No need to offend other people. I’m from the Qin Dynasty, I also want Lin Feng to transmit our Ancestor’s knowledge to us.”

“Lin Feng is insolent. He killed Prince Yan. Now the Snow Clan wants to kill him, the Holy Spirit Dynasty doesn’t need to get involved. But before killing him, we want to get the skeleton he’s obtained!” spoke up a Tianci cultivator.

They’re basically throwing stones at someone who has fallen down a well, thought the crowd. Nobody dared steal things directly from Lin Feng, but now they had an opportunity to join hands with the Snow Clan to steal his treasures.

“According to rumor, Lin Feng also has the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. Since he’s going to die, we can also share them,” said someone else icily. The Holy Spirit Dynasty was coming under great pressure.

The Dynasties could benefit from the situation, all thanks to the Snow Clan!

Everybody watched at the Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty.

“Holy Emperor Ling, hand Lin Feng over.”

“Lin Feng has offended too many people. Holy Emperor Ling, don’t be stubborn. The situation is too serious.”

The pressure was intense.

“So many people want to kill me?” said someone indifferently at that moment. Lin Feng came out of a palace with other people. Everybody turned to look at him.

“Lin Feng.”

People’s eyes twinkled coldly. Lin Feng had dared to come out!

Lin Feng had dared come out, and now he even sat down. There was a Taoist priest next to him, composed and unmoved. When he arrived, he exclaimed “Good Heavens!”, and many people rolled their eyes.

Where were these people from? The people who had come with Lin Feng looked terrifying, unfathomable, and enigmatic.

“You’re Lin Feng!” said Xue Ao, staring at Lin Feng and releasing bestial Qi. A hurricane appeared around him. He looked ferocious, ready to pounce.

“Where’s Xue Ling Long?” demanded Xue Ao icily.

Lin Feng looked at him indifferently. What an arrogant little beast! Then, he looked elsewhere, ignoring him.

Xue Ao suddenly looked amused. His bestial Qi became even thicker. He suddenly turned into a blur of light and charged Lin Feng.

As he did, an old man behind Lin Feng opened his eyes and looked at Xue Ao icily. Suddenly, lights moved towards him. The air began to warp. Xue Ao groaned and released a terrifying strength, explosively facing off against the older man... and was hurled away helplessly.

At the same time, the Snow Clan cultivators released a terrifying Qi all together. Everybody felt ice-cold.

“Do you know what you’re doing?” shouted an old man of the Snow Clan, staring at Lin Feng’s group.

The Taoist priest closed his eyes and replied indifferently, “Good heavens!”

“Eh?” The old man stared at the Taoist priest icily.

“Your Excellency, I’ve seen too many little beasts like you. You

can become my pets, I'll help you broaden your knowledge, and that way, you will stop losing face," said the old Taoist Priest, shaking his head and staring at the Snow Clan cultivators.

The members of the Snow Clan were stupefied. Everybody else was stunned too, actually. That old Taoist Priest was acting too recklessly, he was humiliating the Snow Clan?

Become his pets? Broaden the Snow Clan's knowledge?

"What did you say?" demanded the Snow Clan's strong cultivator icily. They couldn't believe it. That old Taoist Priest was humiliating the Snow Clan!?

"Good heavens, not only don't you want to broaden your knowledge, but you also don't understand what I'm saying! It seems I can't help you after all," the old Taoist Priest sighed.

"Insolent!" shouted the old man explosively. The atmosphere around him started freezing. The palace behind them even disappeared under snowflakes. "You want to die?!"

"Teacher, they are bad people, and they even dare say we want to die?" the little black Taoist priest asked the older one.

"They think they can kill us, they think we won't react," explained the old Taoist Priest patiently.

"Oh, why wouldn't we strike back if they attacked us?" asked the little Taoist priest, frowning.

"They should listen to us carefully next time," said the old Taoist Priest, calmly patting the young one's shoulder. The members of the Snow Clan all pulled long faces.

Chapter 2044: Yan Di's Craziness

The Snow Clan cultivators were furious. People were humiliating them in front of everybody!

Everybody was amused, but nobody dared show it. They were wondering where those people came from. They were definitely brave. They dared make fun of the Snow Clan in front of everybody. Very few people dared do that.

The space around them was already completely frozen. An old man of the Snow Clan looked furious and stared at Yan Di, spitting out, "Are you from the Holy Spirit Dynasty?"

"We're not. I know, you're disappointed," said Yan Di, laughing. "I'm a very old cultivator of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan. Are you interested in becoming my pet?"

"Your clan was destroyed once ten thousand years ago, now we're going to destroy it once again!" said the old man icily.

The people behind Yan Di opened their eyes, and rather suddenly, the ice broke apart!

However, Yan Di waved his hand, making everyone recall their Qi before he closed his eyes. The old man of the Snow Clan groaned icily. He was going crazy!

"I've heard of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, they're going to be destroyed again since they're acting recklessly!" swore Xue Ao furiously.

"Old buddy, when beasts haven't really transformed into human beings, they're still as stupid as before, right?" Lin Feng asked Yan Di.

"Seems like it," Yan Di nodded.

"I think so too. How do they even dare threaten us?" said Fu Hei, shaking his head.

“Poor Tianci Dynasty, these people went to their Dynasty and killed their people. The Snow Clan dares bully them.”

“Is that why the Dynasties of Qi Tian Holy Town haven’t received the legacy of their Ancestors for such a long time? Because they can’t kill such people?” wondered Fu Hei.

“We can’t blame the Tianci Dynasty. Even though they’re cowards, they can’t compete with the Snow Clan, so they’re just vigilant,” Yan Di sighed. The members of the Snow Clan and the Tianci Dynasty all pulled long faces.

“Oh, so the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan doesn’t need to fear them in case they want to get their revenge?” asked Fu Hei fatuously.

“Little boy, you’re smart.”

“What should we do? They dared threaten us and said they would destroy the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan,” asked Fu Hei, smiling broadly.

“Of course, who can threaten me?” said the old Taoist Priest nodding. He looked at the people behind him and said, “If you hear them make impertinent remarks about our clan again, kill the little beasts which keeps barking.”

“You’re insolent!” The members of the Snow Clan started walking forwards and releasing Qi.

“Who’s barking again...!” Explosions and crackling of Qi in conflict rose. When the members of the Snow Clan started walking towards them, Yan Di smashed the table in front of him and it exploded. He stood up, his hair messy and fluttering in the wind.

The strong cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan also started walking and releasing a truly horrifying Qi. The members of the Snow Clan all froze in place and stared at Yan Di. They all pulled long faces.

“You think I’m a little beast, too?” said Yan Di. Flames of fury

were burning in his eyes. He then said icily, “You’re threatening us? I’ve seen many, many people like you, even thousands of years ago. I’m not afraid of a few little beasts. If you say anything, I just have to raise my hand, and you’ll...all...die.”

Yan Di didn’t look like a nice and gentle Taoist priest anymore, he was releasing an ominous Qi. The members of the Snow Clan remained very silent at that moment, their hearts pounding in very unfamiliar fear. Some other people looked at Yan Di and were jealous, he was so strong and arrogant!

He was definitely crazy, humiliating the members of the Snow Clan and making them shut up.

The strangest thing was that the Snow Clan, who had dared go to the Tianci Dynasty and kill people, shut up when Yan Di threatened them. The crowd was astonished. The members of the Snow Clan were furious, but they didn’t dare say anything.

Everybody was afraid of crazy people. The Tianci Dynasty couldn’t afford to offend the Snow Clan, none of the Dynasties couldn’t afford to offend them, actually. But that old Taoist Priest did dare to offend them, so he was definitely crazy.

Lin Feng smiled indifferently. His old buddy was definitely fearless and crazy. Yan Di always went too far.

Yan Di smiled indifferently when he saw the Snow Clan had shut up. He reclaimed the demeanor of a transcendent being again. He smiled and said, “Don’t look so serious. I just asked you to shut up. Don’t be nervous. I just don’t like it when little animals bark unceasingly. Just stay calm.”

Yan Di sat down slowly again as if nothing had happened. However, the members of the Snow Clan continued remaining silent. As Yan Di had said, he just wanted them to shut up. The strong cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan were there, and could crush them. Yan Di had even said he would kill Xue Ao if they continued being annoying. They couldn’t afford to lose him.

They had come to kill Lin Feng, and in the end, they had to shut up.

“Oh and someone said they wanted the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures which belong to my Celestial Evolution Holy Clan. If anyone needs them, please tell me. I’ll come to your Dynasty or clan personally. Maybe I’ll give them to you if I’m in a good mood,” said Yan Di to the crowd, smiling broadly. He looked nice and gentle, completely different from a few moments before.

The members of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan were fearless. They didn’t even fear the Snow Clan! Actually, the cultivators Yan Di had brought were all Celestial Emperors and Saint Emperors. Apart from the little Taoist priest, the weakest cultivator was Yan Di himself. He was only a great emperor!

Yan Di shrugged and smiled at Lin Feng, “Alright, it’s your turn.”

Lin Feng smiled and stood up. He walked to the crowd and looked at the members of the Tianci Dynasty. He smiled and said, “Prince Yan wanted to steal my treasures, so I killed him. If you want to avenge his death, I’m here. Come and attack.”

The members of the Tianci Dynasty looked furious. Everybody had seen Lin Feng and Prince Yan’s battle. If they killed Lin Feng because of that, wouldn’t there be consequences? Impossible. The consequences would be terrifying for the Tianci Dynasty. Besides, if they killed Lin Feng and obtained nothing, it would be even more tragic. Everybody had acted arrogantly just now, they had all said they wanted to kill Lin Feng because the Snow Clan had the advantage. Now that the members of the Snow Clan had shut up, who could kill Lin Feng?

The Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty wasn’t that stupid. He grunted coldly and said, “If I kill you, everybody will make fun of me.”

“So, you were just joking?” smiled Lin Feng. Then, he looked at the members of the Qin Dynasty and observed, “The Qin Dynasty

said they wanted to kill me, please attack if you want to kill me.”

The members of the Qin Dynasty looked at the Snow Clan’s people. They couldn’t kill Lin Feng, they needed the Snow Clan’s help to do so. The Snow Clan couldn’t say anything, though.

“So the elders of the Qin Dynasty were joking too, what about the others? What about those people who wanted to kill me?”

Many people grimaced. They would have never thought the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan would appear out of nowhere and get involved.

“Staying in the Holy Spirit Dynasty is useless. Let’s leave,” someone spoke up at that moment. The crowd was startled, their eyes twinkling. It was Empress Xi. Many people were surprised, but nodded agreement. The Snow Clan was under immense pressure, and couldn’t say anything. They had to leave the Holy Spirit Dynasty and gather outside.

“Good day!” The members of the Qin Dynasty stood up and started leaving. The members of the Snow Clan turned around and left too.

Lin Feng watched them go coldly and said, “Those people will regroup and come back even stronger.”

“Of course. They’ll try to form a group, but other people won’t dare touch you. They’ll ask the Snow Clan to kill you, though. The others will try to resist the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan and the Holy Spirit Dynasty,” observed Yan Di.

As they had said, those people left and talked about a strategy. They didn’t go far from the Holy Spirit Dynasty. So many strong cultivators had gathered and been humiliated, could they leave like that without doing anything? Was that even possible?

“Little boy, I can’t do much. You’ll have to rely on yourself,” Yan Di sighed. Lin Feng remained silent and nodded that he understood the situation!

Chapter 2045: Suffocating Hurricane

The Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty came over to Lin Feng and said, “Lin Feng, the Snow Clan wants to kill you. The others want to take advantage of that situation. It’s not over.”

“I understand. Protect her and the child, though,” said Lin Feng calmly. The Holy Spirit Holy Emperor’s eyes twinkled. He was relieved. They were different from Yan Di and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, who had come confident and at ease. They could kill anyone they wanted. Yan Di had dared act that way, but the Holy Spirit Dynasty was different.

The members of the Snow Clan and the Dynasties understood that, therefore, the Snow Clan feared Yan Di because Yan Di would have really killed Xue Ao. The Tianci Dynasty couldn’t do anything against Yan Di, either.

“Lin Qiong Sheng will become a Holy Emperor in the future. You don’t need to worry about her. She’s safe here. Even if you can’t protect her, it doesn’t matter,” said the Holy Emperor. “Besides, I will dispatch some strong cultivators of the Holy Spirit Dynasty to follow you. That’ll remove some pressure from your back.”

“Leave the Snow Clan to me. Pay attention to the Moon Palace. The others won’t dare do anything if the Snow Clan doesn’t attack first,” said Yan Di calmly. Everybody nodded. Then, the Holy Emperor waved his hand and some strong cultivators’ silhouettes flickered and appeared behind him.

“Let’s go out,” said Lin Feng calmly. He started walking away. When they left the Holy Spirit Dynasty, they sensed a terrifying Qi.

After Lin Feng and the others left. someone wearing a black cloak appeared, looking nervous. She watched Lin Feng leave, and followed behind.

Outside of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, when the group saw Lin Feng's people, they were startled.

"It's Lin Feng, he took the initiative to come out!"

"The Snow Clan will capture Lin Feng! The others block the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan!" someone ordered. However, Lin Feng's group of people didn't stop. They flew away at full speed.

"Chase them!"

Many incredibly strong cultivators took off at their full speed. The air was shrieking from their passage.

"Who are those people? They look so strong."

"How strong. Many incredible cultivators."

Many people on the roads of Qi Tian Holy Town were astonished. It was a dangerous, thrilling sight.

"Today, the Holy Spirit Dynasty organized a banquet for Lin Feng and the Snow Clan. Maybe that's them."

"Possibly. A great war is going to happen."

The big group of people drew many people's attention. Lin Feng and the others arrived in a vast place and stopped, landing on the ground, which exploded under their feet. Pieces of stones flew in all directions.

Clouds rolled back in the sky, and the winds became chaotic. The strong cultivators who were chasing them stopped and dispersed, then they surrounding Lin Feng and the others.

"Is the Holy Spirit Dynasty still going to get involved?" the Tianci Holy Emperor demanded icily. The atmosphere was terribly oppressive.

"The Holy Spirit Dynasty isn't going to get involved in the Snow Clan and Lin Feng's affairs. If anyone else wants to attack Lin Feng, they should think carefully, though. After all, we're not the only Dynasty who has a Holy Emperor," said Holy Emperor Ling

indifferently. His people were standing around Lin Feng, too.

The crowd watched the Snow Clan cultivators. An ice-cold Qi began to creep through the air. In response, the cultivators next to Yan Di stepped forwards and released energies, which surrounded Xue Ao. The Snow Clan cultivators frowned and pulled long faces.

The cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan said nothing at all. They just locked down Xue Ao. It was clear that if the Snow Clan dared attack Lin Feng, they would kill Xue Ao. They were saying to the Snow Clan, Try and dare us!

An invisible and intangible energy oppressed the members of the Snow Clan. They all hated Yan Di. However, they also couldn't help but admire his courage. They didn't dare attack Lin Feng. The Celestial Evolution Holy Clan had definitely offended the Snow Clan already, and would also definitely settle accounts with them at some point. They couldn't resort to Saints, either. The Snow Clan wouldn't do anything as long as the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan didn't kill their people.

They couldn't gamble with Xue Ao's life to kill Lin Feng. The situation was chaotic, and they couldn't do much.

The other strong cultivators started moving and stepped towards Lin Feng. However, the Holy Spirit Dynasty's cultivators moved closer to Lin Feng to protect him.

"The Holy Spirit Dynasty can't protect everyone today!" said Empress Xi icily. She was beautiful, calm, and aloof. The cultivators around her also took a step towards Lin Feng. They were putting more pressure on Lin Feng.

The silhouettes of cultivators flickered back and forth. The Holy Spirit Dynasty's strong cultivators moved closer to Lin Feng and faced the members of the Moon Palace. Yan Di had said it was important to protect Lin Feng from the Moon Palace.

A graceful silhouette appeared and stood behind Lin Feng. Lin

Feng's eyes glittered as he turned around. He was startled to see who it was!

The woman was wearing a black cloak and had a veil on her face, standing there calmly.

So she's extremely strong, thought Lin Feng, when he sensed her energies. Her Qi was incredible. He was very surprised. The Holy Spirit Dynasty had matched him with a very powerful woman. She looked gentle and sad, but actually she was incredibly strong.

The pressure was incredible. It was almost as if time had stopped. Even the wind had stilled down. So many strong cultivators had gathered here, a great war would be tragic. Such military formations were rare in Qi Tian Holy Town. It was the first time in over a hundred years!

The strong cultivators who had come from far away were cautious, and didn't dare get too close. They stayed well in the distance. If all these terrifying cultivators started fighting, they'd also sense something.

Finally, a sharp Qi sprang out. Someone took a step forwards. However, the crowd was surprised because it wasn't a strong cultivator, it was a cultivator of the top of the Huang Qi layer: Wang Jian!

Someone needed to take the first step, and that person was Wang Jian.

Lin Feng turned his head and regarded Wang Jian calmly. He had been waiting for those cultivators to make the first step, would they dare attack him? Everybody was extremely vigilant. Wang Jian had come out, and he could kill Lin Feng because he was a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer like Lin Feng.

Wang Jian was a genius of the Dark Night Region. He controlled weapon Dao. His attacks were deadly.

Wang Jian released sharp energies. The wind souged and began

to moan. The other strong cultivators remained motionless. Nobody else attacked.

No matter what, Lin Feng had to die today. So many people had gathered, they all wanted something from Lin Feng.

At Wang Jian's back, a gigantic spear appeared and pointed at Lin Feng. A terrifying Qi appeared, a strong wind of intent streaming from it.

"Die!" shouted Wang Jiao explosively, and the gigantic spear drove towards Lin Feng. The golden lights streaked across the sky. Nobody knew how the situation was going to evolve. But the members of the Dynasties and the Ancient Clans knew one thing: Lin Feng had to die!

Chapter 2046: Killing and Absorbing

At Lin Feng's back, a gigantic sword appeared and pointed at the sky.

Lin Feng stretched his hand and his gigantic sword sped to meet the gigantic spear. They collided hard enough to start a windstorm. Lin Feng took flight as a Holy Spirit appeared around him. He condensed wind strength to accelerate.

Wang Jian grunted icily. He looked at Lin Feng and flashed forwards. Another flying spear appeared behind him, and at the same time, a blood spear appeared in his hand and armor appeared on his body. He wanted to kill Lin Feng!

Lin Feng's eyes went all black. Holy Spirits materialized all around him. He punched out, a Deva-Mara Kalpa Holy Spirit appearing around his fist. He had learned how to condense that Holy Spirit after becoming a high-level emperor. Lin Feng's fist was black and filled with explosive lightning. Lin Feng punched the flying spear and it exploded.

The crowd remained silent, just watching and not getting involved. Their hearts were all pounding, though. Wang Jian's weapon Dao was impressive, his weapons explosive. But now Lin Feng had become a high-level emperor and he could destroy Wang Jian's weapons by simply punching them! Lin Feng's physical strength had become even more unbelievable...

All those people wanted Lin Feng to die. He had been on the Holy Way Stage, he was extremely talented. If they didn't kill him now, he would pose a threat to them in the future!

Wang Jian saw Lin Feng charge towards him. A sharp death sword flashed towards him even faster!

Sharp weapon Qi rose up in the air, as Wang Jian turned into a gigantic cauldron. He could release any kind of weapon: offensive

or defensive, and his weapons were almost indestructible.

Lin Feng released Death Dao intent. Wang Jian's weapons also contained soul strength. Lin Feng sighed in admiration, Wang Jian was really talented, and his Dao intent was incredible. He was extremely strong. Who was stronger between him and Zhuo Qing, who had the Diamond Indestructible King-type Body?

Lin Feng waved his hand and ancient imprints appeared all around him. Their invisible and intangible strength surrounded Wang Jian. The ancient imprints looked like other worlds. He couldn't escape!

A blade appeared in Wang Jian's hands, he raised his hands and a powerful force filled the air. The incredible strength condensed and turned into an Azure Dragon, which roared out defiantly.

"Lacerate!" The air howled around around the Dragon, it was able to cut anything. It broke free from the World of the Living Imprints. Wang Jian's weapons were indeed dangerous!

However, after the World of the Living Imprints broke apart, Wang Jian saw a terrifying gigantic sword streak across the sky towards him. It seemed to contain all sorts of strength, including cursing strength! That sword had the level of the top of the Huang Qi layer, and could even kill ordinary great emperors!

Wang Jian's armor glowed with power. At the same time, he also took out another powerful blade, which lit up in his hand. The sword arrived and destroyed the blade he raised to stop it, before continuing on, unimpeded. An ancient shield appeared in front of Wang Jian, but it was immediately cut into two and then exploded.

Kacha!

The sound was subtle, almost quiet. The sword cut into Wang Jian and through his armor. Qi exploded, and he was driven away, blood splashing as his clothes were torn apart.

What a terrifying defense!, thought those watching. They were

also astonished by Lin Feng's attack. His attacks were murderous. He had progressed a lot, and faster than Wang Jian. Wang Jian was already at the top of the Huang Qi layer, he was going to become a great emperor sooner or later. Lin Feng was different though. When he was a medium-level emperor, he was already extremely strong, and he still had some ways to go before becoming a great emperor.

Lin Feng was extremely talented. The fighting abilities between cultivators of the same level were wide-ranging, and the difference could be gigantic. Differences in terms of spells, talent, and so on could be substantial. If Lin Feng had been at the very top of the Huang Qi layer too, he would have destroyed Wang Jian, even though he was also a genius.

Wang Jian could only look at Lin Feng. He couldn't compete with him. Lin Feng kept destroying his weapons. The previous time he had fought against Lin Feng, Lin Feng had still been a medium-level emperor.

"Die!" shouted Wang Jian explosively. He condensed terrifying Weapon Intent, and shot it towards Lin Feng's head. However, a demon appeared to protect Lin Feng's brain. At the same time, Lin Feng condensed a sword Holy Spirit to merge into his body. He looked like a sword which could cut apart the universe.

Wang Jian calmed down when he saw that. A Ten Thousand Weapons pattern appeared behind him, his whole body turned into a sharp weapon. Weapon energies gathered around him.

Lin Feng raised his hands, terrifying and sharp sword Qi began to vibrate and hum. His body turned into a terrifying sword, and his soul into an indestructible sword. Desolate and ancient Qi filled the air. The energies blotted out the sky. Lin Feng started advancing, condensing force in his feet, each step was more and more powerful.

That sharp sword felt like the last thing in the world. The crowd

was nervous. Lin Feng was using the Ancient Holy Techniques again, and he had become much stronger than the previous time, when he had killed Prince Yan.

Wang Jian was shocked and going crazy. He controlled weapon techniques, he had a weapon soul, he understood weapon Dao, he was a king of weapons, and his weapons were incredibly sharp. However, Lin Feng's sword attack seemed better than his weapons. How could the king of weapons lose against someone else's weapon?

Wang Jian continued advancing, his Ten Thousand Weapons vibrating ever faster, and everything towards Lin Feng. The ground was shaking as if it were about to collapse.

However, the gigantic sword broke the ten thousand weapons. When it neared him, he had already lost much of his power. He was oppressed.

"Oh no!" Wang Jian felt hopeless. This was a holy technique, an oppressive holy technique. His attacks could kill great emperors, but Lin Feng could oppress him using holy techniques. He was going to die! A terrifying Qi surrounded him-

"Wang Jian, Great Imperial Weapon!" shouted someone loudly. However, the gigantic sword was already descending from the sky, and Wang Jian was under too much pressure. He had the impression he was going to suffocate. He did all he could to protect himself as quickly as possible, the air exploding with his resistance. The gigantic sword crashed on him, and he shook violently, his weapon body breaking apart.

"Die!" People from Wang Jian's Clan surged forwards, but there were cultivators from the Holy Spirit Dynasty in the sky to intercept them, protecting Lin Feng!

Lin Feng returned to human form. He punched Wang Jian in the head, but Wang Jian's head didn't explode. A terrifying absorbing strength appeared around Lin Feng. Nine dragons appeared and

absorbed Wang Jian. The weapon pattern was also absorbed immediately. Even Wang Jian's head was devoured.

“Die, die!...” the cultivators from Wang Jian's Clan went insane when they saw the genius of their Clan get killed like that. Lin Feng's soul was trembling, and a terrifying strength moved towards his head. He was being pushed down, but he kept his cool.

A strong wind blew the pressure away as another cultivator protected Lin Feng.

The ground shook violently. Finally, a great battle was about to burst out.

They had chosen Wang Jian to fight against Lin Feng. No matter the winner, the results would have been terrifying in any case. Now, Lin Feng had won, he had killed Wang Jian and the members of Wang Jian's Clan were furious.

“A great war is starting!” blurted out someone in the distance. They had never seen such a terrifying gathering of strong cultivators!

Lin Feng looked at all those cultivators, he looked furious and said, “You will all regret trying to kill me!”

“Old buddy, protect me!” said Lin Feng, then he jumped forwards, and landed on the ground, a crater appeared, a mysterious strength appeared and surrounded him. The members of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan jumped into the crater to protect Lin Feng.

Chapter 2047: I'm Your Ancestor!

When they saw Lin Feng penetrate into the ground, the cultivators were stunned and said icily, “Be careful, he going to travel underground!”

“Yes, freeze the ground!” said a strong cultivator of the Snow Clan. The strong cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan were protecting Lin Feng. The Snow Clan cultivators landed on the ground and punched the ground, which started freezing with a loud crackling. If Lin Feng was underground, he had to freeze, too. He couldn't escape!

“Holy Emperor Ling, if you don't leave, we'll attack the members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty!” said someone icily. Maybe one Dynasty would have feared the Holy Spirit Dynasty, but now they had formed an alliance, they didn't care about the Holy Spirit Dynasty anymore. Even if the Holy Spirit Dynasty wanted to get their revenge someday, they could call their families and that would be the Holy Spirit Dynasty's judgement day.

Therefore, they didn't mind oppressing the Holy Spirit Dynasty together. Maybe they would manage to destroy one Dynasty too!

“So many Dynasties are joining hands to fight against our Holy Dynasty Prince, ridiculous!”

“Since it's that way, we don't need to be polite, don't worry. We won't attack Lin Feng, but he won't escape today,” said a voice icily. They had to stop the Holy Spirit Dynasty and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, so the Snow Clan would be able to focus on Lin Feng. The members of Wang Jian's Clan wouldn't let Lin Feng off, either!

A terrifying strength began to build. The great war burst out. The members of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan were all surrounding Lin Feng. They made some hand seals and many ancient imprints appeared. Marks appeared on the snowy ground.

A golden palace appeared, lofty and indestructible.

There was a boom as a powerful attack crashed onto the palace, but it remained unaffected.

“Hmph! Is that useful?” said an icy voice, as a terrifying strength condensed.

A gigantic spear descended from the sky, a destructive whirlwind around it. It crashed onto the palace and cracks appeared.

“Crush him!” said a few people at the same time. Destructive strength bombarded the palace. Finally, loud sounds spread in the air, the palace finally started breaking apart. However, at the same time, destructive strength blotted out the sky again.

“The members of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan are way too insolent, they must die!”

“Die!” the strong cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan were less numerous than the others. They couldn’t possibly resist for too long. Lin Feng was in the ground, there was someone watching all those strong cultivators at the entrance of the hole he was in.

A new shattering sound spread in the air. The ice which obstructed the hole broke apart and ancient Qi rose up into the air.

“What’s going on?” The Holy Spirit Dynasty’s person who was protecting everyone was startled. Some Qi was emerging from the hole. She was shocked, her soul felt a severe pressure. It was a truly ancient Qi...

“Is that Lin Feng’s Qi?” she was astonished. At that moment, the members of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan moved aside. Three people surrounded the members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, one of them punched out at them. The atmosphere seemed like it was going to break apart.

The Holy Emperor’s Concubine was stupefied. She jumped into the incoming hurricane, waving her hand and breaking the wind

apart. However, at that moment, a gigantic hand grabbed towards her. She was being attacked from every side!

The Concubine suddenly turned into a light beam, moving her hands rapidly. However, she was still chased from the hole.

Someone smiled coldly in the sky and dove towards the hole at full speed.

“Kacha!” The hole was being bombarded and grew wider. It became gigantic, and Lin Feng should have appeared in their field of vision.

When the ice completely broke apart, the strong cultivator was astonished. He didn't see Lin Feng at all, he saw a gigantic creature.

It was a giant, three zhang tall. He was standing there, as tall as a building. His Qi was ancient and becoming stronger and stronger. Force kept appearing and condensing around him, turning into a hurricane of power.

The descending cultivator above the giant was astonished and started to shake. He couldn't oppress that giant and quickly stopped descending. The others were astonished, too. Why wasn't it Lin Feng? Why was there a giant?

They had seen Lin Feng go into the hole, where was he now?

Who, or what, was that giant?

At that moment, the giant raised his head, and light beams emerged from his eyes. He looked up at the cultivator in the sky above him, which made the man shiver even more. It was an ancient peerless cultivator, and his eyes were burning with violence.

The giant jumped out of the hole, his feet were gigantic, he grabbed towards the cultivator above him.

The cultivator above the giant was a Celestial Emperor, but he

didn't feel like fighting against a giant, so he tried to escape.

However, the giant stretched out his hand and a gigantic imprint appeared, oppressing the whole region. The Celestial Emperor shouted desperately, that attack had oppressed everyone! At the same time, the giant stretched out his gigantic hand and grabbed the cultivator. The cultivator had the impression he was going to suffocate.

“No!...” the Celestial Emperor shouted furiously. He was going crazy. The giant had grabbed him and now he couldn't move anymore.

At that moment, the atmosphere became eerily calm again.

The giant looked like a Saint, was he a Saint from the ancient days?

“No, that's...” the Qin Dynasty's Holy Emperor was astonished and staring at the giant. That Qi, the giant, impossible...

The giant was holding the Celestial Emperor, who looked tiny in comparison with him. He was desperate and shouted, “Master, I didn't do anything! Please forgive me!”

“I thought you wanted to kill me?” said the giant calmly. The crowd started shaking violently.

The voice was completely different, but that was Lin Feng's way of speaking.

“How is that possible?”

Some people couldn't believe their eyes and trembled. Lin Feng was extraordinary, but how could he control a giant's body? That wasn't Lin Feng's body. That was the body of an ancient Saint. Lin Feng had definitely obtained it in the Saint's World!

But how? How could Lin Feng control a giant's body?

The Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty was astonished, too. Lin Feng could control a Saint's body? They had no

explanation. Even if Lin Feng could control such a body, where did the Qi and strength come from?

They didn't understand.

"Ah..." a loud shout spread in the air. The giant crushed the cultivator in his hand. His muscles, bones, flesh started crackling. The pain was unbearable. They couldn't imagine how painful it was.

A soul emerged, the cultivator wanted to escape but the giant immediately grabbed the soul too, he crushed the body and the soul of the cultivator. He had destroyed a Celestial Emperor that easily.

"It's a Saint, it's a peerless cultivator!" said someone in astonishment and terror.

The Qin Holy Emperor looked at the giant and asked, "Are you really Lin Feng?"

The giant turned around and looked at the Qin Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty. The Holy Emperor didn't flee. He was staring at the giant as he said, "I'm the Holy Emperor of the Qin Dynasty, Qin Shan's descendant."

He was convinced that Lin Feng couldn't control such a body without a Saint's help.

The giant raised his hands, but the Holy Emperor continued staring at him.

He clenched his fists. People had cold sweats, worried for the Qin Holy Emperor.

"Holy Emperor!" shouted a strong cultivator of the Qin Dynasty.

However, the Qin Holy Emperor remained motionless. Suddenly, he was forced away as the giant said icily, "I'm your Ancestor, Qin Shan!"

Chapter 2048: Change

“I’m your Ancestor, Qin Shan!” said the voice, which made Qin Gan tremble. The giant grabbed Qin Gan and threw him away. The crowd was astonished, especially the members of the Qin Dynasty. At that moment, they all pulled a long face. They were staring at the giant in confusion. Their ancestor?

The Qin Dynasty’s Ancestor wasn’t dead?

The giant really had the body of a Saint, nobody had doubts about that, he looked majestic, he was as tall as a building.

Was that really their ancestor? If that was the case, if he hadn’t died, then the Qin Dynasty was going to become the ruler of Qi Tian Holy Town and even the Region of the Dynasty!

Those days, in the Dark Night Region, even Holy Emperors were rare, and it was almost impossible to see a Saint, but nobody had doubts that they existed. The Saints couldn’t all be dead. The crowd was convinced that nobody could be stronger than a Saint.

The giant threw Qin Gan away. Qin Gan coughed up blood. He wasn’t angry, however, he was touched and moved. It was his ancestor, a Saint, and the Saint was incredibly strong, he could have popped his skull with his fingers. He started thinking that in that body, there was Lin Feng’s consciousness as well as Qin Shan. Lin Feng couldn’t possibly be as strong as a Saint.

“Ancestor,” said Qin Gan, bowing before the giant. Everybody was astonished. Nobody understood what was going on. They had been chasing Lin Feng. Now, a Saint had appeared and it was the Ancestor of the Qin Dynasty! Qin Gan believed it himself!

“Ancestor!” The strong cultivators of the Qin Dynasty all bowed respectfully before their ancestor.

The giant’s eyes twinkled. Lin Feng was the main controller, Qin Shan’s thread of consciousness was just helping. Lin Feng was

really using the giant's body. He felt perfect inside, actually. His soul wasn't shaking even the slightest iota. The body was very responsive.

The members of the Qin Dynasty were Qin Shan's descendants. Lin Feng was controlling their Ancestor's strength at that moment. Lin Feng couldn't kill the members of the Qin Dynasty using Qin Shan's body, that would have been extremely disrespectful, therefore Lin Feng just wanted to teach Qin Gan a good lesson.

He glanced at all the members of the Qin Dynasty but remained silent. However, they all felt under pressure because of that silence.

The members of the Snow Clan had already gathered together, wanting to protect Xue Ao. An old man said using telepathy, "Get ready to leave!"

They all understood that they couldn't face a Saint!

The members of the Snow Clan weren't the only ones who wanted to leave, the others who had come to surround Lin Feng did the same.

Therefore, when the giant looked at the members of the Snow Clan, it was as if something was about to explode. Snowflakes appeared everywhere, and the members of the Snow Clan disappeared into the snow. A terrifying strength filled the air. When the snowflakes disappeared, the giant saw that the members of the Snow Clan were gone

Everybody realized that Lin Feng wasn't going to die today. Without the Snow Clan's help, nobody could do anything against him.

The Moon Palace's members also released golden lights and disappeared inside, leaving without hesitation. A Saint was there, after all...

"Let's go." Progressively, more and more people started leaving.

However, at that moment, the giant looked at the members of Wang Jian's clan and a terrifying strength rose up.

“Go? You came here, you think you can leave that easily?” said the giant icily, yet mockingly. The air hummed. The giant took a step, and a second one, and a third one. With each step, he could move ten thousand meters.

“Block!” shouted the members of Wang Jian's Clan, releasing their Qi. They all turned into swords and moved as fast as they could.

However, at the same time, the giant followed them and condensed an ancient Qi. The giant took out a gigantic ancient bell, and rang it once. Many people coughed up blood instantly. At the same time, the swords had the feeling they were stuck in moving sand.

The giant took another step and appeared in front of those people. A terrible strength seemed to lock the air in place. Their muscles stiffened. The terrifying ancient Qi was absorbing the force of the earth and sky. Those who were trying to escape struggled futilely.

“No...” shouted someone in panic. The gigantic bell crushed cultivators one after another. Their bodies exploded, and their souls dispersed. Someone managed to dodge and moved away at full speed. It was a Saint Emperor.

Lin Feng ignored him. He knew he could control the body perfectly, but he couldn't catch up with him, otherwise he could have crushed him. A Saint Emperor was nothing in front of a Saint. Escaping would have been impossible. Shi Jue Lao Xian drank booze while crushing Saint Emperors.

The other members of Wang Jian's clan didn't manage to escape and all died there.

Then, the giant looked back at the others and realized that

everybody was far away. Celestial Emperors were indeed extremely fast.

Of course, the members of the Qin Dynasty were still there. They raised their heads and all looked at their ancestor.

“Someone will have to pay the price today,” said the giant indifferently. He hadn’t talked very loudly, but people in the distance heard him and shivered. Who was going to pay the price?

The Dynasties and some Ancient Holy Clans had sent people to kill Lin Feng. Who was responsible for that?

Lin Feng had used the Saint’s help. He wouldn’t be able to do it again for a long time, and maybe he would never have such an opportunity again.

He had to cherish that opportunity. Could he just chase those people? Would they stop harassing him in the future?

He had to be crazy. He had to make Qi Tian Holy Town shake violently, they had to remember him forever. He had to teach them a good lesson!

“Dong!” The giant made another step, the crowd shook violently. Where was the giant going?

The members of the Qin Dynasty were stupefied. They gathered behind Qin Gan and said, “Holy Emperor, is that really our Ancestor?”

“Of course, do you think we would be able to stay here and stay safe and sound otherwise?” said Qin Gan. He had no doubts any more, the only problem was that their Ancestor liked Lin Feng too!

The Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty took a deep breath. He was astonished... a Saint! He had never thought Lin Feng would be helped by a Saint!

Yan Di remained calm and composed. He laughed and said, “Little boy, have you seen that? That’s my disciple. Soon, he’ll be

as famous as me!”

When Fu Hei heard Yan Di, he thought, Since when is Master famous? And that was a Saint!

The imperial concubine looked at the giant in the distance, she was trembling. Where was Lin Feng?

She turned around and looked at the hole again. The members of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan, including Yan Di, were still there. That Taoist priest was certifiably crazy, but he was also enigmatic and unfathomable. Even though she didn't know what had happened to Lin Feng, she knew that he had secrets. She just stood there calmly and watched.

In the Tianci Dynasty, the ground kept shaking violently. People raised their heads and looked at the giant in astonishment. What was going on? Why was the giant coming to the Tianci Dynasty? No cultivator from their Dynasty could compete with the giant!

Finally, when the giant arrived, Holy Emperor Tianci landed in front of it, his face deathly pale. He looked much older suddenly.

The Saint had chosen their Tianci Dynasty to vent his anger?

“Master, what are you going to do?” asked Holy Emperor Tianci. He didn't know what to do against such a cultivator. They were going to die if nobody helped them. He already didn't dare fight against Xue Ao, and in front of a Saint, he was a nobody.

“The Tianci Dynasty needs to change their Holy Emperor,” said the giant calmly. He sounded like he was talking about something ordinary. With one simple sentence, he could decide a Holy Emperor's fate. The Holy Emperor had to be changed!

Chapter 2049: Consequences

Holy Emperor Tianci looked up at the giant, terrified. He had followed the Snow Clan to kill Lin Feng and now the consequences were tragic. He was facing a Saint who was telling him his time as Holy Emperor was done!

He sounded calm and aloof, but Holy Emperor Tianci understood that he was probably going to die.

So many Dynasties had joined hands to kill Lin Feng, and Lin Feng had in return summoned a Saint. For Holy Emperor Tianci, this was a real tragedy. If the Saint was furious, he could make him fall and turn to dust. He knew the Saint had that power.

How tragic, but it was reality.

“I want to know whether you’re Lin Feng or Qin Shan,” said Holy Emperor Tianci. He was going to die so he wanted to know who was going to kill him.

“I’m Lin Feng and the Saint,” said the giant emotionlessly. Holy Emperor Tianci nodded and gave all his possessions to an old man who was standing next to him.

“Holy Emperor!” said the old man, his face stiff.

“Uncle, you can be the Holy Emperor for now. Chen and Piao Xue have potential, in the future you can choose them, or someone else,” said Holy Emperor Tianci. The old man next to him looked extremely sad.

“Alright, even without me, the Tianci Dynasty will remain the Tianci Dynasty,” said Holy Emperor Tianci with a sad smile. He walked up to Lin Feng and said, “You want to kill me for what happened today, you’re right, but no matter what, you will end up like me, sooner or later.”

Then, Holy Emperor Tianci closed his eyes, ready to meet death.

Everyone remained silent in the Tianci Dynasty. The cultivators gathered there all stared at the giant. The giant raised his hand and brought it down. Even when he was crushed, the members of the Tianci Dynasty could scarcely believe it had really happened.

Lin Feng left the Tianci Dynasty, he couldn't stay like this much longer. He had killed the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty to prove to everyone that they couldn't do whatever they wished to him. Everybody in Qi Tian Holy Town would now understand that.

As Lin Feng had expected, when Holy Emperor Tianci died, the news quickly spread everywhere in Qi Tian Holy Town. Nobody said anything, everyone held their tongues. There was too much pressure. The Dynasties were too scared; their Holy Emperors, elders, and families could die!

Holy Emperor Tianci had died. Nobody talked about Lin Feng anymore, saying Lin Feng's name became taboo.

All of that was due to the Saint's existence. People in Qi Tian Holy Town realized how strong Saints were. Of course, many people felt even more determined, they all wanted to transcend worldliness, attain holiness, and look at Saint Emperors like insects.

Lin Feng went back to the battlefield and sank back into the ground. His holy Qi dispersed and disappeared. In the ground, Lin Feng went into his spirit's world and left the Saint's body. He had the sensation his head was going to explode. He felt extremely weak and sick. With the strength of the Huang Qi layer, using a Saint's body was exhausting. Without the Saint's consciousness, he couldn't have done it.

Yan Di was waiting on the ground outside. He narrowed his eyes

and looked at the hole. He was wondering whether taking Lin Feng away was the best solution or not.

Up in the sky, two people were seated on a cloud, lights gathered around them. They had seen everything. They made an odd couple. One of them had an alcohol gourd and looked nonchalant. The other one was a beautiful woman.

“Teacher, will he be alright?” the woman asked the drunkard.

The drunkard didn’t reply hastily, he took a sip of liquor and said, “No problem for now. But in the future, it will be a huge problem.”

“What do you mean?”

“Lin Feng is facing many problems. For now, nobody in Qi Tian Holy Town will dare attack him, but what about the Snow Clan?” said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly.

The woman was startled, “Teacher, would the Snow Clan dare send a Saint to fight against Lin Feng...”

Qing Feng couldn’t imagine what it meant to be a peerless cultivator.

“You are young. You don’t understand how priceless a Saint’s body is, especially a body which still has a consciousness,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian indifferently. He understood precisely how Lin Feng had used a Saint’s strength. He knew that the Snow Clan’s members also understood that.

“Lin Feng shouldn’t have used the Saint’s strength?” asked Qing Feng. She was stunned.

“He would have died if he hadn’t. Lin Feng didn’t do anything wrong, but the real problem is that no matter what, he didn’t have any good option,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly. He took another sip, looking detached from worldly affairs.

“Teacher, why...” asked Qing Feng, staring at Shi Jue Lao Xian.

“Why I didn’t help Lin Feng before he used the Saint’s body?” asked Shi Jue Lao Xian with a smile. Qing Feng said nothing, but Shi Jue Lao Xian tapped her head and smiled, “If I helped and protected each time he has a problem, how could he become stronger? Besides, I’m not with him all the time. He has to find solutions to his problems himself. All peerless cultivators have to go through uncountable hardships to grow strong.”

“What you mean is that Lin Feng will become a peerless cultivator?” deduced Qing Feng, her eyes twinkling. Her teacher thought highly of Lin Feng.

“I never said that!” Shi Jue Lao Xian grinned. “However, having used the strength of a Saint is something amazing for him, it has many advantages.”

“Teacher, what if a Saint of the Snow Clan attacks Lin Feng? He will definitely die,” Qing Feng asked him.

“Alright, for my good disciple, I’ll offend the Snow Clan only once,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian, shaking his head.

Qing Feng looked at him strangely and whispered, “What does that have to do with me?”

“Ah? Well then, I’d be happy to have a rest. I’m not getting involved then,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian, laying down on the cloud and continuing to drink.

“Teacher!” said Qing Feng, rolling her eyes and pouting.

Shi Jue Lao Xian just laughed and said, “Alright, alright, don’t worry. I’ll help him one last time, but I’ll offend the Snow Clan and it won’t be fun in the future. In the future, he’ll have to rely on himself.”

“Thank you very much, Teacher!” smiled Qing Feng. Since her teacher had said he would help Lin Feng, he was going to help!

Lin Feng's soul strength moved back into his body and he began to slowly recover. His soul didn't shake violently anymore. Then, he came out of the hole.

"Little boy, you must feel great, right?" chortled Yan Di, smiling at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was bemused, feel great? His soul had almost exploded, using the Saint's strength was incredibly dangerous!

"I want to go back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. I think it's over," said Lin Feng.

However, the old Taoist Priest shook his head and said, "You can't go back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty."

"Why?" Lin Feng asked.

"You must think about the consequences now," said Yan Di.

Lin Feng didn't understand. "Who will dare attack me now?" asked Lin Feng.

"The Snow Clan's Saint," explained Yan Di.

Lin Feng frowned and remained silent for a few seconds, "If a Saint really wants to attack me, where should I go? And will the Snow Clan really send a Saint to fight against me?"

"Alright, go back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty then," said Yan Di.

Lin Feng shook his head. He didn't understand.

"Go back. If you have to face him, you'll face him sooner or later." said the old Taoist Priest. Then, he said "Good Heavens" again. Lin Feng didn't understand. If the Snow Clan really sent a Saint to fight against him, he could activate the memories he had received from the Diviner of the Destiny Shrine, and say he was from the Destiny Shrine!

Chapter 2050: The Evil Influence Remains

He was seated cross-legged on a Blue Uptala Lotus in his spirit world. Cosmic strength kept rotating around him, there were the cosmic energies of the ten thousand things of creation. Without the Heavenly Grace Ancient Tree and the Blue Uptala Lotus, Lin Feng wouldn't have been able to progress so fast in terms of cosmic energies.

Lin Feng was thoughtful.

"Zun cultivators break through to the Huang Qi layer when their force is multiplied by a thousand. After that, their body fuses together with the earth and sky around them. However, the real force of the earth and sky is unlimited. When Saints move, force keeps condensing around them and hurricanes appear around them. The strength of the earth and sky is like their own. They just have to move their hand to use it," muttered Lin Feng. After controlling the Saint's body, that was the feeling he had experienced. Saints had no limits. It had been a wonderful sensation!

They could also control people's souls. When he controlled his own body, he had no problems and there was nothing unpleasant, he was in harmony with his own body. But when he controlled the Saint's body, Lin Feng realized how incredible a human soul was. He needed to become so much stronger to become a peerless cultivator. They belonged to a completely different world!

Lin Feng was pleasantly surprised because he had been cleansed three times by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength as a high-level emperor, and he had become stronger after controlling the Saint's body. However, after recovering, his demon skills had become stronger yet again.

After that, Lin Feng went back into the demon pond and cleansed his Deva-Mara physical body. His physical body was becoming ever

more terrifying. Lin Feng knew that because he had controlled the Saint's body, it was easier for him to become physically stronger. He felt even better physically.

His soul and body had become stronger. Lin Feng was even more determined, and felt even more optimistic about his future. He kept progressing quickly. At the same cultivation level, nobody could compete with him in terms of physical strength.

He was seated cross-legged on the Blue Uptala Lotus and after that, a weapon pattern appeared behind him. He had absorbed it with his Spirit, and had it mix with his blood. His Qi had finally calmed down.

Meng Qing was seated not far from him and smiled, "Little Zhe Tian, look at your father, he's doing so much for you, come out quickly."

"Haha, he will also come out quickly." When Meng Qing heard Lin Feng, she smiled. Lin Feng stopped practicing cultivation and landed next to Meng Qing. He touched Meng Qing's belly and sensed something move.

"Little boy, listen to your mom or I'll scold you when you come out!" smiled Lin Feng.

Meng Qing laughed. "Don't scare our baby, otherwise he won't come out!"

"Lin Feng, will the Snow Clan attack you?" Meng Qing asked Lin Feng. Lin Feng initially didn't intend to tell Meng Qing anything, but she had to know. Lin Feng had just told her a few things, he couldn't hide the truth from her, and her perception was quite acute.

The Snow Clan was her native clan, and known to be powerful.

"Don't worry, you can rely on me!" Lin Feng smiled.

Meng Qing put her hands on Lin Feng's face and looked at him gently. "If you can't survive, I can go back to the Snow Clan. Your

safety is the most important thing. I have a celestial king-type body, the Snow Clan won't do anything to me."

"Silly girl," said Lin Feng, caressing Meng Qing's cheeks in return. He kissed her on the lips. They both smiled, understanding each other without talking.

"Lin Feng, do you think Lin Zhe Tian will look more like you or me?" Meng Qing put her head on Lin Feng's shoulder and smiled.

"It would be better if he looked more like you," replied Lin Feng cheerfully.

Meng Qing laughed and wondered, "Will he be like you? Will he travel all around the world and offend many women like you?"

Lin Feng laughed and said, "Haha, wouldn't it be great?"

"Aren't you afraid that it could affect his cultivation?"

"Some people are determined. Some people are solitary, too. Some people are confident and at ease, other people solely focus on cultivation. It always depends on people." Lin Feng was different from many people. He smiled, "Look at those Holy Emperors and Holy Concubines!"

"You envy them?" asked Meng Qing.

"My wife is like a celestial being, how could I envy them? Other people envy me!" Lin Feng laughed back. He knew that Meng Qing was joking. They were two people who were really in love. They had gone through so much together.

However, some people didn't intend to let Lin Feng off. Some Snow Clan cultivators landed in the Tianci Dynasty, where there was a new Holy Emperor, the previous Holy Emperor's uncle. When he saw them, he didn't look as happy as in the past.

"We suffered great losses, what do you want now?" asked the Holy Emperor impolitely.

The Snow Clan cultivators frowned and one of them said, “Our Saint is on his way, he’ll arrive within three days.”

The Holy Emperor was petrified and his heart started pounding. A Saint?

The Snow Clan had said one sentence and it sufficed to scare them to death. A Saint from the Snow Clan was going to come to town?

“So what does that have to do with the Tianci Dynasty?” asked the new Holy Emperor. He tried to remain calm and composed.

“Last time, the Dynasties and the Ancient Holy Clans surrounded Lin Feng and then let him escape. That won’t happen a second time!” said the Snow Clan cultivator calmly.

“Let him escape?” The Holy Emperor smiled coldly.

The Snow Clan was really shameless. The Snow Clan had fled first!

“A second time? You mean that we’ll surround Lin Feng again?” asked the Holy Emperor, not understanding their point of view.

“Indeed!” said the strong cultivator of the Snow Clan. He didn’t realize the Holy Emperor found him ridiculous, and just nodded calmly.

The Holy Emperor said coldly, “Since your Saint is coming, why do we need to waste time?”

“We need Lin Feng to use the Saint’s body. And we need you to deal with Lin Feng, you understand?” asked the Snow Clan cultivator.

The Holy Emperor was stupefied. The Snow Clan wanted Lin Feng to use the Saint’s body again, and give them a reason to send a Saint!

“Why doesn’t the Saint attack directly? Why do you need someone to provoke the situation?” asked the Holy Emperor.

“If our Saint attacks Lin Feng directly, he won’t use the Saint’s body directly,” explained the Snow Clan cultivator indifferently before starting to walk away.

“Some strong cultivators from my Clan have already gone to the other Dynasties and Ancient Holy Clans. Of course, you can refuse, but the consequences will be... hehe!” said that man with a laugh before leaving. The Holy Emperor was furious.

The Tianci Dynasty’s Holy Emperor had already died, and now they wanted to start again?!

“I will inform you when the right time comes. You can decide whether you want to join or not then,” the Snow Clan cultivator said while leaving. The Holy Emperor was furious, but could he refuse?

Chapter 2051: Lin Feng Is Dead

Qin Gan from the Qin Dynasty arrived in the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he wanted to see Lin Feng.

Since there was a new connection between them thanks to the Saint, the Holy Spirit Dynasty accepted.

“What do you want from me, Qin Gan?” asked Lin Feng to the Holy Emperor calmly.

“I came for the Saint’s body, I want you to give us his body back,” Qin Gan said coldly. However, Lin Feng merely grunted icily.

Qin Gan wasn’t furious, but said, “A short time ago, the Snow Clan, the Dynasties, and the Ancient Holy Clans wanted to kill you. While the Holy Spirit Dynasty protected you, the most important thing is that the Snow Clan sent a Saint here for you. I don’t want my ancestor’s body to end up in the Snow Clan’s hands. Qin Shan is our ancestor.”

When Lin Feng heard him, he was surprised. A Saint from the Snow Clan was coming for him? Yan Di was right!

“If I give you the body, how can you protect it?” said Lin Feng icily.

“I came here secretly. Give me the body and escape from Qi Tian Holy Town. The farther you go, the better. We won’t say anything. That way, it would be perfect for both of us,” Qin Gan said to Lin Feng.

“No need. If the Saint comes, we’ll see what happens,” replied Lin Feng evenly. “Please leave, Holy Emperor Qin.”

A terrifying strength surrounded Lin Feng, and his blood almost stopped flowing. However, when Qin Gan released that strength, another Qi rolled in from outside of the courtyard and surrounded him!

“Watch your words!” said a voice dismissively.

Qin Gan didn't recall his Qi. He looked at Lin Feng and said, “You want my Ancestor to be stolen by the Snow Clan?”

“If you're brave, prevent them from doing so. If you have no balls, then stop talking shit. Do you want me to call your ancestor again and make him slap your face again?” said Lin Feng icily and disdainfully.

Qin Gan remained silent and grunted icily, before rising to leave. While leaving, he said, “Hurry and leave, or you won't have any chance to survive.”

After Qin Gan left, silhouettes flickered. The Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty and Yan Di landed in front of Lin Feng.

“I was right, you see? The Snow Clan sent a Saint, they're cruel,” said Yan Di.

“Old buddy, do you have any solution to propose?” asked Lin Feng to Yan Di.

“Even though I am an incredibly strong cultivator, a Saint is ultimately stronger than me. They can make the world collapse. They have transcended worldliness and attained holiness. I'm powerless when facing a Saint,” said Yan Di, shaking his head.

Lin Feng was mortified and said, “The other day, you didn't tell me that.”

This bastard, did he want Lin Feng to die?

Lin Feng couldn't deal with a Saint. Even if he controlled a Saint's body, it wouldn't work. Now the Saint was sleeping anyway, so Lin Feng couldn't even use his body.

“You won't die though,” said Yan Di patiently. “And so many people are watching you, you can't really escape. If the Snow Clan's Saint wants to find you, he'll find you easily.”

Lin Feng remained silent. What could he do against a Saint?

Champion University, the Holy Spirit Dynasty, everyone he knew, nobody could help him!

Everybody looked pensive, including the Holy Spirit Holy Emperor. Lin Feng had shaken up the whole town. He had a Saint's body, he had killed a Holy Emperor, he had made all the Dynasties and the Ancient Holy Clans shut up, and now, after a short time, he was in danger again. It was different this time, however, it was a Saint who was looking for him. The Celestial Evolution Holy Clan and the Holy Spirit Dynasty couldn't protect him anymore!

He was doomed, it seemed!

Today, the Holy Spirit Dynasty was calm. The next day, a bright light appeared in the distance and illuminated the ancient town. The members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty were terrified. Many people gathered and moved together. They had to be vigilant!

Lin Feng was going to die. He had survived the first battle, but this time, it was different.

Many people wanted to kill Lin Feng and steal his treasures!

The Holy Spirit Dynasty didn't organize a banquet this time, they just remained silent. People from Qi Tian Holy Town hadn't thought the situation would deteriorate so badly.

The Tianci Dynasty, the Great Desert Dynasty, the Ancient Jade Dynasty and the Qin Dynasty joined hands. The Qin Dynasty still wanted Lin Feng to die, even though Qin Gan had secretly gone to see Lin Feng. Apart from the Dynasties, many other people had gathered, including some groups which weren't from Qi Tian Holy Town. Lin Feng hadn't thought that the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan would also come.

The historical remains had appeared in the Saint's World. Almost all the groups of the Dark Night Region knew about what was going on there and were attracted. The Pei Clan and the Ji

Clan had been paying attention to Lin Feng the whole time, he just hadn't known about it.

Snowflakes appeared in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. The pressure was terrifying. Some people started panicking as it developed into a blizzard.

It was extremely calm, though. Many people had fled to small worlds. When a Saint fought, people around could easily be killed.

At the same time, some silhouettes flickered and appeared where Lin Feng was.

“Since you're all here, just appear!” said a loud voice. Everybody in the Holy Spirit Dynasty heard the voice. At that moment, the strong cultivators of the Dynasty sensed an oppressive energy. It was even more dangerous than the previous time. Those who had failed the previous time weren't going to accept losing a second time!

The atmosphere started trembling, and an earthquake started in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Many buildings started collapsing, adding to the terror.

Lin Feng raised his head, sensing the invisible and intangible strength. The strong cultivators around him formed a curtain so he was under less pressure.

“It's going to be worse than I thought,” said the old Taoist Priest indifferently. Lin Feng could also sense how terrifying the pressure was.

“Last time, they failed and I killed a few great emperors. I even killed the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty. Now, they're going crazy. Even without the Saint, they are so furious that they could win,” Lin Feng mused calmly.

Yan Di shook his head. The Holy Spirit Dynasty and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan couldn't do much.

Strong cultivators appeared all around. Yan Di glanced at those people. He didn't understand; the Snow Clan had sent a Saint, why did they need so many people? And where was the Saint?

A terrifying sword appeared in the sky, surrounded by millions of arcs of lightning. It instantly crushed the curtain of energies created by all the strong cultivators. Lin Feng sensed the terrifying pressure and was driven to his knees.

“Lin Feng, you must die today,” stated someone icily. He jumped forwards and some power bombarded Lin Feng's will.

“Lin Feng, you're insolent, you dared kill a Holy Emperor, Qi Tian Holy Town disowns you!” shouted a celestial being of the Ancient Jade Dynasty. More strength attacked Lin Feng, and he coughed with pain. He was injured now...

It was easy for Saint Emperors and Celestial Emperors to injure him!

“They want me to use the Saint's body. The Saint is already here!” Lin Feng realized, raising his head. It kept snowing. An old man had appeared high up in the sky, looking aloof and arrogant. He was as white as snow.

He was the Saint of the Snow Clan!

Chapter 2052: Truth

“Holy Spirit Dynasty, give up. Lin Feng is going to die,” said the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty. Lin Feng had killed their previous Holy Emperor, it was a tragedy that had to be avenged!

Holy Emperor Ling glanced around, the pressure on him boiling now.

A strong cultivator stepped forward and terrifying fissures appeared, as if the sky were about to collapse.

A light beam appeared, followed by a destructive hand.

Sand exploded all around and turned into a dragon. It looked like the end of the world.

Lin Feng couldn't stand up anymore. His bones kept crackling. He had the sensation the world had fallen onto his back. There wasn't going to be a second failure!

“Bunch of bastards. I can't stand this,” said Yan Di. He had cast a deployment spell, but it was already broken. The pressure was so immense that it had destroyed his deployment spell.

A silhouette landed in front of Lin Feng. She was wearing a black cloak, and looked graceful. She looked much taller at the moment. At her back, a gigantic pitch-black silhouette appeared as she sat down cross-legged. Holy Spirits appeared and started rotating about them.

“Thank you very much,” said Lin Feng. That woman looked fragile but she was protecting him. He felt moved and touched. Even though they had made love, they weren't close.

“Hmph!” Up in the sky, people grunted icily. Some strong cultivators continued closing in. The pressure was getting worse and worse. What were the Holy Spirit Dynasty and the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan going to do against so many people?

Their protective energies kept breaking apart, and Qi spilled over. Energies kept reaching Lin Feng. If anyone tried to protect Lin Feng, they were going to kill them!

“Destructive Dao.” Lin Feng frowned and saw an old man who was releasing Destructive Dao.

Lin Feng raised his head. There were many Holy Spirits around the woman, she reacted instantly. The Destructive Dao reached one of her Holy Spirits and destroyed it.

“You can come down, they won’t kill me,” said Lin Feng.

“But you’ll get injured. That would be a catastrophe,” the woman answered warmly. Lin Feng didn’t understand why she was being so kind to him.

“If you get injured, it would be worse,” Lin Feng replied calmly.

“I won’t. Don’t worry,” said the woman hoarsely.

Lin Feng frowned. This woman was from the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he couldn’t know her from someone else... but on the other hand, he had a familiar feeling. She sounded even more familiar than before. Did they know each other from somewhere else?

“Who are you?” asked Lin Feng. He had doubts for the first time.

The woman shivered and replied, “I’m Lin Qiong Sheng’s mother.”

Lin Feng remained silent. He didn’t ask more, especially now that he was facing a huge danger.

Cultivators focus on cultivation not because they’re obsessives, but also because they want to protect themselves and their families, thought Lin Feng. That was life in the cultivation world!

In the sky, the defensive energies of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan and the Holy Spirit Dynasty kept crackling. The members of the Snow Clan had also arrived. They were in the sky above Lin

Feng and looking down at him icily. They had to destroy the defenses first, and then they'd oppress Lin Feng!

“Kill that woman!” said an old man of the Snow Clan icily. The pressure became even worse, rumbling in the air and shaking the ground. The woman was being targeted!

A snowy sword descended from the sky. A Holy Spirit cultivator blocked it. However, someone also flitted up and attacked by surprise.

The woman was startled. All the silhouettes around her condensed and turned into a gigantic sword, as the air kept erupting from the conflict of energies.

The Snow Clan's Saint is not showing up?, wondered Yan Di. He was surprised. He hadn't expected the Snow Clan would force the others to surround Lin Feng.

—

At that moment, two people were together up in the sky. They were seated and looked calm. One of them was snowy white, the Saint from the Snow Clan. The other person was Shi Jue Lao Xian. They were watching the events below, not fighting.

At the same time, some crackling sounds spread in the air. Mountains exploded. The strong cultivator of the Snow Clan said, “Many people think you're a half Saint, I wouldn't have thought you would have become a real one. But I won't give up today.”

“He obtained the Saint. It should be his. You're a Saint, how could you fight against a kid?” Shi Jue Lao Xian rebutted calmly.

“That boy offended the Snow Clan. He must die. And the body will be ours.”

“I can't prevent you from killing him and stealing the Saint's body. However, if you kill that boy, be prepared to see some of your young cultivators die too, including people who have king-type bodies,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian, casually drinking some liquor.

He was angry though, what had Lin Feng done to the Snow Clan?

“You’re threatening me?” demanded the Saint of the Snow Clan. Everything started freezing around them.

“You just said you were going to kill that little boy. You’re threatening me. I’m not threatening you,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly. He didn’t look angry, but the air began to thicken around him. Some fissures appeared in the ice around them.

They both remained silent.

The atmosphere was explosive. The energies were invisible and intangible.

—

The woman protecting Lin Feng kept being attacked. Even if the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s strong cultivators did all they could to protect him, they wouldn’t be able to hold out for very long.

“That’s enough!” When Lin Feng saw the woman get attacked unceasingly, he rose up into the air.

Eighty-one dragons appeared in the sky. Everybody looked at Lin Feng, waiting. Someone was going to kill him now!

The crowd was startled, because even if some people had come because they wanted Lin Feng to die, the ultimate goal was still to let the Snow Clan kill him!

“Go down!” Two cultivators descended from the sky and grabbed Lin Feng, he couldn’t move anymore. Lin Feng was helpless, surrounded by too many people. Some attacks moved towards the cyan dragons, but the cyan dragons destroyed them.

“Ji Clan.” Lin Feng was agonized and furious. The woman suddenly turned into an illusion and rose up to start attacking the cyan dragons.

She coughed up blood, and her veil fell down, soaked with blood. Lin Feng’s heart twitched. How valiant!

“Let me go!” shouted Lin Feng furiously. He wanted to break free from the two people. The woman kept attacking the cyan dragons, she was doing all she could.

She kept coughing blood. Lin Feng felt extremely sad, wondering why she was taking all those risks to protect him. Was it because they had made love? Or was it because of Lin Qiong Sheng?

Lin Feng knew that all the Holy Spirits which appeared around her were not actually real bodies, they were illusions. But each time a body was destroyed, she was injured. However, she didn't stop protecting him. She was ready to die for him!

Finally, one cyan dragon was left. Lin Feng was a bit relieved. The two cultivators next to him also rose back to their previous positions. The last cyan dragon exploded.

Those dragons had been released by a Saint Emperor. One dragon was enough to kill Lin Feng. She had lost many Spirits to destroy them!

At that moment, she fell down from the sky softly. Lin Feng's heart kept twitching.

He raced over to her and caught her. It was the first time he saw her face, as her veil had fallen off. When he saw her, it felt like the world was collapsing. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to explode.

“No....” Suddenly, Lin Feng's eyes turned grey, he looked crushed, and his heart was shattered into a thousand pieces.

Chapter 2053: Balance

At that moment, Lin Feng understood why she had been willing to bear his child, and why she had done all she could to protect him.

All of that was because of one thing: the trees of love.

Demon energies kept emerging from his body and pulsing around him. He raised his head and stared at the strong cultivator of the Ji Clan. "If I don't die, I'll destroy the Ji Clan!"

His voice contained cursing strength. Even the Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan shivered when he heard Lin Feng. If he didn't manage to kill Lin Feng today, someday Lin Feng would become stronger and he would kill them all!

However, since Lin Feng said that, the Ji Clan was even more motivated to kill him right away!

—

In the sky above the clouds, a Saint's energies were everywhere, fissures appeared in the sky. Someone descended from the sky. When the Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan saw that, he started shaking violently. He obviously recognized that person: Shi Jue Lao Xian. He had killed some of their people in the Holy City too!

Things didn't look good anymore...

At the same time, more snowflakes appeared, and the region turned into an icy region. An old man as white as snow appeared. When the attackers saw him, they were relieved. The Saint of the Snow Clan had appeared!

Shi Jue Lao Xian had heard how furious Lin Feng was, so he descended from the sky. He felt sad for Lin Feng. The world was cruel. His disciple liked Lin Feng, but Lin Feng already had many women.

Lin Feng lowered his head and looked at the woman in his arms, grief welling up in him. He should have known it was her. She had become stronger than he would have ever thought, but in the end she still risked her life for him.

Lin Feng was convinced that You You had never forgotten about him. Maybe his Watcher had even been You You. He hated himself for not having been able to protect her.

But why had she refused to show her face?

Was it because she had pledged an oath as a Watcher?

Lin Feng released life strength into her. He was crying, his tears falling onto her face. She didn't move, and didn't even look sad.

"You will definitely be fine!" Lin Feng released even more life strength, which flowed You You. The gods couldn't abandon her. At the same time, he stamped her soul.

"You You, you can't die. I want to raise Qiong Sheng with you," Lin Feng said gently. Shi Jue Lao Xian sighed.

"Kill him!" said someone icily. People were getting nervous again, and oppressive energies rose again.

"If anyone dares say that again, I'll kill them," said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly, as he downed his bottle. Everybody stopped talking. All the strong cultivators looked at the Snow Clan's Saint, as he was the only one who could compete with Shi Jue Lao Xian.

"You think you can stop everything alone? There are so many people here. You're ridiculous!" said the Snow Clan's Saint calmly. Even if he had to fight against Shi Jue Lao Xian, he didn't want to give up. Nobody would ever forget the Tianci Dynasty's Holy Emperor's death. Lin Feng was totally outraged now. Someday, if he became stronger, he'd get his revenge on all of them. They had to kill him!

"There's the Holy Spirit Dynasty too," said the Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. "We don't know why there are tensions

between the Snow Clan and Lin Feng. Surprisingly, they even sent a Saint to deal with him. However, Lin Feng is our Holy Dynasty Prince, and that woman is a holy woman of our Dynasty. She's an Imperial Concubine. We will do all we can to protect them."

"And the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan," Yan Di added emotionlessly.

The Snow Clan's Saint looked at those people and said calmly, "That's still not enough. Those people have all come here, whether you agree or not, it won't change anything. You have no way to protect yourself anymore."

The Snow Clan's Saint didn't care about Tang You You's life. He wasn't Lin Feng, he was a Saint. Even people who had king-type bodies didn't necessarily have the potential to become Saints. He didn't care about anyone, and he didn't fear anyone, either. The only one who could compete with him was Shi Jue Lao Xian. But even if Shi Jue Lao Xian helped the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan and the Holy Spirit Dynasty, it still wasn't enough. The Snow Clan didn't fear them!

Deva-Mara Kalpa strength rolled in waves in the air. Nobody cared though. Lin Feng's energies didn't affect them at all.

But at the same time, the two Saints gazed into the distance. A group of people was coming. The two Saints had noticed that group of people a while before, but now they were just starting to realize that those people had come because of this battle, and none of them looked weak.

"With us, that should be enough, right?" called out a loud voice. A group of people arrived to stand by Lin Feng. They looked relieved, they weren't too late. There were four Ancestors from Champion University, and six Saint Emperors with them. In total, they were a dozen Saint Emperors. It was a terrifying lineup.

In the three main cities of the Dark Night Region, there were universities, they had always remained discreet. There were eight

Ancestors in Champion University and now they were a dozen Saint Emperors, of course, they couldn't compete with Saints.

“Champion University!” the members of the Ji Clan were stupefied. Champion University surprisingly wanted to help Lin Feng. The strongest cultivators of Champion University were there.

Apart from Champion University, there were also people from the Animal World. Mister Xiao was there, too. With the strong cultivators of the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan and the Holy Spirit Dynasty, it might be enough to deal with everyone there.

Lin Feng looked at Mister Xiao, he was still holding Tang You You. He immediately flew up to Mister Xiao. Mister Xiao immediately understood what Lin Feng wanted.

“Mister Xiao, save her,” said Lin Feng, handing Tang You You over to Mister Xiao.

“Leave it to me,” said Mister Xiao, taking Tang You You. He descended from the sky and frowned. Tang You You's injuries were very serious.

After understanding Dao strength, cultivators finally truly became cultivators. Their path was determined. When Lin Feng had seen Qiu Yue Xin in the Dao Destroying Mountain, he had seen how painful it was.

And Tang You You had been attacked severely. Her soul and meridians were injured. If Lin Feng hadn't stamped her soul, she would have been killed.

Mister Xiao took out a pellet and put it into Tang You You's mouth. At the same time, he released a awe-inspiring strength which started flowing throughout her body and healing her.

At the same time, Deva-Mara Kalpa strength descended from the sky onto Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng looked unaffected. He just looked at his enemies around icily. He would remember his friends

and enemies forever!

For the Dynasties of Qi Tian Holy Town, it was their second failure! For the Ji Clan, it was the third time!

Chapter 2054: Agreement

Nobody had thought things would end up this way. Both sides were terrifyingly powerful. The Snow Clan, four Dynasties, some Ancient Holy Clans... Surprisingly, all those people together couldn't oppress Lin Feng. And even two Saints had appeared! It was unprecedented...

However, nobody looked relaxed, they were all on edge.

"Master, the Snow Clan initiated everything. We did all we could to help you, we can't give up halfway," spoke up a Holy Emperor. Lin Feng had to die! The Dynasties were worried because Lin Feng also controlled a Saint's body!

"The Dynasties have gone too far. You're humiliating Champion University," said Ancestor Shi Tian icily. In the distance, some whistling sounds announced the arrival of a few younger people.

"You're insolent!" shouted the Holy Emperor of the Great Desert Dynasty explosively. Those young people were from the Great Desert Dynasty.

"Champion University are arrogant bastards!" agreed the Holy Jade Princess. Some strong cultivators of Champion University grabbed her.

At the same time, the members of the Zhuo Clan grunted coldly. A young man was there: Zhuo Qing!

"We are? So many Dynasties have come to attack Lin Feng, our disciple, and now you're insulting us? How shameless! You can try and kill our geniuses, but we can't protect him? If Lin Feng dies today, we'll kill all your young people," declared Ancestor Shi Tian icily.

"And the Ji Clan, and the Pei Clan, Ji Chang is a student in Champion University, we never asked anything from him, but he better not do anything dodgy. He's lucky he's a Champion."

“You better draw a clear line between Champion University and the tensions between Lin Feng and the Ji Clan,” said the Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan icily.

“Hmph!” Ancestor Shi Tian grunted icily. Lin Feng understood that the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan weren’t the only Clans which were involved.

“How noisy. You came and now you’re threatening Lin Feng, an emperor. That’s beneath you. If Lin Feng dies today, the Celestial Evolution Holy Clan will help Champion University kill you.”

“And the Tianci Dynasty,” said the Holy Emperor of the Tianci Dynasty icily.

“So, we want to kill Lin Feng, does it mean you’ll try and destroy the Snow Clan?” asked the Saint of the Snow Clan indifferently. Everybody was startled. The only one who could stop him was Shi Jue Lao Xian.

“If the Snow Clan attacks Lin Feng, the other members of the Snow Clan won’t leave today,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly yet grimly. The crowd shivered. Saints could also get angry. The Snow Clan talked as if Shi Jue Lao Xian wasn’t there, and it made him angry.

“And if great emperors attack Lin Feng, I’ll kill them too,” Shi Jue Lao Xian added indifferently. Those who had come to kill Lin Feng all grimaced. Shi Jue Lao Xian forbade them from attacking Lin Feng.

Shi Jue Lao Xian was angry. The Snow Clan’s Saint was angry, too. He had no choice but to give up, otherwise, his people would be killed.

“I won’t necessarily kill him today, then,” said the Snow Clan’s Saint to Shi Jue Lao Xian. He had to give up.

Shi Jue Lao Xian understood what the Saint meant.

“I know you hate him, but no matter what, I’ll protect him. If

you don't give up, I'll keep him with me," said Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly. Neither of them flinched.

After a long time, the Snow Clan's Saint sighed and said, "First, he must give us the Saint's body. He must also give us our Snow Clan's person. That way, we won't attack him anymore."

"Lin Feng obtained the Saint's body alone. If you want to oppress him and send extremely strong cultivators to deal with him, we won't tolerate that. If Lin Feng gives me the Saint's body, will you try to take it from me?" asked Shi Jue Lao Xian, "And regarding the Snow Clan's person, what is that supposed to mean Lin Feng?"

"She's my wife. She's never been to the Snow Clan. You think you can take my wife away?" spat Lin Feng, icily staring at the Saint.

"Indeed, and if he weren't here, you wouldn't be that lucky," said the Saint. Even if Lin Feng was a bit lucky, he couldn't obtain everything he wanted. Lin Feng was speechless.

"Besides, initially, we sent her abroad for her to become stronger. She has a celestial king-type body, she's Xue Ling Long," said the Saint to Shi Jue Lao Xian.

No wonder, thought Shi Jue Lao Xian. The celestial being of the Snow Clan was Lin Feng's wife, they were furious at the situation, and it was absolutely normal.

Shi Jue Lao Xian looked at Lin Feng. Maybe Lin Feng needed some time to become stronger.

"I agree. Since she has the celestial king-type body of the Snow Clan, you can take her," said Shi Jue Lao Xian.

"No!" refused Lin Feng.

"Don't worry," said Yan Di to Lin Feng.

"Little boy, sometimes, you have to make compromises. After all, you're not strong enough, many people can kill you," said Shi Jue

Lao Xian to Lin Feng telepathically.

“She’s my wife and she’s pregnant!” retorted Lin Feng, his face turning grey.

Shi Jue Lao Xian was stupefied and glanced at the Snow Saint, understanding something.

Shi Jue Lao Xian continued, “But you must ensure the child’s safety.”

“The child has the Snow Clan’s blood too,” replied the Saint icily.

“And I have another request.” said Shi Jue Lao Xian. The Snow Saint frowned. Shi Jue Lao Xian had many requests...

“Within twenty years, I will take Lin Feng to the Snow Clan. If he can defeat one of the kings of the Snow Clan, you will have to agree to their wedding and you will give Lin Feng’s wife back to him,” said Shi Jue Lao Xian.

The Snow Clan’s Saint suddenly burst out laughing and said, “That is a joke! He’s quite talented, but he’s only a high-level emperor, he will never be able to defeat one of the kings within twenty years! But if he can, I agree! I will even organize a gigantic wedding ceremony for them!”

The Snow Clan had three kings, the strongest had already reached the top of the Di Qi layer and was extremely strong. Within twenty years, he would become even stronger. Twenty years weren’t enough for Lin Feng to become that strong!

“If he can’t do it, I’ll kill him at the Snow Clan,” said the Snow Saint icily.

Yan Di initially thought he’d call the Destiny Shrine if Shi Jue Lao Xian didn’t manage to convince the Snow Clan’s Saint, but for now he remained silent. Even though the challenge would be difficult for Lin Feng, it would also be a good way to become much stronger. It would be beneficial for him.

Little boy, don't blame me. You need such challenges. You're too weak, you can't protect your wife. It's painful, but within that short time, you can become stronger. My destiny also depends on yours, according to the Diviner, thought Yan Di. Lin Feng would have been furious if Yan Di had told him that.

Shi Jue Lao Xian looked at Lin Feng and said patiently, "You have no choice. Or do you want your wife to die with you?"

Lin Feng remained silent, his eyes bloodshot. His heart was bleeding. He hated himself for being powerless. He didn't have his life under control. Two people were calmly talking and deciding his destiny. He needed to reach their level as soon as possible!

"Since you obtained the Saint's body on your own, you can keep it, the Snow Clan doesn't want it anymore," Shi Jue Lao Xian said indifferently.

The Snow Saint looked aloof as he said, "I invited all these Dynasties, will you come to an agreement with them, too?"

"What do you want?" frowned Shi Jue Lao Xian.

"Within twenty years, you said he'd fight against one of our kings, but for that, he must prove he's able to. Since you forbade great emperors from attacking him, make him fight against the strongest geniuses of the Huang Qi layer of the Dynasties and Holy Clans. If he dies, then the agreement is useless."

Chapter 2055: Insane

“Fight against the strongest geniuses of the Huang Qi layer from the Dynasties and Ancient Holy Clans?” repeated Shi Jue Lao Xian calmly.

“He must prove he’s strong enough to fight against a strong cultivator of the Snow Clan. If he dies, then it’s useless to agree on something like that,” said the Snow Clan’s Saint indifferently.

All the members of the Dynasties and Holy Clans were nervous. They had all hoped Lin Feng would die as soon as possible.

Lin Feng was a terrifying fighter, and very talented. He had killed Wang Jian, but fighting against all the strongest cultivators of the Huang Qi layer was different. Some people were even stronger than Wang Jian. Zhuo Qing, for example, had a Diamond Indestructible King-Type Body.

“Lin Feng, what do you think?” Shi Jue Lao Xian asked Lin Feng.

“I agree,” said Lin Feng, his eyes were filled with Death intent. He looked like a dead person. He had been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength for the fourth time in front of everybody. His demon Qi kept racing throughout his body.

He wanted to kill!

“Alright, all the geniuses, come. Little boy, hand Xue Ling Long over to us. If you die, we won’t know where to find her,” said the Snow Clan’s Saint icily.

Lin Feng flitted away. So many strong cultivators were there, he couldn’t escape anyway...

—

He entered his room and sealed the entrance, so nobody could see how he was going to take Meng Qing out. Meng Qing appeared in front of him and smiled at him.

“Meng Qing, I am powerless. I can’t protect you and Zhe Tian,” said Lin Feng, he feeling guilty and extremely sad. He felt so powerless...

“You silly boy. You should have sent me to them before. If you had died, I would want to die too,” said Meng Qing, smiling and caressing Lin Feng’s hair, trying to cheer Lin Feng up. She knew that Lin Feng was suffering atrociously. There was hope, but he had to stay alive!

When Lin Feng heard her soft and gentle voice, and saw that she was trying to cheer him up, he felt even sadder. But he also felt even more determined. He hated himself, he was a weakling! He was a bit talented, but that was very, very far from being enough!

Meng Qing hugged him, letting Lin Feng feel her warmth. When would they meet again? She told him, “Don’t worry. I will take care of our baby. The Snow Clan is my clan, too. Don’t worry about me.”

“Alright...” Lin Feng nodded. If anything happened to Meng Qing and their baby, Lin Feng would definitely try to avenge them. He told her grimly, “Meng Qing, give me some time and I’ll definitely come to pick you up.”

“I’m sure you will. Take care of yourself first.”

—

Lin Feng brought Meng Qing out. When the Snow Clan’s members saw Meng Qing, they all looked furious. The Saint said to Meng Qing calmly, “As expected, you’re Ling Long from our clan. Unfortunately, that little boy tarnished you.”

They had sent Ling Long out because of the Destiny Shrine’s Diviner, trusting him. Initially, they wanted her to come back and get married to a king of their clan. They wanted to see whether Meng Qing would be able to give birth to another king or not, that would have been a fourth one for the Clan. Unfortunately, the plan

was ruined, and Lin Feng was to blame!

—

All the geniuses of the Region seemed to already be in Qi Tian Holy Town. Some people, like Ji Chang, had been there for a while.

The Saint of the Snow Clan waved, and an ice world appeared, many battle stages visible through the doorway.

“Everybody, go in. I control this world, nobody can use Great Imperial Weapons or I’ll kill them straight away,” said the Snow Clan’s Saint indifferently.

“Master, can the secret techniques of our clans be used?” asked the Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan.

“Secret techniques are part of a cultivator’s own strength, so no problem,” said the Snow Clan’s Saint calmly. Young combatants headed into the world one after another. Lin Feng raised his head and death strength filled the air about him. He also rose up in the air, Demon intent raging around him.

——

In the ice world, Lin Feng faced many incredible geniuses. He felt crazed. He knew how terrifying it was to fight against groups of people.

Little bastard, look at yourself, thought Yan Di. He knew it was going to be very difficult for Lin Feng, but it was a good experience.

This wasn’t a fair battle. Lin Feng was talented, but those people were not weaklings.

Zhuo Qing, Diamond Indestructible King-type Body.

Holy Jade Princess, mysterious powers.

Ji Chang, Champion. If he used his secret technique, he could have the strength of a great emperor.

Prince of the Great Desert Dynasty, Prince of the Tianci Dynasty... but the Qin Dynasty didn't get involved...

And there were the geniuses of the Pei Clan and a few Ancient Holy Clans. Eight geniuses, eight incredible geniuses from the Dark Night Region. Those people all had the potential to become Saint Emperors someday. However, now they were going to fight against Lin Feng. They all wanted to kill him!

Zhuo Qing and the others had mixed feelings. They were all geniuses, but eight geniuses surrounding Lin Feng wasn't anything glorious. They knew it was important, so they had to kill Lin Feng, and so they didn't hesitate.

At Zhuo Qing's back, a golden wind appeared, breaking everything on its way as it started moving towards Lin Feng. That attack could easily kill a high-level emperor. Ordinary high-level emperors couldn't withstand a single attack from Zhuo Qing.

But Lin Feng wasn't an ordinary cultivator. He punched out, the blow screaming through the air. Lin Feng used pure strength to smash that golden tornado!

The Jade Princess turned into an illusion, Lin Feng saw her silhouettes all over the place. They all moved towards him from every direction.

Lin Feng jumped and released explosive demon lights. His Kalpa strength surged out, but the illusions were extremely powerful. Lin Feng kept rending the thirty-seven images!

Ji Chang also attacked, releasing Destructive Dao and cyan dragons to attack, joined by all the other geniuses, one after another.

Lin Feng was in a dead end. It looked bad for him.

His Demon intent dashed to the skies, his blood boiled, and sharp Qi emerged. He turned into a gigantic sword and absorbed more strength, his Qi filling the air. Energies crashed onto him, but he

remained motionless.

He's crazy!, whispered the crowd. So many energies were crashing onto Lin Feng's body from all those strong geniuses. However, Lin Feng didn't flinch and confronted them straightforwardly.

His sword began to keen. He slowly turned around, and they all stopped. They knew that Lin Feng had killed Prince Yan and Wang Jian using this technique.

That sword was oppressive and terrifying. Finally, he moved towards Prince Chen. The Tianci cultivators were all furious and grimaced.

"Bastard!" shouted the Tianci Holy Emperor. He remembered the giant again, when he had killed the Holy Emperor. He was too scared of this young man, he was going crazy.

The sharp sword streaked across the sky. At that moment, Prince Chen's face turned deathly pale. He released all his strength to defend himself. Nobody could rescue him, since Lin Feng had chosen to kill him first, the others didn't mind. They weren't going to risk their lives to save Prince Chen!

The gigantic sword reached Prince Chen and pierced through his body. Everybody shivered as Lin Feng reappeared. He coughed up blood, but his eyes contained a killing will!

Chapter 2056: How Tragic

“Little Chen!” shouted the Tianci cultivators, their faces horrified and sad. They had lost both Prince Chen and Prince Yan! They had been the most talented young people of their Dynasty!

Lin Feng had warned the Tianci Dynasty, he had even killed their Holy Emperor. However, they had decided to come anyway. That’s why Lin Feng chose to kill Prince Chen first. His Ancient Holy Techniques had sufficed to kill Prince Yan, so of course they were also enough to kill Prince Chen!

His Qi continued surging around him. Holy Spirits appeared and fused together with his body, holy marks appeared under his feet. At the same time, he released a sharp weapon Qi, and also condensed ancient strength. The combined Qi began to build up ominously. Those who were attacking Lin Feng were shocked and started trembling. This bastard was crazy...

Lin Feng used his Ancient Holy Technique again, and killed another cultivator from an Ancient Clan. He continued mercilessly. His sword was too sharp, and his oppressive strength was incredible, so they couldn’t bring him down. Everybody understood that Lin Feng wasn’t just fighting, he was risking his life!

Each time he attacked, he was risking his life. He could die at any time. However, it worked, as he had already killed five geniuses!

The members of the Dynasties and Ancient Holy Clans all had twisted expressions. Five people, Lin Feng had killed five people! His clothes were already soaked with blood. He looked like a death god.

His gaze turned on Ji Chang.

Three geniuses were left: Zhuo Qing, the Holy Jade Princess, and Ji Chang. It wasn’t easy to kill Lin Feng. Likewise, killing those

people would be very difficult. Zhuo Qing had a Diamond Indestructible King-type Body, his defense was incredible, Ji Chang had his secret technique, and the Holy Jade Princess seemed to control illusions.

At that moment, they were staring at Lin Feng. He was coughing blood, and looked totally insane. He didn't care anymore, he was ready to risk his life!

“Let's attack together! He looks tired!” said Zhuo Qing. The three cultivators' silhouettes flickered and they threw themselves at Lin Feng. Golden lights glittered and shot towards him.

A Holy Spirit sword appeared in front of Lin Feng like a living thing. It started cutting apart the golden lights.

“Die!” shouted Zhuo Qing explosively. A golden spear appeared and shot across the sky like a thunderbolt. At the same time, he raised his hand and a golden cauldron appeared and bore down on Lin Feng.

The Holy Jade Princess also attacked, inundating him with illusions. However, Lin Feng closed his eyes and merely punched out in her direction, his Death intent turning into a tornado. At the same time, his Nihilism Sword moved towards the three of them.

Ji Chang ran towards Lin Feng. With every step, the ground exploded. Fissures appeared around him, cyan dragons roaring furiously, and trying to devour Lin Feng.

However, Lin Feng turned into many silhouettes and suddenly withdrew. They didn't know which one was the real one.

“Destroy!” shouted Zhuo Qing icily. Golden lights blotted out the sky. They kept destroying Lin Feng's silhouettes one after another. They didn't want to give him a single chance!

The Holy Spirits moved back into Lin Feng's body, and he released Sky Absorbing cosmic energies. At the same time, his sharp weapon Qi appeared again.

Zhuo Qing and the two others grit their teeth. Lin Feng was injured, and surprisingly, he wanted to turn into a sword again, he was definitely crazy!

“This time, we’ll definitely kill him!” said Ji Chang icily. Lin Feng turned into a sword and drove at Ji Chang!

“Stop!” shouted Ji Chang, releasing more Destructive strength moved towards the gigantic sword as fast as he could. At his back, Cyan Dragon Totems appeared in a glittering display. Zhuo Qing and the Holy Jade Princess didn’t waste time, either, attacking the gigantic sword as hard as they could.

However, the gigantic sword pierced through all their attacks and continued towards Ji Chang. The gigantic sword whistled furiously, it had to kill Ji Chang!

“Argh!” Ji Chang roared with rage, his Cyan Dragon Totems went back into his body and he turned into a cyan dragon. When the gigantic sword and the cyan dragons collided, it felt like time had stopped. Explosions and thunder spread out, and the shockwave burst over everyone. An oppressive strength was pushing against the cyan dragon!

“Die!” shouted Zhuo Qing, turning golden. He landed in front of the gigantic sword and golden energies crashed onto the gigantic sword. The gigantic sword vibrated violently, space splitting all around it.

The Jade Princess couldn’t miss such a good opportunity. She also moved gracefully into position and attacked the gigantic sword as well.

The members of the Holy Spirit Dynasty and Champion University were shaking. The combined attacks were terrifying. Could Lin Feng survive?

The three of them continued chasing the silhouettes they hadn’t destroyed. A strong wind appeared around Zhuo Qing, but the

silhouettes continued escaping too.

The gigantic sword released a boundless strength, bearing down on a cyan dragon and two people. On the sword, marks gradually appeared...

“No...” When Meng Qing saw that, her heart twitched. If the sword broke, Lin Feng was going to die!

Behind Zhuo Qing, one of Lin Feng’s clones suddenly released oppressive energies. He raised his fist and struck at Zhuo Qing’s head.

“Oh no!” Zhuo Qing’s face turned deathly pale. He released even more golden energies to protect himself.

He wasn’t the only one. The Holy Jade Princess’ face also turned deathly pale. She started running away, trying to dodge. However, the gigantic sword released even more pressure. They were frightened as the weight of the world crashed down on them. Lin Feng’s goal was their total destruction!

His horrifying physical strength crashed down onto the golden body. Demon lights exploded and penetrated into Zhuo Qing’s brain. Zhuo Qing’s head trembled at the impact.

The Holy Jade Princess sped up, she was being hunted by Lin Feng’s clones. She didn’t know what to do, and started panicking. A death punch appeared, it looked unavoidable, unstoppable, she could barely see it coming. The punch crashed onto her and blood splashed out.

A terrifying sword Qi sliced through the cyan dragon’s body. It roared desperately as blood splashed and stained the gigantic sword. The gigantic body fell down from the sky and crashed onto the ground before reverting to Ji Chang. Sword intent was tearing through his body.

“Argh!” Zhuo Qing shouted furiously. He attacked Lin Feng’s clone, but the clone went back into the gigantic sword.

At the same time, the Holy Jade Princess was going crazy as she ran towards Lin Feng's clone. The gigantic sword struck out at Zhuo Qing and the Holy Jade Princess, who were blasted away. They both crashed onto the ground, unable to stand up.

The gigantic sword became less dazzling, turning back into Lin Feng again. He fell down from the sky.

At that moment, outside of the ice world, everybody remained silent. Nobody had expected this. That was a real battle, Lin Feng had risked his life from the beginning to the end. He was walking on the Path of Life and Death, but he wasn't immortal.

The four fighters didn't stand up.

Meng Qing was crying. She whispered, "If he dies, I will die too."

The Saint frowned, and Shi Jue Lao Xian asked, "Is that enough?"

At that moment, everybody looked to the Snow Saint, who was staring at the ice world. He sighed and said, "If he doesn't die, I hope you can bring him to the Snow Clan in twenty years."

He waved his hand. Crackling sounds spread in the air, the ice world disappeared and he said to the others of his clan, "Let's go."

Less and less snowflakes fell from the sky as they disappeared in the distance. Meng Qing was still crying...

Shi Jue Lao Xian, the members of the Zhuo Clan, and the others all took away their people.

Mister Xiao brought Tang You You to Lin Feng and checked out Lin Feng. He said, "I'll take him back to the tribe."

"Alright, go," agreed Shi Jue Lao Xian, waving his hand. A holy strength penetrated into Lin Feng's body to protect him.

Mister Xiao and the members of Champion University left together. Very quickly, everybody had left. Shi Jue Lao Xian looked at the remaining people icily.

“Hmph!” Shi Jue Lao Xian didn’t attack them. Lin Feng could solve his problems alone. Shi Jue Lao Xian hoped Lin Feng wouldn’t disappoint him, he wanted to take him to the Snow Clan twenty years from now!

Chapter 2057: Lin Zhe Tian

The news quickly spread throughout Qi Tian Holy Town. Everybody was astonished.

The crowd had not thought Lin Feng would undergo another terrifying battle after the previous time when he had borrowed the Saint's strength. And two Saints had shown up, how unbelievable...

Everybody in Qi Tian Holy Town was talking about the fight on the streets. Even the historical remains hadn't stirred up so much excitement!

"According to those who there, Lin Feng used all his strength to fight against the most outstanding emperors of the region. He risked his life and killed five people!"

"I've heard of that too. In the end, Ji Chang, the Holy Jade Princess, and Zhuo Qing were all badly injured, too. I wonder if they're still alive?"

"Maybe they are dead, that would be tragic. If that's the case, Lin Feng will definitely die."

Some people didn't believe that Lin Feng had fought against eight geniuses. They were thinking that they would have to fight against him if they bumped into him.

Besides, many people said many different things. They were convinced that Zhuo Qing could already compete with Lin Feng on his own. According to them, Lin Feng wasn't that terrifying. However, Lin Feng was becoming more and more famous in the whole region.

People started forgetting about the historical remains in the Saint's World. Nobody heard about Lin Feng anymore, he didn't show up in the outside world anymore. In Qi Tian Holy Town, the Tianci Dynasty, the Ancient Jade Dynasty, and the others all

thought that Lin Feng had fallen during that battle.

Geniuses continued rising in the eighteen cities of the Dark Night Region. Chu Chun Qiu became even more famous. He had killed a great emperor, and that great emperor used to be in the top ten of the Imperial Ranking List back in the day. Chu Chun Qiu was already the best cultivator of the Holy City, first on the Imperial Ranking List.

At the same time, people who were in the top ten also continued rising. After all, much time had passed since the Pathfinder Day. Some other people also started rising: Lang Ye of the World Clan, Hou Qing Lin of Champion University, Jian Mang, and so on. They were all considered dazzling cultivators.

Tiantai was also quite famous, with many geniuses. It was easier for them to find geniuses since they were in Champion University, and they were becoming more and more famous. They had surpassed Ji Chang's Club a long time ago. Tiantai's core disciples were extremely strong. Champion University was recruiting the most outstanding cultivators of the region, but Tiantai was stealing all of them.

Everybody in Champion University knew one name, even if they had never seen the person, as he used to be the most dazzling cultivator of Tiantai.

Lin Feng, where was he?!

——

The Snow Clan was a beautiful place. Snow kept falling all the time there. They had many snow beasts in the clan.

The elders of the Snow Clan were all different beasts. The strongest snow race also ruled the Snow Clan, they were known as the Imperial Clan.

The Imperial Clan of that generation wasn't composed of snow foxes, or Xue Ling Long wouldn't have had to go through such

hardships. The previous Imperial Clan used to be composed of snow foxes. Xue Ling Long hadn't been kicked out just because of the Diviner, the reasons were more complex. It was also due to the competition which existed between the different animal races within the clan.

On that day, a seven-month old baby was standing at the foot of a ten thousand year-old tree. He kept making sounds as he couldn't speak, but he could stand on his feet.

"Zhe Tian," said an old man, smiling and caressing the baby's head. "In five months, you'll be one year old. Initially, I wanted to offer you to the Snow Clan when you turned two, but you're already extraordinary, so we'll do it when you turn one. Try and break that tree."

if the members of the Snow Clan had seen that, they would have been jealous. A Saint Emperor of the Snow Clan was teaching a newborn cultivation. How incredible! Besides, that baby's blood wasn't even pure, he wasn't 100% from the Snow Clan.

The baby understood what the old man said, he made sounds and sounded excited. He looked extremely cute too, with big cheeks. Many women would fall in love with him in his adult life.

At that moment, the baby looked at the tree and spat out Qi. Holy celestial strength appeared around him and merged into his body. He was also absorbing pure Qi! The old man looked pleasantly surprised.

At the birth of the little boy, the Snow Clan had had discussions regarding how they should dispose of him. Many people wanted to abandon him. But when they saw he could absorb all sorts of pure Qi, the members of the Snow Clan had been astonished. They had agreed not to talk about his father at all. They also had to prevent him from meeting his mother too often. The Snow Clan would take care of his education.

The little boy punched the tree. However, the wind just rushed

by, and the tree was still there. The baby looked at the old man in a strange way, unhappy with the result. The old man burst into laughter and caressed the baby's head. He smiled and said, "Don't worry, after the ceremony, you'll start practicing cultivation for real."

"You haven't seen your mother for a long time, I'll take you to her. You must miss her," said the old man gazing into the distance and sighing. He couldn't do anything about that, the Snow Clan had agreed they would not meet too often. His mother was a snow fox queen in the Snow Clan, Xue Ling Long. The old man understood that even though he was teaching him, many other people were watching them.

He brought the baby to an ice palace. He was concerned by the one she had chosen: the Snow Clan's Ice Vision. Few people dared practice cultivation here. However, she had chosen this place. She was extremely strong. Of course, for her, it was a good place...

"Ling Long, Zhe Tian is here," said the old man as he entered the ice palace. A silhouette flickered as she appeared before him. She was snowy white and looked like a real celestial being... except for her anger. The old man didn't dare get close to her. She didn't look as gentle and soft as when she was with Lin Feng.

However, when she saw the baby, she suddenly smiled widely. Twenty years? So what? She would even wait for him for two hundred years if she had to! He would definitely come to the Snow Clan at some point!

"You have two hours," said the old man, before he left.

"Zhe Tian," said Meng Qing, hugging her little boy and kissing his cheeks. She took Lin Zhe Tian into the depths of the ice palace, that place was most isolated from the rest of the world.

"Mother," said Zhe Tian. If anyone else had heard him, they

would have been astonished. In the outside world, Zhe Tian didn't speak, people didn't think he could yet.

“Lin Zhe Tian, you remember what I've told you?” asked Meng Qing to the baby. She looked serious.

Zhe Tian nodded and said, “I only listen to you. I don't listen to them. My family name is Lin. My father's name is Lin Feng. I'm Lin Zhe Tian, I'm not Xue Zhe Tian. My father chose my name. Someday, I'll become a terrifying cultivator, and I'll take mommy away.”

If anyone from the clan had heard that, they would have been furious. Even if Lin Zhe Tian could meet Meng Qing only once a month, his intuition allowed him to understand that Meng Qing was his mother. Therefore, he listened to her and each time they met, he told her those things to show her he remembered.

Since his birth, he remembered his name, Lin Zhe Tian, and his father's name, Lin Feng!

Meng Qing hugged her baby tight and cried. She gazed into the distance and whispered, “Lin Feng, this is our baby.”

Lin Feng, where was he?!

Chapter 2058: Coming Back to Life

Outside of the Holy City, two people were lying on beds of straw. They were a handsome man and a beautiful woman, still asleep even after a long period of time. They looked like a dead imperial couple, lying there next to one another.

However, a mysterious strength floated around them. It felt like it could explode anytime.

In the distance, the wind moaned. A silhouette as big as a tower appeared. He looked at the two people and frowned, “Mister Xiao, Lin Feng and the girl haven’t woken up yet?”

“They haven’t completely recovered, but this year, they will eventually wake up.” said Mister Xiao, glancing at the two. He was a mighty healer. Lin Feng and You You hadn’t woken up, but Mister Xiao knew that it would happen sooner or later.

“Alright, I hope that when Lin Feng wakes up, he’ll be even stronger!” nodded Tantai. After what had happened to Lin Feng, Tantai heard about it in Champion University, and had decided to come to the tribe to check up on Lin Feng. He had told Champion University’s people that they didn’t need to worry about Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, in the Holy City, people say that you have fallen. Hurry up and wake up. Show those bastards that the strongest cultivator of Champion University is still here. Ji Chang is a piece of shit,” swore Tantai. Lin Feng had disappeared for an entire year. Ji Chang had reappeared six months ago. Therefore, he had become the best cultivator of Champion University once again.

Many people in Champion University believed Lin Feng had fallen. He hadn’t returned to the Holy City since the battle.

A fearsome Qi suddenly emerged from Lin Feng’s body, rapidly gaining strength. A wind of cosmic energies appeared all around him.

“Eh?” Mister Xiao was surprised, what was going on?

Tantai was startled too and asked, “Mister Xiao, is Lin Feng going to wake up?”

“I don’t know. Each time a thread of strength emerges from his body, I think he might wake up, but he doesn’t,” said Mister Xiao. He was intrigued.

When Tantai heard Mister Xiao, he frowned. But after those cosmic energies turn into a tornado, Tantai was relieved, this was a good thing...

At that moment, another mysterious strength appeared. Many lights glittered all around him, a spectacular sight.

“All sorts of strength?” Lin Feng looked as if he had been bathing in the Milky Way. It was very strange.

Lin Feng knew he had an affinity with all sorts of strength, that’s why he had decided to study several sorts of abstruse energies. He had turned his abstruse energies into cosmic energies.

Then, Lin Feng had obtained the Heavenly Grace Godly Wood and used it a lot. If he wanted to, he could study all sorts of cosmic energies. But that was too time-consuming, so he hadn’t. Lin Feng preferred focusing on a few.

But his affinity was incredible!

——

Lin Feng waved his hand, and the cosmic energies condensed into his hand, turning into a light beam and then into a whirlwind. That whirlwind contained all sorts of strengths.

“They’re fusing together, a little bit more and they’ll be in perfect harmony with my Dao.” whispered Lin Feng. Back then, he had already managed to see that mysterious strength a little bit, but it hadn’t been enough. One more step!

“Dao, my Dao.” Lin Feng said to himself. Suddenly, he opened his

eyes and the stars disappeared. His cosmic energies also dispersed.

—

“He’s awake!” Mister Xiao and Tantai’s eyes twinkled. Finally, Lin Feng was awake!

“Where am I?” asked Lin Feng, suddenly standing up. He hadn’t moved in a long time, so his body was a bit rigid, and his bones crackled loudly.

“Lin Feng, we are at my tribe,” said Mister Xiao. Lin Feng saw Mister Xiao and Tantai, and then You You, and his heart twitched.

“You You!” said Lin Feng, crouching down and stretching out his hand. He caressed her face and said, “Mister Xiao, how is You You doing?”

“Her injuries were as serious as yours, but she’s stronger than you, so she needed more time to recover. I don’t know when she’ll wake up, but you don’t need to worry,” Mister Xiao told him. Lin Feng nodded. He condensed some strength, stood up, and walked away. He said, “Mister Xiao, take me out of the tribe.”

“Eh?” Mister Xiao was a bit startled, but nodded and took Lin Feng out. When Lin Feng arrived outside of the tribe, ominous force emerged from his body. In the sky, Deva-Mara Kalpa strength condensed: the fifth time!

“My physical strength has increased again.” Lin Feng looked at the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength in the sky, then over at Mister Xiao.

“The strength in your body matured for a year, of course you became stronger. The effects of the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength you absorbed haven’t had time to appear,” said Mister Xiao. Lin Feng nodded. Deva-Mara Kalpa strength descended from the sky and bombarded Lin Feng once again. It felt great!

“Awesome,” said Lin Feng, raising his head to the skies, his eyes all black. How pleasant! The Deva-Mara Kalpa strength couldn’t

harm his body anymore. However, he didn't have the same sensation as before. This time, it was even more pleasant because his muscles felt numb after spending so much time in a coma, and now the knots were being worked out.

At that moment, more demon lights illuminated his body and twinkled.

Deva-Mara Kalpa strength bombarded his soul a second time. Lin Feng jumped into the air. A third wave bombarded him.

"Mister Xiao, how much time has passed since the battle in Qi Tian Holy Town?" asked Lin Feng as the Demon Kalpa strength bombarded his body.

"One year," replied Mister Xiao.

"One year. How is Meng Qing?" asked Lin Feng rhetorically. He looked at the sky and wondered, "Little boy, are you born yet?"

The fourth and fifth waves bombarded his body. The waves were becoming more and more powerful, the skies were angry because Lin Feng was looking at them disdainfully.

The sixth wave bombarded him. It reminded him of the battle. "Ji Chang, Zhuo Qing, the Holy Jade Princess, how are you all doing? If you're still alive, stay alive, I'll come and take your lives myself!"

Lin Feng's Qi grew ever more terrifying.

"Tianci Dynasty, Great Desert Dynasty, Ancient Jade Dynasty, Ji Clan, Pei Clan, Zhuo Clan, how are you all?" asked Lin Feng, smiling in a cold and evil way. The seventh wave bombarded him.

The eighth wave condensed in the sky.

"Snow Clan, Ancient Holy Clans, maybe in the future, when I go to the Snow Clan, I won't only go there to pick Meng Qing up!" said Lin Feng calmly. Mister Xiao shivered when he heard Lin Feng. The eighth wave crashed down.

Mister Xiao was amazed. Lin Feng was even more determined than he had thought. Within twenty years, Lin Feng would definitely go to the Snow Clan!

The ninth wave condensed, the earth and sky began to whistle. Then, it crashed down on him again.

Demon Qi emerged from Lin Feng's eyes and shot up into the sky. He shouted, "Die!"

Lin Feng flew upwards and punched out at the Deva-Mara Kalpa in the sky. The earth and sky shook violently, thunder crashed. The Deva-Mara Kalpa almost stopped, and a hole even appeared. Lin Feng moved around in the Deva-Mara Kalpa lights high up in the sky and bathed in them!

Chapter 2059: Top Level Physical Strength

Demon lights twinkled around Lin Feng. After the ninth wave, the demon clouds finally dispersed and the blue sky appeared again. However, Lin Feng was still surrounded by terrifying demon energies. He looked like a demon king.

He clenched his fists, feeling his bones crackle. He felt happy. It was the fifth time he had been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength as a high-level emperor. His physical strength had increased once again.

Mister Xiao's healing techniques are incredible. He can heal people but he can also make them even stronger than they were before. Even though people in the tribe aren't extremely strong at the beginning, they apply the same rule to everyone, that grand talents mature slowly. Tantai must have become explosively strong. And they progress even faster with time!, thought Lin Feng.

He looked at Mister Xiao. Mister Xiao stood next to him and smiled gently. "Lin Feng, your physical strength is much higher than people of my tribe at the same cultivation level. Your demon skills are aggressive, you can even stand being cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength directly."

"Mister Xiao, the scriptures I've studied are called Indestructible Deva-Mara skills and techniques, but they're not complete. I'm sure they would be useful in your tribe. It gives cultivators an explosive power. I'll transmit them to you using my godly awareness," Lin Feng said to Mister Xiao.

"My tribe's philosophy is to make steady progress incrementally. They study whatever they want. But you're right, having such scriptures would be useful. Thank you," said Mister Xiao. Lin Feng nodded and transmitted the demon skills to Mister Xiao.

"Mister Xiao, those skills and techniques are extremely

aggressive. The Deva-Mara Kalpa strength doesn't only attack a cultivator's physical body, they also attack the soul, people who don't have a powerful soul can't study it carelessly. They must be careful," warned Lin Feng.

Mister Xiao naturally understood. They both headed back to the tribe.

—

Lin Feng landed next to You You. He caressed her face and said gently, "Little girl, how can you be so silly? Why did you pretend we didn't know each other? Why did you secretly protect me?" whispered Lin Feng. He looked at Mister Xiao and said, "Mister Xiao, do you still need to give her medicine?"

"No, when the right time comes, she'll wake up," said Mister Xiao, shaking his head.

"I'll keep her with me then," Lin Feng said to Mister Xiao.

Mister Xiao didn't refuse, he nodded and agreed, "Alright."

—

Lin Feng brought You You into his spirit world. He hadn't seen his family for a year. When they saw him, they didn't mention Meng Qing. She hadn't come back for a while. They realized something had happened. Lin Feng hadn't come back to see them for a year, which was strange. Lin Feng usually came back quite often. And why hadn't Lin Feng come back with Zhe Tian and Meng Qing?

Lin Feng explained some of what had gone on. Even though they didn't ask, Lin Feng had to tell them some things. He couldn't conceal the truth, so he told them everything. They knew Meng Qing was safe, at least. Unfortunately, Lin Feng couldn't contact Meng Qing, even with her jade talisman.

Lin Feng put You You on a Blue Uptala Lotus, and also practiced cultivation there. He stayed with her for seven days and then went

into the demon pond to improve his Deva-Mara body. His physical strength kept increasing.

Lin Feng was making even more effort than before, crazily intense about his cultivation. He spent half a month in the demon pond this time, and then was cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa two more times. His physical strength was already terrifying. His Deva-Mara body and Deva-Mara Kalpa strength were different things: Deva-Mara Kalpa strength made his physical body more powerful, while his Deva-Mara body made his strength even more explosive.

Lin Feng knew he could cleanse his body only twice this time. A third time would have been harmful.

With the medicine Mister Xiao had given to Lin Feng for a year and the Deva-Mara Kalpa strength and the Deva-Mara body, Lin Feng's physical strength had easily reached the top of the Huang Qi layer. He could easily crush cultivators of the top of the Huang Qi layer these days.

However, there was no limit, it was always possible to become stronger. Ji Chang and the others were already at the top of the Huang Qi layer, but Lin Feng wasn't. At the same cultivation level, he would have been much stronger than they were.

At this time, Lin Feng didn't know that he had already reached the top of the Huang Qi layer...

—

"Indestructible Deva-Mara Kalpa skill, Deva-Mara body, they're useful," Lin Feng muttered to himself as he left his spirit world. He had no time to waste. He didn't have time to spend with his family, either. Even though Shi Jue Lao Xian and the Snow Clan's Saint had agreed on a limit of twenty years, Lin Feng didn't want to wait that long. He wanted to see Meng Qing and his baby as soon as possible.

The Holy City was the most central city of the Dark Night

Region. It had never lost its reputation, and there were always geniuses there. Chu Chun Qiu was still the first cultivator on the Imperial Ranking List. The second wasn't Lin Feng anymore, it was Ji Chang once again.

Lin Feng's name had already disappeared from the Imperial Ranking List. The Great Imperial Palace's people were convinced that Lin Feng had died during the great battle in Qi Tian Holy Town, and even if he hadn't died, he was probably unable to regain his original strength.

Many other people from the top of the Imperial Ranking List were trying to become great emperors. The Imperial Ranking List was just a symbol. Strength was more important.

On the day Lin Feng reappeared in the Holy City, was he a guest in the Holy City or was it like his new hometown?

Lin Feng was in a restaurant, wearing a grey robe and a plaited bamboo hat. There was a veil around the bamboo hat which hid his face. He looked like the Watchers from back then. He didn't head back to Champion University first. This restaurant was near the Ji Clan and belonged to them.

In the Holy City, Ancient Holy Clans all had restaurants and such places. It was a way of learning about current affairs.

Apart from that, Ancient Holy Clans in the Holy City also had journalists, spies, and special agents. That's how Ancient Holy Clans controlled cities.

"I've heard that Chu Chun Qiu had killed another great emperor. How terrifying. He's as insane as his ancestor."

"Yes, and Chu Chun Qiu hasn't reached the very top of the Huang Qi layer yet. How terrifying indeed! Everybody underestimated him. I am sure he has a king-type body!"

"He's just the new King Chu."

People in restaurants were mostly talking about emperors. They didn't know much about great emperors, emperors were more common. There were many things to talk about them. When talking about emperors, they mainly thought of the best ones, Ji Chang, Chu Chun Qiu, and so on.

“Ji Chang is trying to break through to the Di Qi layer. He will surpass Chu Chun Qiu again.”

“Hehe, maybe!” someone else laughed. It was a member of the Ji Clan. People kept flattering Ji Chang even if they knew that Ji Chang wasn't as strong as Chu Chun Qiu.

However, at that moment, someone decided to do the opposite, “Is Ji Chang the one who was defeated by that medium-level emperor? How funny, you're talking about him as if he were an unprecedented genius.”

“Eh?”

“How audacious!” the crowd murmured. However, saying that in one of the Ji Clan's restaurants was reckless. What a humiliation for the Ji Clan, too!

The Ji Clan cultivators looked at Lin Feng icily.

“Baloney! Your Excellency, you must be too drunk to think clearly already! Who do you think you are to talk about a Champion?”

“Baloney?” Lin Feng raised his head and looked at them icily through his veil and said indifferently, “The Champion was initially second and then he fell to fourth on the Imperial Ranking List. That's unprecedented! And there aren't many strong cultivators in the Ji Clan. That guy was even surrounded by hundreds of people and he killed many of them. That was a new page in the history of the Holy City.”

All the young people in the restaurant released Qi and looked at him aggressively.

“Why are you provoking us?”

Lin Feng had a rictus grin behind his veil. Of course, he was just provoking them, he had come for revenge!

Chapter 2060: Slaughtering

“You can see it that way,” said Lin Feng calmly. The young people of the Ji Clan were stupefied, they all stood up and walked towards Lin Feng. Oppressive energies surrounded him. Many other people backed away from Lin Feng. He was too audacious!

“Your Excellency, you’re not weak. I’ll teach you a good lesson. I’m from the Ji Clan, you’ll see that you can’t offend the Ji Clan!” said someone in front of Lin Feng. He sounded calm and composed. The Ji Clan still remembered that Ji Chang had been defeated by Lin Feng not long ago, and that he had also killed many of their people. They couldn’t forget about it. Now someone was surprisingly making fun of them because of that in a restaurant that belonged to them!

“Ji Clan’s people?” When Lin Feng heard the man, the table in front of him exploded. He looked at the speaker icily, and the young man started shaking.

You You was in a coma because of people from the Ji Clan. The Ji Clan had tried to kill him three times! They had to pay the price for that!

Lin Feng stood up and walked forwards. That person sensed Lin Feng’s terrifying power. He was shocked and scared by the pressure!

Lin Feng raised his hand and demon energies filled the air. The Ji Clan’s strong cultivator was stunned. He shouted explosively and punched out towards Lin Feng. A cyan dragon appeared and intercepted Lin Feng’s punch attack.

There was a crackling sound as that cultivator’s bones were crushed. Lin Feng’s demon punch continued moving forwards and pierced through his heart like a knife through butter. His body was propelled away, his soul shook violently and exploded.

People in the restaurant were astonished, their hearts pounding at his action. How cruel! He had killed a member of the Ji Clan straight away!

The members of the Ji Clan were astonished. Someone dared kill people from the Ji Clan in a restaurant that belonged to them?

Lin Feng dared. He didn't only kill only one, he didn't kill only high-level emperors, he also killed medium-level emperors and low-level emperors. He hated the Ji Clan.

Each time he thought of their Saint Emperors who had attacked You You, he was even more furious. He wanted to kill them all!

Therefore, Lin Feng was merciless. He didn't hesitate. He kept punching all those people, and very quickly, many corpses were lying all around him.

The crowd was terrified. This guy was insane! However, he had just killed many high-and medium-level emperors, which meant he was extremely strong... or were the Ji Clan's emperors just weak?

Of course, Lin Feng didn't kill all of them, he said to one, "The members of the Ji Clan are so weak. Go and inform Ji Chang that someone wants to show everyone that giving him the title of Champion is a disgrace. Make him come here!"

Then, Lin Feng kicked that person who crashed against a wall, pierced through it, and flew away.

"He's provoking Ji Chang!"

"Someone is provoking the Ji Chang, a high-level emperor. Is he as strong as Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng? Go and inform the clan!"

So this guy had come and killed people of the Ji Clan because he wanted Ji Chang to come out...

"He's very strong. He can kill high-level emperors of the Ji Clan in one punch. I wonder whether he's as strong as Ji Chang or not?"

“Since he’s provoking the Ji Clan, he must be strong. He must be from an Ancient Holy Clan too!” the watchers kept on speculating.

—

The news spread very quickly. Ji Chang also heard about it.

Lin Feng was still in the restaurant, he had sat down again and waited calmly. It was as if he hadn’t killed anyone. He knew that if he had come showing his face, the Ji Clan wouldn’t have let Ji Chang come out. A year before, eight strong cultivators had joined hands to fight against him, and Ji Chang was the first person he wanted to kill.

Very quickly, some members of the Ji Clan arrived, their oppressive strength invading the restaurant. Many people shook. It was a great emperor!

“Come here!” shouted the cultivator explosively. The crowd understood and looked at Lin Feng.

However, when everybody looked at him, he acted as if he hadn’t heard anything. He was simply taking a drink.

At that moment, the restaurant shook violently, it was as if it were about to collapse. The crowd left it quickly. Lin Feng was alone in there.

Crackling sounds spread out, the restaurant collapsed and turned to ashes.

“Who are you?” asked the member of the Ji Clan. The leader of the group was a great emperor. He was in a very bad mood. He had tried to understand, but he kept failing. As a result, his social status kept falling within the Ji Clan. When he heard that someone had said the Ji Clan was weak, he became even more furious, and took some strong emperors along with him.

“Where’s Ji Chang?” asked Lin Feng indifferently, but he didn’t even turn his head to look at them. Lin Feng was disappointed.

“Many people want to challenge Ji Chang in the Holy City, but he only fights against those who are strong enough,” said the great emperor icily.

“You are as pitiful as a stray cur. That guy keeps failing and you treat him as if he were an incredible cultivator. No wonder the Ji Clan sends Saint Emperors to fight against emperors,” Lin Feng said mockingly.

The people in the distance were not surprised, he had been talking that way the whole time. They were wondering who he was, though. Who was he? Why was he so brave?

When Lin Feng said that, great imperial Qi invaded the atmosphere and blotted out the sky. The cultivators behind the great emperor looked ready to explode!

“Ji Feng Lie, go and kill him,” the great emperor said to someone next to him.

“Ji Feng Lie, he’s been rising quickly these days. He understands Destructive Dao. He’s very strong and he’s already on the Imperial Ranking List, I wonder if he can fight against him,” chattered the crowd when they heard that familiar name. The difference between emperors who understood Dao power and those who didn’t was huge.

The cultivator in black clothes hadn’t released Dao power. Did he understand Dao power though? If he didn’t, he was in danger. But he probably did since he wanted to challenge Ji Chang...

Ji Feng Lie jumped forwards and released Destructive Dao, the air trembling about him. A wind kicked up, bringing the falling sky along with it.

“Die!” Ji Feng Lie landed in front of Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng flew up and released demon Qi at Ji Feng Lie.

The crowd was astonished as Ji Feng Lie exploded instantly.

“That’s...”

“How is that possible? Ji Feng Lie understood Dao power, and that guy killed him in one punch? He released demon cosmic energies! How scary!”

Those watching were stunned. On top of that, Lin Feng had moved so fast that they hadn't understood what Lin Feng had done. The blasted corpse landed in front of the great emperor.

“Cyan Dragon Whistles!” shouted the great emperor explosively. Instantly, a cyan dragon appeared, Lin Feng threw himself at the dragon and punched its head. The crowd was astonished.

“Die!” The great emperor moved faster than most of them could see. The air ripped as several cyan dragons whipped towards Lin Feng.

In reply, Lin Feng released terrifying Demon intent, which was more powerful than the great emperor's cosmic energies.

“How is that possible? He's an emperor. Why are his cosmic energies more powerful than mine?,” gasped the great emperor. He shouted defiantly, cyan dragons streaking across the sky. However, Lin Feng crushed them and his fist continued on, undeterred. There was a deafening explosive impact. The crowd was astonished as the great emperor immediately blew apart!

Chapter 2061: Fighting Against Ji Chang Again

“He killed the great emperor!” The crowd was astonished when they saw the great emperor explode. They had thought he would be incredibly strong, and that he’d win that battle. But what a tragedy, dying to an attack so explosive, totally beyond their expectations...

The Ji Clan cultivators were astonished. They had seen the body of the great emperor explode. They couldn’t believe it their eyes, that attack...

Lin Feng didn’t waste time. His black cloak fluttered in the wind as he jumped forwards. Their faces turned deathly pale. One of them shouted explosively, “Let’s go!”

Lin Feng jumped forwards, moving like a black arrow. Rumbblings and explosions followed him. He punched another cultivator, who exploded as well. They didn’t have enough time to move, Lin Feng was too fast...

The other Ji Clan cultivators had the sensation it was their judgement day. Their faces were as white as sheets of paper. That speed... nobody could compete with him...

The crowd just saw a black dot flickering. Each time Lin Feng punched out, a cultivator exploded. Very quickly, Lin Feng was the last one standing there. In the blink of an eye, he had killed the whole group.

Lin Feng jumped up on the ruins of the restaurant and said in calmly, “I will be waiting for Ji Chang for three days. If he doesn’t come to fight against me, it means that he doesn’t deserve to be called a Champion.”

Lin Feng headed off to the ranking list. Surprisingly, he had set the meeting point there!

“That guy has killed so many strong Ji Clan cultivators and now he wants to fight against Ji Chang, how crazy!,” was the consensus of the crowd. Their silhouettes flickered, heading after him to the ranking list.

They all wanted to see that battle. If Ji Chang didn’t show up, that would be a humiliation to him!

“I think he must be a genius from a powerful clan, that’s why he wants to fight against Ji Chang. And now he set the meeting point where the Imperial Ranking List is, he wants to be ranked too, and on top of that, at the top of the list!”

“If he defeats Ji Chang, he’ll rank second. How will the Ji Clan deal with him, though? Will they attack him directly, or will they make Ji Chang fight against him?”

People were all talking about the situation. Very quickly, the whole Ji Clan learned about it.

—

There was currently no Pathfinder stage where the Imperial Ranking List was displayed but it was still a vast area. Lin Feng sat down where the Pathfinder stage used to be. He looked calm and composed. He was convinced that what had happened in the restaurant would quickly end up in the ears of the members of the Ji Clan. Would Ji Chang show up though?

Some people had followed and were waiting with Lin Feng. Would Ji Chang show up?

A group of people showed up, great emperors from the Great Imperial Palace.

“Pei Dong Lai, Feng Shen Tian, those people are the geniuses of the previous generation and they are becoming stronger and stronger. In a few years, Chu Chun Qiu and the others would also become great emperors,” mused the crowd when they saw all those geniuses. On the path of cultivation, the waves behind pushed the

waves ahead of them.

There were many geniuses in the world, and new geniuses kept rising all the time, like that cultivator in black clothes.

In the distance, someone else arrived. He was wearing a black cloak and had an evil air about him: Guili!

“It’s Guili, he suffered a few crushing defeats back then on the Pathfinder Day and left. Now he’s here again.”

“He must have heard that someone wanted to fight against Ji Chang, that’s why he came. The Pathfinder Day was a long time ago. Oh, Shi Yun Feng is there too!” the crowd noticed. Shi Yun Feng, the stone man, was also watching in the distance.

“I wouldn’t have thought that the news would spread so quickly. Of course, Ji Chang is famous. If he had challenged someone else, it wouldn’t have been like this” someone pointed out. People rarely appeared around the Imperial Ranking List like this.

“Some people of the Ji Clan are here, but not Ji Chang.” A group of people had appeared, all of them members of the Ji Clan. There were a few great emperors among them. They were staring at Lin Feng icily.

“You killed some people of our clan?” demanded a great emperor, staring icily at Lin Feng.

“If Ji Chang kills me, you’ll have your revenge. If you attack me, then it means the Ji Clan is shameless,” Lin Feng spat back at him. The Ji Clan cultivators looked furious. They glanced around, there were many people. If they attacked Lin Feng, they would lose face.

“You want to die, the Ji Clan will help you,” said the strong Ji Clan cultivator icily. Their silhouettes flickered, as if preparing to attack.

And then someone else arrive. Each time he took a step, Qi burst out and made the earth and sky shake.

A great emperor looked sharp and aggressive. Destruction energies rolled around him.

“That’s Ji Chang!

Ji Chang, Di Qi layer!

“Ji Chang has broken through. No wonder the members of the Ji Clan are so confident.”

“Ji Chang the Champion has broken through! He must be much stronger than before! Even though that cultivator in black clothes is strong, he’s only a high-level emperor! He’ll definitely die if he fights against Ji Chang!”

Their opinions were nearly identical. Ji Chang had finally become a great emperor. Ji Chang and Ying Cheng were two real geniuses of the Holy City, and they had both become great emperors.

When Champions broke through the Di Qi layer, even if not much time had passed, they were inevitably incredibly strong.

When Ji Chang was still an emperor, he had few enemies. People like Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng were rare. Now Ji Chang had broken through to the Di Qi layer, and even Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng couldn’t fight against him anymore.

Ji Chang had been humiliated twice in the past. He wanted to get his revenge. Usually, people who were named Champions became at least Celestial Emperors!

Ji Chang finally stopped in front of Lin Feng and looked at him icily. He said, “I am now a great emperor. I shouldn’t fight against you, but you killed my people, you should die. But since you are strong and that’s how you killed them, just cripple your cultivation,” Ji Chang said calmly.

He wanted to give this person an opportunity, and display his own dominance. Lin Feng could live on, but his cultivation would be crippled!

However, at that moment, the cultivator in black clothes raised his head. Black lights emerged from his eyes and drove into Ji Chang's eyes.

Ji Chang, great emperor, he dares act this arrogantly now?

“When you were at the top of the Huang Qi layer, a medium-level emperor defeated you, now you're a great emperor and you dare act that arrogantly? You have a bad memory,” Lin Feng replied, equally calmly. His voice was hoarse too, sounding like he wanted to laugh.

The Ji Clan cultivators frowned. This guy was mad...

The crowd was also surprised. This guy dared act so arrogantly even though Ji Chang had become a great emperor. He was so self-confident!

Ji Chang released energies. He could feel the familiar sting of humiliation rising again!

“In the future, I'll get my revenge, and I'll kill Lin Feng. But first, I'll kill you,” Ji Chang responded indifferently.

Lin Feng slowly rose into the air.

Ji Chang jumped and released oppressive energies. Destructive Dao strength rolled towards Lin Feng and exploded on him.

However, Lin Feng remained unmoved, and just looked back at Ji Chang.

“What an incredible physical strength. Ji Chang released Destructive energies but he didn't move at all.”

Ji Chang groaned icily. He chopped down, and a cyan dragon filled with destructive energies exploded on Lin Feng, but nothing happened.

Lin Feng raised his hand and punched the cyan dragon, which exploded instantly. The crowd was dumbfounded. How strong! It looked so easy for him to destroy the cyan dragon...

“Not bad,” said Ji Chang icily. He continued attacking Lin Feng, cyan dragons kept appearing. The space around them was starting to warp.

However, Lin Feng destroyed all the attacks, the cyan dragons kept exploding. He made it look easy.

Finally, Ji Chang stopped attacking, he looked at Lin Feng with admiration and said, “It’s my first battle since I’ve become a great emperor. Even though I’m not familiar with the strength of the Di Qi layer, I should still be stronger than you. But you are stronger, that’s impressive! But unfortunately, today you’re going to die.”

Ji Chang released more Destruction energies.

Lin Feng looked at him icily and said, “I haven’t used my real strength yet.”

Chapter 2062: Killing

Ji Chang remained silent and said coldly, “Empty words.”

Then, Ji Chang released even more strength and said icily, “You can’t imagine how strong a great emperor is!”

Ji Chang chopped down again, fissures appeared in the space. Cyan dragons roared furiously as they exploded on Lin Feng’s body. If Lin Feng wasn’t extremely strong, he would have died already.

Lin Feng raised his fists and destroyed all the dragons, one after the other. Finally, he released empty space cosmic energy.

“His cosmic energies have the strength of the Di Qi layer, how’s that possible? How can he be so strong? His physical strength is also unbelievable!” thought the appalled crowd.

When Ji Chang saw this, he shouted explosively, and a destructive hand appeared in front of Lin Feng to attack him.

Lin Feng punched out, the gigantic hand was instantly blown apart. Lin Feng ascended rapidly, raising his fist and punched out in Ji Chang’s direction.

Ji Chang joined his hands, dragons kept appearing and streaming towards Lin Feng’s blow. However, all the dragons were destroyed. Ji Chang groaned and released even more Destructive Dao strength. Lin Feng’s punch slammed against him, his soul and body shook.

A strong wind started blowing. Lin Feng disappeared, too fast to follow.

“Imprison!” said Lin Feng icily. A cage made of empty space cosmic energy appeared around Ji Chang. Lin Feng reappeared and aimed towards Ji Chang’s head, his fist pitch-black. Demon intent surrounded him like a small sea.

“His cosmic energies are terrifying. He can compete with a great emperor!” blurted out someone. They realized that Lin Feng’s cosmic energies kept evolving.

Ji Chang also realized this and grimaced. This man’s cosmic energies were more powerful than he had thought!

“Collapse!” shouted Ji Chang explosively. Destructive Dao kept exploding. At the same time, lights emerged from his eyes. An ancient king appeared and shot towards Lin Feng. He also threw himself at Lin Feng. It was like two cultivators were attacking Lin Feng.

Lin Feng retreated as the air whistled around him. However, Ji Chang chopped down again. Space began to twist again as cyan dragons oppressed the whole area and converged on Lin Feng.

“When a cultivator becomes a great emperor, his strength becomes real, and even illusionary attacks are real. They also control the strength of the earth and sky much better, and their attacks are also faster. When they wave their hands, they can create rivers and destroy mountains.”

The crowd was shocked at all this. Lin Feng was incredible. How was he competing with a great emperor?

But even this way, a great emperor was a great emperor. In the end, he was probably going to lose.

At that moment, heaven and earth kept shaking. Destructive Dao strength kept exploding as it moved towards Lin Feng again.

“Mourn!” spat Lin Feng. Ancient imprints descended from the sky. In front of him, a gigantic word appeared: Mourn!

The earth and sky kept shaking. Lin Feng looked like an ancient king. Nothing could influence him or crush his will.

“Weapon!” Another imprint appeared and condensed. Lin Feng’s voice carried cursing strength. A second word appeared in the air, surrounded by terrible energies. He looked like a god, his Qi had

already reached incredible levels.

“Fight!” A third word appeared and condensed. The cosmos kept resonating. Energies intertwined. Destructive Dao exploded but didn’t affect Lin Feng’s energies.

“God!”

“Everything!”

“Deployment!”

“Class!”

“Here!” Words kept appearing and filling the air, heaven and earth kept shaking. Energies kept erupting in conflict. An ancient road appeared between them, forcing a path through the explosions. Ji Chang grimaced. That was an explosive ancient incantation!

“Before!” The nine words condensed into an ancient imprint, even as Destructive Dao exploded again. Lin Feng still looked like a god, he didn’t even care about his enemy’s attacks.

“Who is he? He has an incantation holy technique!” someone blurted out. Not only was Lin Feng extremely strong, but he also had rare spells! Now they finally thought that Ji Chang the great emperor might lose...

The atmosphere around Ji Chang changed. A gigantic dragon appeared above him, a thousand meters tall. Qi and Destructive Dao surged around him as he turned into a dragon and roared furiously.

Lin Feng sensed the destructive energies surrounding him, his clothes were ripped apart. However, he remained as motionless as a mountain. His nine Words condensed and turned into a pattern. The air began to hum and vibrate all around him as strength condensed. He looked like a god, what could a dragon do against him?

Cosmic strength gathered. Finally, Lin Feng jumped forwards and shouted furiously. He destroyed the Destructive Dao strength, his Words surged to attack and blotted out the sky.

He used his incantation and his Ancient Holy Technique attacks together, a terrifying combination...

The ancient Words slammed into the dragon, which roared defiantly. However, the dragon couldn't do much. Blood splashed as it was wounded.

"Ji Chang!" When the Ji Clan cultivators saw that, their faces turned deathly pale. The nine Words oppressed the cyan dragon, Ji Chang was in danger. He couldn't revert to human form. He didn't even have time to use his secret technique or weapons.

The members of the Ji Clan started racing towards him. They had never imagined that Ji Chang would lose!

However, at the same time, Lin Feng turned into a gigantic sword and streaked across the sky. He immediately pierced through the cyan dragon's head. Everyone saw the gigantic sword appear on the other side of the dragon. The cyan dragon had been stabbed straight through!

The nine Words bombarded the cyan dragon. Lights flared as the dragon fell.

At that moment, everybody was stunned. That person didn't only want to defeat Ji Chang, he wanted to kill him!

He wanted to kill Ji Chang, a great emperor, a Champion!

Everybody was astonished. They didn't believe it their eyes. Ji Chang had become a great emperor. Was Ji Chang dead?

Who had killed Ji Chang?

Chapter 2063: A New Era

The gigantic sword had pierced right through Ji Chang's body. A soul appeared, glittering weakly.

"Ji Chang, let's go!" shouted the Ji Clan cultivators. They moved as fast as they could. However, the gigantic sword reverted to human form. Lin Feng turned around, and a river of death strength moved towards Ji Chang's weak soul and destroyed it. It dispersed and disappeared.

Black water appeared and dripped down on the ground. The strong Ji Clan cultivators came to a slow, disbelieving halt, faces twisting in a deathly grimace.

Ji Chang was dead!

Ji Clan, their Champion, their hero, their hope, had been killed! How would they explain this to the elders of the Ji Clan?

The Ji Clan had always thought that Ji Chang would become a Saint Emperor, and now he was dead. He had been killed right in front of the Imperial Ranking List!

Everybody was astounded, even the people who weren't from the Ji Clan. Everything went eerily silent. Nobody had thought great emperor Ji Chang would be the one to die. And worse, they had never thought someone would DARE kill him!

"Pfew..." Finally, someone took a deep breath and said, "It's been hundreds of years since the last time a Champion was killed in the Holy City."

"Indeed, a few hundred years. Who IS that person?"

Everybody was astonished and staring at the cultivator with a ravaged bamboo hat and black cloak. Who had killed Ji Chang?

"Who are you?" demanded the strong Ji Clan cultivators of Lin Feng. This guy had challenged Ji Chang, they had thought he'd

die, he was only an emperor going against a great emperor, after all. But now Ji Chang had been killed!

He had used a river made of death energy. They had only heard of one genius who used such spells.

That person was the Ji Clan's worst enemy: Lin Feng!

In the distance, Qi flared like newborn suns. A few people appeared and landed next to Lin Feng.

"Ancestor Shi Tian..." The strong Ji Clan cultivators were shaking, their eyes bloodshot. Ji Chang had been killed and it was on the verge of coming out into the open.

A Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan also arrived. Ji Chang had been killed, his talisman had been broken. He was furious and his Qi closed in on the cultivator wearing the plaited bamboo hat.

Finally, that person raised his hand to his veil and took it off with his hat.

"He's back..." whispered someone after a few minutes. Everybody had thought he was dead. But now he was back in the Holy City.

"Who is he?" whispered someone who had never seen Lin Feng.

People next to him rolled their eyes and said, "Champion University, Lin Feng."

"Lin Feng!" The man shivered. No wonder! Ji Chang had lost once again to Lin Feng. Lin Feng, when he was a medium-level emperor, had defeated Ji Chang who was a high-level emperor. Now, Ji Chang had become a great emperor and Lin Feng had killed him as a high-level emperor!

"No wonder he was hiding. He's Lin Feng. If the Ji Clan had known that, they wouldn't have given him any chance to kill Ji Chang."

"Lin Feng's name isn't even on the Imperial Ranking List

anymore and Ji Chang was second, but since he had just broken through to the Di Qi layer, his name wasn't on the list anymore, and still Lin Feng killed him..."

The crowd was wondering what would happen to the ranking list. They were stupefied.

Lin Feng knew that the strong Ji Clan cultivators would go insane if he killed Ji Chang. That's why he had informed Ancestor Shi Tian he would do it.

"Ji Chang was a student in Champion University, and Lin Feng is a student of Champion University too, and he killed him. Champion University is protecting Lin Feng," the Saint Emperor of the Ji Clan said icily.

"Even though Ji Chang was the Champion of Champion University, there have been tensions between Ji Chang and Lin Feng for a very long time, and Ji Chang's cultivation level was higher than Lin Feng's. We can't say anything. If Lin Feng had died, we wouldn't have said anything either. However, how come the Ji Clan sends Saint Emperors each time young people fight?" replied Ancestor Shi Tian icily.

The Ji Clan Saint Emperor looked at him icily. He didn't always get involved in young people's affairs, but this time Ji Chang had been killed! Ji Chang had been a real genius! He was naturally furious.

"You think you can say one sentence and resolve the situation?" swore a strong Ji Clan cultivator.

"I didn't say anything. If you have a young person who can kill Lin Feng, just send them, we don't mind. Champion University won't get involved. If you send a terrifying cultivator to kill Lin Feng though, then not only Shi Jue Lao Xian might get involved, but we will too, and we will destroy the Ji Clan," said Ancestor Shi Tian indifferently. I kill you, you kill me, those things were normal. If the Ji Clan wanted to kill Lin Feng, they could, but they

had to send people of a comparable strength!

“Ji Chang started it all,” said Lin Feng icily. Things weren’t over between him and the Ji Clan!

“Ancestor, let’s go,” said Lin Feng calmly, as if nothing had happened. Ancestor Shi Tian nodded and left.

Ji Chang was dead.

The Ji Clan Saint Emperor watched the Ancestor take Lin Feng away, feeling like he was going to burst. He kicked a stone, and it exploded.

“Lin Feng!” Everybody understood that the Ji Clan wanted to kill Lin Feng. If they didn’t, Lin Feng would destroy them someday.

“Back then, in Qi Tian Holy Town, we didn’t manage to kill him. Now, the consequences are tragic for us. And with Champion University and Shi Jue Lao Xian on his side, it will be difficult to kill him.” The Ji Clan cultivators clenched their fists. In the Holy City, nobody would dare offend Shi Jue Lao Xian and Champion University! Even the Yu Wen Clan didn’t dare offend Lin Feng anymore. They had already forgotten about their tensions with Lin Feng.

The battle astonished the whole city. Ji Chang had become a great emperor, and Lin Feng had still killed him!

He had disappeared for a year, then reappeared and killed a great emperor in the Holy City. Lin Feng was still only a high-level emperor and he had killed a great emperor. In a short time, Lin Feng was almost as famous as Chu Chun Qiu once again.

Chu Chun Qiu had killed great emperors, and now Lin Feng had killed great emperors too. Even though Ji Chang had just broken through to the Di Qi layer, it was Ji Chang, a Champion!

Many people talked about the Imperial Ranking List. Now, they

wanted to see Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu battle.

Who would be stronger? People were trying to guess.

Finally, the Great Imperial Palace's people changed the ranking list. Lin Feng became second again, as he hadn't fought against Chu Chun Qiu. Some people knew what Lin Feng was thinking. But Lin Feng didn't care about the Great Imperial Palace and their list anyway. He didn't care about being on the Imperial Ranking List at all!

Ying Cheng and Ji Chang belonged to the past now. New geniuses were rising. It was the beginning of a new era. Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng were the new ones. It was a coincidence because Chu Chun Qiu and Ying Cheng were both students at Celestial Godly University, and Lin Feng and Ji Chang were both students at Champion University.

One thing was certain; Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu were extremely talented, and they weren't weaker than Ying Cheng and Ji Chang... and Lin Feng had killed Ji Chang, a great emperor, in front of everyone!

Chapter 2064: The Sword Above the Lake

After killing Ji Chang, Lin Feng went back to Champion University and Tiantai. Yun Qing Yan looked at him and said in a weakly, “Just how do you practice cultivation?”

“I almost died, and now I’m back, but even stronger,” replied Lin Feng, caressing Yun Qing Yan’s head. He was happy to see her and smiled.

“You even dare caress my head, I’m like a big sister to you,” pouted Yun Qing Yan, moving away from him. This guy was audacious.

Tian Chi arrived and clapped Lin Feng’s shoulder without saying anything.

“You’re back, good,” said Hou Qing Lin smiling. “Tiantai is going to rise. What should we do in the future? Should Tiantai become a clan or a sect?” he asked.

Tiantai was becoming more and more powerful, they had great potential. They could become a powerful group in the Holy City. Lin Feng, their leader, had the potential to become a Saint someday. He would become a Saint Emperor sooner or later. And Tian Chi, Ruo Xie, and all the core disciples studied ancient techniques and spells. They also had the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, which made them even more talented. They would easily become Celestial Emperors sooner or later. Creating a sect or a clan would be easy!

“Brother, I have so many enemies, we must be discreet. Slowly. When Tiantai rises in the Holy City, nobody will be able to make us collapse,” swore Lin Feng.

“Alright. Lin Feng, I also want to tell you some good news, look who’s there.” At that moment, someone came out of a palace. So many years had passed since the last time Lin Feng had seen him.

He was instantly very happy.

“Teacher, Mu Bei, Qing Tian.”

Emperor Yu, Mu Bei, and Mo Qing Tian were there now!

“Lin Feng, I feel guilty, but you’re all amazing. I feel so grateful too!” said Emperor Yu. He was still a medium-level emperor. Some of his disciples had already surpassed him.

“Lin Feng, your fellow disciples have told me a lot. You can already kill great emperors now, you’re much stronger than me now,” said Mo Qing Tian, smiling and squeezing Lin Feng’s shoulders. After these few years, Lin Feng was so far ahead! Mu Bei and Emperor Yu were both still medium-level emperors. Lin Feng could already kill great emperors, it was almost unreal...

Many things had happened, needless to say!

“Cultivation is a step by step process. Teacher, Qing Tian, Tiantai is rising again. I wonder where Mu Chen is, though,” Lin Feng sighed. Mu Chen was one of the people who had influenced Lin Feng the most in his cultivation life.

“Mu Chen is far more talented than I. I’m sure he’ll become incredibly strong someday, and that we’ll meet again,” said Emperor Yu smiling.

Lin Feng nodded and said, “Teacher, come have a seat, I have many ancient scriptures. You can choose some of them.”

Emperor Yu didn’t refuse. The relations he had with his eleven direct disciples was deep. They had come out of the small world together, they had gone through a lot. Now, around ten years had passed and they were together again, it was pure bliss!

The direct disciples were all like brothers, their two teachers were like parents. Lin Feng was happy to be with these people again. They chatted happily together for days. Emperor Yu had gone through lots of hardships as well. He had faced many dangers, but he was lucky, he was still alive and had finally

reached the Holy City.

Lin Feng's spirit's world...

The Saint's skeleton appeared, floating in the air. Sword Will pulsed around it eternally, it would never disperse.

Lin Feng tried to get close to the skeleton, but his blood felt like it was going to boil. A vortex appeared. He started absorbing sword strength like a greedy beast.

He used absorbing cosmic energy to devour things now. Since he had regained consciousness, he felt even more powerful, and his Dao had increased. He could already make cosmic energies evolve. He had condensed them in his fists when fighting against Ji Chang. His cosmic energies were even more powerful those of a great emperor now!

It was mainly thanks to Minister Uptala's Blue Uptala Lotus. Lin Feng had the sensation he hadn't really mastered Dao, though. His Dao wasn't the Blue Uptala Lotus Dao, after all. It was something different.

An absorbing Holy Spirit appeared in front of Lin Feng, it absorbed the Sword Will. Lin Feng gradually moved closer and closer to the skeleton. At the same time, Words appeared around him. The earth and sky started resonating.

Finally, Lin Feng was just under the skeleton, seated cross-legged. The Holy Spirit was above the skeleton and absorbing its Sword Will, while Lin Feng studied it.

It was a mysterious sword energy, Kasyapa sword strength. Lin Feng had the sensation that this intent messed up time. It was difficult to escape from it. It felt like this sword had been able to destroy time...

That's a Kasyapa sword. Back in the days, the Kasyapa Saint was terrifying, and all the Saints feared him, thought Lin Feng. He

remembered the ancient battle he had been shown.

Lin Feng started using the evolution techniques of the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures on the sword. A sword streaked across the sky, distorting it as it did so. Lin Feng moved back, the sword appeared in front of him. Actually, it was a hallucination, he wasn't moving back, he was moving forwards. That was the power of the Kasyapa sword.

Lin Feng groaned, his face became deathly pale. He sat down and continued sensing the sword strength. At the same time, the sword kept changing thanks to the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures. Lin Feng hoped he'd be able to control the sword's spirit and marrow. Of course, Lin Feng knew he couldn't use it like the Saint had yet!

——

Lin Feng studied for a long time, and then came out of his meditation. He was thinking that such spells would be good for the assassins of Tiantai, who Jing Shou was responsible for. He had created a subgroup in Tiantai: the Party of Darkness.

The people who joined Tiantai were all extraordinary. Many people wanted to join Tiantai, because many of the people who joined Tiantai became much stronger quickly, not like Ji Chang's Club. Also, Tiantai was a harmonious group who helped one another.

Many people wanted to join Champion University just to join Tiantai!

"So, what is the news?" Lin Feng asked Jing Shou.

"This news is useful for you," said Jing Shou, handing a jade talisman over to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng put his godly awareness into it and nodded, "Continue. Don't stop. You can continue expanding the Party of Darkness. I'll also give you some skills, techniques, and spells for the Party of

Darkness.”

“Good!” Jing Shou nodded.

“I’m off!” said Lin Feng and he left.

A new genius of the Pei Clan, Pei Yu, invited some friends to have a picnic by the lake. There were many stunning women with them. They were all chatting and having fun together.

“Brother Pei Yu, Lin Feng recently killed Ji Chang. Everybody was astonished. Everybody says it’s a new era. I think you’ll become a peerless cultivator someday.”

“There are many geniuses in the Holy City. Chu Chun Qiu and Lin Feng are incredible. There’s Dou Zhan Seng too! I need to practice and become stronger,” said Pei Yu humbly. Many people in the Holy City found him very strong already. Someday, he’d probably surpass Pei Dong Lai!

The friends were chatting happily. In the distance, someone wearing white clothes and carrying a sword on his back appeared. He looked confident and at ease.

“Look over there.”

“How swift. He must be so strong.”

“Pei Yu!” said the person in the distance extremely loudly.

Pei Yu was stupefied and stood up, shouting back, “I’m Pei Yu! Who are you, Your Excellency?”

Suddenly, sword Qi streaked across the sky towards them. Explosions rent the air. Those people’s faces changed drastically and they shouted furiously, “Insolent!”

The cultivator continued advancing on them. Sword lights glittered, cutting open the space. Pei Yu screamed, just before he exploded apart and the pieces of his body spread all over the ground.

The cultivator with the sword in his back continued moving on swiftly. He looked confident and at ease.

One sword attack, and he had killed Pei Yu!

Chapter 2065: The Pei Clan's Nightmare

Pei Yu was a genius of the Pei Clan, and he was rising. He was extremely talented. In less than a year, he had become the 13th cultivator on the Imperial Ranking List, a great achievement. He had the potential to become the 5th in the future. His future was supposed to be brighter than Pei Dong Lai's.

However, Lin Feng had killed him by the lake. One sword attack, and he had died. Pei Yu hadn't even had time to react.

Even though it wasn't comparable to Ji Chang's story, many people still heard about it in the Holy City. For the Pei Clan, it was a tragedy. Pei Yu was one of the most outstanding young people of the Pei Clan in a long time. Everybody had been paying attention to him. His death was an outright humiliation!

And it was only the beginning.

——

Three days later, Pei Dong Qing was in a restaurant and someone, a sword cultivator, killed him.

Five days later, eight geniuses of the Pei Clan had been killed, all by the same sword cultivator. No exception. The Pei Clan didn't even know who their enemy was.

In the end, the Pei Clan didn't allow their emperors to go out alone anymore. They always went out with great emperors, and they all carried Great Imperial Weapons.

However, twenty days later, by the lake, two great emperors and four emperors were caught there and killed. They even had Great Imperial Weapons. The one who had killed them was wearing white clothes and had a sword. His face was yellowish. He looked sick, but he was terrifyingly strong.

In a single month, the Pei Clan lost eight great emperors and thirty-six emperors. The whole city was astonished. The Pei Clan's

Celestial Emperors started paying attention. They were ready to react anytime, but it was too late. The Celestial Emperors of the Pei Clan were furious. It was a great tragedy for the Clan!

Many people in the Holy City were talking about the one who had killed so many strong cultivators from the Pei Clan. Who was he? He was an emperor, but his sword attacks were terrifying. Eight great emperors had died at his hands. The assassin always looked for the weakest great emperors of the Pei Clan.

His swords were faster than great emperors and deadly. Ordinary great emperors couldn't escape from him!

A palace of the Pei Clan...

Everybody was furious. Nobody said anything, they just looked to their leader.

The leader of the Pei Clan was initially meditating in seclusion, but he had come out because of these events.

He didn't mind if a few emperors died, but dozens? And great emperors? Besides, it wasn't over. Maybe the assassin was going to kill even more of their people. What if all their emperors died? That would be a true disaster!

"Have we offended anyone?" asked the leader of the Pei Clan icily. He didn't understand the assassin's purpose.

"We have only offended Champion University," answered someone. Back then, they had, along with three other Ancient Holy Clans, surrounded Champion University. They had wanted to capture Lin Feng back then.

"And more precisely Lin Feng. Of course, by offending Lin Feng, we also offended people who support him. However, the assassin is just an emperor, and he can kill great emperors. He killed Pei Yu in

one sword strike. He's very talented. I think it must be Lin Feng," someone ventured icily. The others were shocked.

"You think it's Lin Feng? But from what I've heard, he's different."

"We're in the Holy City, many people have incredible disguising techniques. Lin Feng also practices sword cultivation, and his sword attacks are terrifying."

The leader of the clan remained silent and then said, "Since it's that way, let's convoke some emperors and great emperors, some strong ones."

"Alright, good!" agreed the crowd. No matter who the assassin was, they had to find him!

——

In the Holy City, the Pei Clan wasn't the only clan who was trying to understand who the assassin was. Many people tried to guess too, and they were also trying to guess what the Pei Clan was going to do. So many of their cultivators had been killed, they had to respond.

Many strong cultivators of the Pei Clan dispersed in the Holy City. One of them was Pei Zhu. He was also a little bit famous in the Holy City, as he was on the Imperial Ranking List. At that moment, he was walking down a road and glancing around. He looked ordinary.

Suddenly, some sword Qi filled the air around him. Pei Zhu was astonished and took a deep breath.

Sword lights glittered and moved towards him. Pei Zhu waved his hands and a powerful strength emerged. People on the road fled instantly. At the same time, an invisible and intangible sword descended from the sky towards him.

In the distance, a cultivator in white clothes looked calm and composed. He had a sword in his back...

“He’s there!” Pei Zhu was stupefied. A terrifying light beam emerged from his third eye and moved towards the cultivator in white clothes. When the cultivator in white clothes saw that, he flitted away instantly.

“Hmph! Where are you going?” The light beam had suddenly turned into a person and shot towards the cultivator in white clothes. The bystanders continued fleeing.

The cultivator in white clothes moved away at the speed of light. Pei Zhu kept attacking, smiling coldly all the while.

But at that moment, there was a whistling sound of air parting. Pei Zhu’s face stiffened. He jumped backwards as he saw an illusion move towards him.

“Oh no!” Pei Zhu’s face turned deathly pale. He ran away as fast as he could, but it was useless. He couldn’t compete with that speed. Pei Zhu disappeared with the silhouette.

The illusion finally caught up with the cultivator in white clothes. He raised his fist and punched out. The man in white clothes instantly disappeared with a pop, stunning the attacker. He turned around and gazed into the distance. Pei Zhu wasn’t there anymore!

“A clone, how stupid!” The man was infuriated. He went back, but he couldn’t find Pei Zhu anymore!

“Argh!” That person waved his hands, and the buildings around him exploded. He released his godly awareness, which turned into yet another strong cultivator. He was really strong, but Lin Feng had still kidnapped Pei Zhu in front of him.

—

After a short time, the same thing happened again. A young man from the Pei Clan was taking a walk, and an invisible and intangible sword strength moved towards him. The cultivator saw some sword lights and destroyed them. However, after that, more

sword energies converged on him, and he retreated quickly.

More sword lights moved towards him. His face turned deathly pale. Where were those sword lights coming from? He couldn't see anyone. Finally, lights glittered and emerged from his third eye, turning into a silhouette. However, at that moment, the young man disappeared.

“Who's there!?” howled the strong cultivator. He released his godly awareness and inspected the area. However, he only saw many clones running away, and he could only chase one. He did so and destroyed one, but it was just a clone. Chasing someone who could clone himself was nearly impossible...

—

Many people from the Pei Clan weren't strong enough, and were cut apart without even having time to react.

That month became a nightmare for the Pei Clan. Even the leader was furious. So many of their young people were killed, it was a nightmare. Many people didn't even dare leave the Pei Clan anymore!

The Pei Clan was panicking. They had never thought something like this would ever happen to them, and the murderer was only an emperor!

Chapter 2066: Woken Up?

Everybody in the Holy City was talking about the Pei Clan. The Pei Clan was an Ancient Holy Clan and a mere emperor was killing so many of their people. Such a thing had never happened in the Holy City. The murderer probably hated them to the bone.

Everybody was wondering who the murderer was. At the same time, the Pei Clan also assigned all their great emperors to protect their emperors. They didn't just protect them with their godly awareness, but personally. Even taking such actions, some people were still killed by that sword cultivator. Each time the sword appeared, they had no time to escape. Some other people also disappeared mysteriously. The Pei Clan was busy every day trying to find the murderer!

Pei Dong Lai finally came out of the Great Imperial Palace. He was determined, he had to kill this assassin who didn't dare show his face.

But nothing happened.

Something else happened on that day, however, astonishing the whole city again. Twenty-five emperors of the Ji Clan were killed by the same person. The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan were going through the same calamity. After Ji Chang's death, the Ji Clan had been humiliated, and now it was even worse!

At that moment, the Ji Clan was furious. They decided to meet with the Pei Clan, they wanted to avenge their people. The murderer was an assassin but he was terrifyingly strong. He could kill great emperors. Everything pointed to Lin Feng.

The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan had both offended Lin Feng!

Everybody in the Holy City was astonished when they learned that the Pei Clan and the Ji Clan wanted to join hands to kill Lin

Feng. Was Lin Feng that strong?

Lin Feng hated them. After having killed so many of their people, Lin Feng stopped for a while, knowing that if he encountered some members of the Pei Clan or Ji Clan, they would be merciless. They wouldn't kill him, but they would at least cripple his cultivation.

Lin Feng was talking about cultivation with his friends from Tiantai when he was cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength a sixth time. Lin Feng also bathed in the demon pond two more times. His physical strength was far beyond his cultivation now. Lin Feng didn't know what his limits were in terms of physical strength, but he knew that he could crush great emperors in one punch.

He was becoming more and more brutal, and when he used his Deva-Mara body and his Deva-Mara Kalpa strength, his attacks were even more explosive.

When everyone was thinking that Lin Feng wouldn't dare show up anymore, three great emperors, two from the Ji Clan and one from the Pei Clan, were killed.

Many people were astonished. Even though they were ordinary great emperors, Lin Feng could kill them as if they were insects, which was unbelievable. Even if some great emperors didn't understand Dao, they were still very strong, but Lin Feng could still kill them easily. Great Emperors seemed weak in comparison to Lin Feng... or was Lin Feng too strong?

Some people wondered whether Lin Feng was the only murderer...

The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan couldn't stand it anymore, Lin Feng had killed so many people. Many people in the city were convinced that he wasn't acting alone, or he couldn't have killed people on both the Pei Clan and the Ji Clan's territories at the same time. He

was definitely backed up by Champion University!

The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan started going to the other Ancient Holy Clans to convince them to help them find and kill Lin Feng. However, the Yu Wen Clan and the Ying Clan refused. They weren't stupid, and didn't want to offend Lin Feng. They could only watch from the sidelines. At the same cultivation level, apart from Chu Chun Qiu, nobody could challenge Lin Feng. And if anyone stronger attacked Lin Feng, Shi Jue Lao Xian and Champion University would be furious.

Everybody was wondering who was stronger between Lin Feng and Chu Chun Qiu. They really wanted to see them battle.

The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan dispatched many strong cultivators to surround Champion University, just like the last time when the four Ancient Holy Clans had surrounded Champion University. However, two Ancient Holy Clans were far less strong than four.

Four Saint Emperors appeared again, demanding an explanation from Champion University.

“Those people are really bastards. Surprisingly, they dare act recklessly in Champion University. I hope we can teach them a good lesson.”

“Poor Ancient Holy Clans, Lin Feng killed so many of their people, it's a tragedy for them. They can only rely on Saint Emperors.”

When the members of Champion University saw those people, they didn't have the same impression as before. They just found these people ridiculous. Lin Feng had pushed them to their limits!

Someone appeared in the university. When the crowd saw him, they were astonished. There was a giant, he looked like an ancient cultivator-!

When the four Saint Emperors saw the giant, they were astonished. A Saint! According to legends, Lin Feng could control a

Saint! They had imagined the scene back in Qi Tian Holy Town. They were just wondering why he hadn't used the Saint the second time when the Snow Clan had come back. However, now, he was there in front of them!

The hearts of the Pei and Ji Clansmen beat wildly. If the Saint went to their clans, the consequences would be tragic!

The giant walked up to them, gigantic footprints appearing behind him. The four Saint Emperors released Qi, getting ready to flee in case of danger. The Saint made their souls shake!

"Is it funny to send Saint Emperors all the time?" asked the giant in a cold and detached way.

The four Saint Emperors shuddered as one asked, "Are you Lin Feng or a Saint?"

"I'll warn you only once. If you do this again, I'll go to the Pei Clan and the Ji Clan and I'll slaughter everyone. Qin Shan the Saint won't hesitate," said Qin Shan icily. The crowd was shaking, Saint, Saint Qin Shan...

Was it Lin Feng or Qin Shan?

"Piss off!" The four Saint Emperors left immediately without saying anything. They were too frightened to have any resistance.

The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan are in danger, everyone knew. They could imagine how the two clans felt. Their elders couldn't fight, and their young people kept getting killed.

The Saint turned around and walked back. Lin Feng wasn't going to use the Saint's body to kill people. Even though Qin Shan had recovered a little, if he fought too much with his body, then the Saint might die. Controlling his body to walk wasn't a problem, however!

—

The Pei Clan and the Ji Clan could only send cultivators to fight

against Lin Feng and challenge him officially. Pei Dong Lai challenged Lin Feng to a battle on the Pathfinder Battle Stage. In the cultivation world, a great emperor challenging an emperor was a real disgrace, but they were shameless. But the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan had no choice, as nobody below great emperor could fight against Lin Feng.

Lin Feng ignored Pei Dong Lai's challenge, it meant nothing to him. He had just started getting his revenge.

——

In his spirit world, Lin Feng was lying on the ground, watching that sleeping beauty and smiling. He stretched out his hand and caressed her face, saying gently, "You You, I'm not a Saint Emperor yet, but I'll destroy the Ji Clan when I get there!"

Each time Lin Feng killed a member of the Ji Clan, he thought of the Saint Emperor who had attacked You You. He hated himself, he needed to reconcile that hate.

"I know. I used to ignore you in the past. You sensed it so you protected me in secret. You risked your life to save me. If you wake up, I will apologize. You've always been in my heart," said Lin Feng, smiling and caressing her.

At that moment, she moved her hand.

Chapter 2067: A Sword From The Sky

Lin Feng didn't notice she had moved a few fingers, but suddenly, Qi emerged from her body. Lin Feng frowned.

"You You!" Lin Feng smiled and said, "You You, you heard me, right? Hurry up and wake up! We'll go to the Holy Spirit Dynasty together. We'll go see our child. I wonder how Qiong Sheng is doing? We are his parents, we should take care of him, he must be almost two years old."

When You You heard Lin Feng, her Qi became even more powerful. She moved her hand again. Lin Feng noticed it this time.

"She's going to wake up!" Lin Feng was truly happy. The medicine the tribe had given them was incredible. Her organs were finally recovered!

Lin Feng grabbed her hand and smiled, "You You, stop sleeping, it's been more than a year now."

Her Qi reached its limit and suddenly she opened her eyes. She looked so beautiful. She looked at him and blinked, so cute-!

"You You." Lin Feng was very happy, he jumped into her arms and kissed her on the lips. You You's eyes twinkled shyly.

"Lin Feng, you..." Tang You You looked shy and cute, all at the same time.

Lin Feng burst into laughter and said, "You're still shy after all that happened."

When she heard him, she blushed even more and pouted. She didn't dare look him in the eyes.

"You're even avoiding my eyes!" grinned Lin Feng. He was so happy he hugged her even tighter. He lowered his head and kissed her on the lips again. She tried to dodge though.

"We have a baby, and you're acting like one," said Lin Feng,

laughing and kissing her over and over again. Tang You You was helpless. Lin Feng was very extroverted at this time.

Tang You You seemed to have forgotten that she was stronger than Lin Feng. However, when he hugged her, she felt powerless.

Finally, he stopped kissing her and looked at her. She said, “What were you saying when I woke up?”

Lin Feng shook his head and smiled, “Did I say anything?”

“You... You said you wanted to tell me something...” said Tang You You. He had promised?...

“Alright, it doesn’t matter. Haha!” said Lin Feng, laughing loudly. He put his hands under her clothes, she looked even more shy.

“You bastard!...” said You You.

“You just learned about that?” said Lin Feng.

“Wuwu...” After a long time, no more sounds spread through the air. You You was lying in his arms. She looked like a flower and had a big smile on her face.

“Little You You, let’s go and see my parents!” smiled Lin Feng. Tang You You still looked uncomfortable.

“Alright.” said You You, nodding nervously.

Lin Feng took Tang You You to meet Lin Hai and Yue Meng He. They knew Tang You You. They had even seen her sleeping. They were happy she had woken up.

“Mother, father,” said Tang You You. Even though she was shy, she had to control herself. And after all these years...

“Alright, Little Lin Feng was worried about you, and finally, you woke up. When Little Lin Feng brings Meng Qing back, we’ll

organize a big ceremony, with Wu Shang too,” smiled Yue Meng He.

Qiu Yue Xin also arrived and said to Tang You You, “Sister You You, you finally woke up.”

“Sister Yue Xin,” said Tang You You gently.

Qiu Yue Xin smiled and said, “Sister You You, you know me.”

“Yes, I’ve been paying attention to all of you,” Tang You You smiled.

When Lin Feng saw they got along well, he was happy. He still had to practice cultivation really hard to bring Meng Qing and Xin Ye back.

He was definitely going to go to the Snow Clan!

Lin Feng spent some time in his spirit world. He gave Tang You You many powerful spells, skills, and techniques. He also spent some time with her, assuaging his guilt. She was extremely strong, so with the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures and some other skills and techniques, she’d become even more terrifying!

Every day, some members of the Pei Clan and the Ji Clan wanted to fight against Lin Feng. Pei Dong Lai was trying to provoke Lin Feng, he said he could kill Lin Feng easily. They made fun of him, they said he could only attack people by surprise. They were actually very nervous about Lin Feng. He had killed so many of their emperors and great emperors!

However, if they had seen how happy Lin Feng looked these days, they would have been even more furious.

“Lin Feng, when are we going to Qi Tian Holy Town?” asked Tang You You. She wanted to see her baby, Lin Qiong Sheng. He was almost two years old now.

“Let’s relax, let’s kill people of the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan, those

two clans who attacked you back on that day. After that, we'll go back to Qi Tian Holy Town. There are still things going on with the historical remains. And I also need to settle accounts with the Tianci Dynasty and the Ancient Jade Dynasty," said Lin Feng. He was angry at the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan, but since he couldn't destroy them, he could at least continue killing the people he COULD kill!

"Alright!" agreed Tang You You.

"You You, what will happen if you go back to the Holy Spirit Dynasty?" asked Lin Feng. She couldn't leave the Holy Spirit Dynasty, that's why she had acted as if she didn't know him. The Holy Spirit Dynasty had saved her life and made her what she had become.

"Lin Feng, what do you think?" asked Tang You You.

"We can transmit the Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill to the Holy Emperor, as well as a few Ancient Holy Scriptures. They can raise Qiong Sheng, that way, they will feel grateful."

"Alright, that's fine," said Tang You You gently.

—

They left Lin Feng's spirit's world, arriving in Tiantai. Tiantai was now as big as a sect, everybody was busy doing things: practicing cultivation, traveling, and so on, so Lin Feng wasn't worried. Regarding becoming a Champion, Lin Feng was even less interested. Like Chu Chun Qiu, he hadn't become a Champion, it was a useless title.

—

Pei Dong Lai appeared at the Pathfinder stage every day. He wanted to kill Lin Feng. Some people came everyday and saw him each time. Time passed though and people understood that Lin Feng wouldn't come. The Ji Clan and the Pei Dong Lai didn't dare ambush Lin Feng, so he didn't need to reply to Pei Dong Lai's

provocations.

This time, however, Pei Dong Lai was a bit surprised. In the distance, clouds appeared and a strong wind started blowing: sword energies!

Pei Dong Lai's eyes twinkled. Purple Qi appeared around him. He slowly rose into the air.

"Is he here?" Many people sensed the terrifying Sword intent, and were both astonished and wary. A sword was approaching the plaza. It turned into a light beam and moved towards Pei Dong Lai.

"Finally, you came!" said Pei Dong Lai. Lightning Qi surged out towards the gigantic sword. However, the gigantic sword destroyed the lightning Qi and continued moving towards Pei Dong Lai.

"Hmph!" Pei Dong Lai grunted icily. The air hummed as his Purple Qi surged. He waved his hands and a gigantic purple hand appeared in the sky.

Chapter 2068: Lin Qiong Sheng's Spirit

The gigantic sword was vibrating loudly as it collided with the gigantic hand. Purple energies exploded, steel whined and shrieked. Pei Dong Lai's gigantic purple hand shook violently. His lightning energies turned into eight thousand sharp blades and moved towards the gigantic sword.

What a terrifying attack, eight thousand purple lightning bolts, each as sharp as blades. That attack should kill any high-level emperor!, thought the wondering crowd. Pei Dong Lai was furious. He knew who his enemy was when he saw the sword.

“When Pei Dong Lai was at the top of the Huang Qi layer, he was third on the ranking list. Even though it wasn't as good as Lin Feng, he's a great emperor now, so he should still be stronger than Lin Feng. How could he lose?” the onlookers wondered. His eight thousand thunders streaked across the skies, blades of living lightning.

The gigantic sword looked indestructible and unstoppable, and contained a foreboding strength that absorbed the force of the earth and sky. Nothing could stop it!

“Die!” shouted Pei Dong Lai explosively. His eight thousand threads of purple Qi condensed and moved towards the gigantic sword. Thunder broke, and shook everything as the point of collision exploded. The gigantic sword finally stopped moving forwards.

Pei Dong Lai released more lightning energies, as he turned into a gigantic figure and shot towards Lin Feng.

However, at the same time, a black cloak flickered and turned into three thousand illusions. Pei Dong Lai had the sensation millions of people were attacking him. He felt great pressure!

Pei Dong Lai's face stiffened. The gigantic man glanced around...

that wasn't Lin Feng, it was a woman!

"Piss off!" shouted Pei Dong Lai explosively. Gigantic purple hands struck out all around him. However, they all exploded. A hand crashed onto his gigantic man and it exploded, forcing Pei Dong Lai to reappear as he was hurled back. However, the illusions surrounded him and punched him. His face turned deathly pale.

When the strong cultivators of the Pei Clan saw that, their faces changed drastically. Their Saint Emperors had surrounded Champion University and then had come back. Since that moment, their Saint Emperors hadn't shown up again. However, at this moment, the Qi which was attacking Pei Dong Lai was a Saint Emperor's Qi.

"No...!" The crowd heard someone scream. There was a massive explosion in the distance. The three thousand illusions condensed, and Pei Dong Lai disappeared. He was dead!

The faces of the members of the Pei Clan turned deathly pale. They were staring at the woman and Lin Feng. He shouted furiously, "Lin Feng, Pei Dong Lai wanted a fair fight against you and you plotted against him, bastard!"

"The Pei Clan is really funny!" retorted Lin Feng, glancing at those people. How amusing!

"A great emperor fighting against an emperor is a fair fight? A Saint Emperor tried to kill me, that's also fine for the Pei Clan. Emperors of the Pei Clan don't even dare come out. Saint Emperors come to find me, that's your concept of fairness?" said Lin Feng mockingly.

He flitted away and smiled at Tang You You. "When I become a Saint Emperor, I'll go to the Pei Clan and we'll talk about fairness."

His voice resonated far away. The crowd understood that Lin Feng wanted to destroy the Pei Clan and the Ji Clan. He wasn't playing. Fairness? The Pei Clan had sent Saint Emperors to

surround Champion University, and now the Pei Clan's emperors didn't even dare come out anymore. Their words were ridiculous!

Pei Dong Lai had been killed. The Pei Clan was mortified. A high-level emperor was killing all the most talented cultivators of the Pei Clan! It was a tragedy for the Pei Clan. People like Pei Dong Lai were too rare!

The Great Imperial Palace was also affected. Pei Dong Lai was a member of the Great Imperial Palace, but Lin Feng didn't think about the Great Imperial Palace at all. He didn't care about them and their list.

However, Lin Feng didn't even think about the Great Imperial Palace, he only thought of the Pei Clan.

The Pei Clan and the Ji Clan were going to regret crossing him!

You You had almost been killed. Meng Qing had been taken away. Nobody could imagine how Lin Feng felt. He would never forget that they had surrounded him to kill him, including the Snow Clan.

——

Three great emperors and twenty emperors of the Ji Clan had fallen, and two great emperors and seven emperors of the Pei Clan had fallen in one day. Lin Feng had planned this massacre for a while.

The Pei Clan and the Ji Clan were infuriated again. Lin Feng simply hid once more.

At the same time, Champion University stopped recruiting people from the Pei Clan and the Ji Clan. If the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan dared attack a student of Champion University, the Ancestors would personally punish them.

The Holy City was astonished, while the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan remained silent. They were Ancient Holy Clans, this was pouring salt on their wounds. Champion University had publicly

announced that they would not recruit students from the Ji Clan and the Pei Clan anymore, how humiliating!

The people of the Holy City understood that Champion University was on Lin Feng's side, and the two clans might even disappear from the Holy City someday if Lin Feng became extremely strong.

The Ji Clan and the Pei Clan were being jointly humiliated by Champion University and Lin Feng. What could they do? And what if Lin Feng became extremely strong? They would be destroyed!

However, Lin Feng didn't care about all those conjectures. After he left, he went to see the Ancestors, and they talked about a few things nobody knew about.

—

At Qi Tian Holy Town, even though the atmosphere was less lively, there were still some strong cultivators interested in the historical remains. People still wondered who the chained cultivators in the historical remains were.

Lin Feng arrived back at the Holy Spirit Dynasty. When they saw Lin Feng and Tang You You come back safe and sound, the Dynasty were pleasantly surprised. Lin Feng was the father of one of their future Holy Emperors, and Tang You You was also an important person to them.

—

Lin Feng was crouching down in a courtyard. In front of him was a cute little baby. He was two years old, and his eyes kept twinkling. He was wearing a little robe. He looked at Lin Feng and then at the Holy Emperor.

“Qiong Sheng, don't you want to see your parents? They're in front of you now,” smiled the Holy Emperor.

The little boy walked up to Lin Feng, pointed at him with his

little finger, and asked, “You’re my father?”

“Yes,” Lin Feng smiled.

“Oh, if you’re my father, then I must have inherited your spirit. Show me your spirit!” said the little boy, looking pensive.

“Eh...” Lin Feng was a little surprised and smiled. “Show me your spirit first, and I’ll show you mine.”

“Alright!” said the little boy. An endless number of little dragons appeared behind him. When Lin Feng saw that, he was astonished. Qiong Sheng was already a Tian level cultivator! His spirit had Awakened!

Lin Feng had cold sweats. He was even embarrassed to show his spirit!

Chapter 2069: A Battle in Juetian Mountain

“I released my spirit, show me yours!” demanded the little boy. He looked very serious.

“Alright, I will show you,” Lin Feng smiled. A gigantic nine-headed dragon appeared behind him. When Tang You You saw that, she smiled widely.

The little boy smiled and said, “Father, your spirit is the same as mine. But why do I have a whole bunch of dragons, and you don’t?”

“Eh...” Lin Feng shook his head and smiled, “You must be more talented than me!”

Lin Feng recalled his spirit, and the baby boy giggled and recalled his spirit too. He looked at his mother and said, “Maybe my spirit is different because of my mother.”

“Qiong Sheng!” said Tang You You, hugging the boy.

Lin Qiong Sheng looked curious and said, “Mother, I inherited both your spirits, will I become extremely strong?”

“Yes, you’ll be the strongest one!” Tang You You smiled.

“The Holy Emperor told me that I would become a strong cultivator of the Holy Spirit Dynasty.”

“He’s right, you’ll become a Holy Emperor,” said Tang You You, caressing his head.

“Alright, I’ll become a Holy Emperor of the Holy Spirit Dynasty!” said the little boy. They were chatting happily. The little boy was happy to finally meet his father. He wanted to learn spells from his father, but Lin Feng deflected the requests. The dynasty knew how to raise children. They quickly gain power, but they retain the heart of a newborn. They practiced pure cultivation.

The Holy Spirit Dynasty did all they could to raise Lin Qiong

Sheng. He would learn the strongest spells of the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Then, after breaking through to the Huang Qi layer, he would obtain powerful Ancient Holy Scriptures.

Lin Feng didn't hurry to transmit spells, skills, and techniques to Lin Qiong Sheng. He had a terrifying spirit, and in the future, it would fuse together with his blood. He'd learn cosmic energies, and then he'd become like Chu Chun Qiu, able to study the Sky Absorbing scriptures and the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures.

Ancient Holy Clans raised children the same way. Many geniuses only started practicing cultivation for real after having breaking through to the Huang Qi layer, when they started traveling and fighting.

Many geniuses also knew secret skills and techniques, and hid their social status when traveling. They stopped being incognito after having become great emperors. Of course, truly incredible geniuses couldn't do that because they needed to battle a lot to become a great emperor, and if they were incredible, everybody noticed them.

Lin Feng was extremely talented, but he was still only a high-level emperor. He had started practicing cultivation when he was fifteen, he hadn't been as lucky as these geniuses. He had always only relied on himself.

Lin Feng spent some days with the baby, then he went to the Holy Emperor and transmitted the Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill to him. Of course, it was less perfect than when a Saint transmitted them to people. They'd have to rely on themselves to study it. Lin Feng also gave him some powerful scriptures. Even though the Holy Spirit Dynasty had existed for a very long time and didn't lack Ancient scriptures, Lin Feng had obtained some great ones. He had too many though, so he transmitted those useless ones to the Holy Emperor.

Of course, Lin Feng wasn't going to forget that the Holy Emperor had helped him. He hadn't just come for Qiong Sheng.

Lin Feng was lucky. The Holy Emperor told him some good news: three days from now, the Holy Jade Princess of the Ancient Jade Dynasty would fight against a talented woman. Many people wanted to watch. The Holy Jade Princess and her opponent were both incredible.

Lin Feng knew that the Holy Jade Princess was extremely strong. She had some mysterious techniques, and also knew some incredible illusion techniques and spells. Among the eight geniuses who had surrounded them, the Holy Jade Princess, Ji Chang and Zhuo Qing were the strongest. This time, the Holy Jade Princess wanted to fight against that girl because they wanted to try and break through to the Di Qi layer.

Lin Feng didn't care. He had killed Ji Chang even though he had broken through to the Di Qi layer. Even if the Holy Jade Princess was stronger than Ji Chang back then, after having broken through to the Di Qi layer, he had become stronger than her. Lin Feng knew there were going to be many strong cultivators at the battle, including many strong cultivators from the Ancient Jade Dynasty. If he killed a holy woman, the Ancient Jade Dynasty wouldn't forgive him.

Three days passed quickly. Lin Feng played with his son before finally leaving the Holy Spirit Dynasty alone. He went to a mountain called Juetian Mountain, where the Holy Spirit Dynasty had agreed to fight against the woman. Lin Feng understood that some strong cultivators of her Dynasty were going to come too. He also knew that people from the Holy Spirit Dynasty were going to come. He had decided to come alone though. Not many people knew he had returned to the Holy Spirit Dynasty, as the Holy Emperor had concealed that from most of the people in Qi Tian Holy Town. Lin Feng had disappeared for a year, and the Holy

Emperor didn't want anything to happen to him.

Just like in the Holy City, many people in Qi Tian Holy Town thought Lin Feng was still dead.

There were actually two peaks actually at Juetian Mountain, facing one another. A beautiful women was standing on each peak. They both looked celestial and extraordinary. One of them was the Holy Jade Princess. The other one was a beautiful woman from Goblin Spirit University.

The second woman had a genuine phoenix bloodline, and was the strongest cultivator of her university. She was much stronger than Crazy Bull, and also a Champion. Goblin University had two Champions. It would have been the same at Champion University if Ji Chang hadn't died, both he and Lin Feng would have been Champions. But Lin Feng didn't care about being a Champion.

Celestial Godly University also had two Champions: Chu Chun Qiu and Ying Cheng. Such a thing hadn't happened in a very long time.

Many strong cultivators were in attendance and watching the two women: the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao, who was stronger?!

Lin Feng arrived and landed atop a mountain. There were many people around him. They were all staring at the two women, nobody paid attention to him.

It seems that everyone is interested in this battle. Lin Feng glanced around, seeing strong cultivators everywhere. That was why they hadn't organized the battle on a battle stage, as there wouldn't have been enough space for the audience.

"It's going to start!" said someone next to Lin Feng. Everybody stared at the two fighters, remaining silent save for the sougning of the wind. That wind became stronger and stronger, and began to

whistle. The Holy Jade Princess' clothes fluttered about her.

At the same time, a terrifying strength filled the air. A rosy mist appeared all around, containing a powerful intent. Scorching hot flames appeared inside. This was Yi Tian Jiao's intent!

“What a strong woman!” said Lin Feng. Many geniuses could be jealous of that level of intent!

Yi Tian Jiao jumped into the air, and at the same time, a phoenix appeared, the air beginning to burn as embers appeared around her.

“The Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao will definitely become Saint Emperors someday. They will become symbols of their generation,” whispered someone. These two women were extremely strong, it was a rare thing to see!

Chapter 2070: Wu Jue and Wu Qing

The two female cultivators started fighting, Qi boiling around them. The two women's speed was incredible. The Holy Jade Princess controlled illusion Dao intent, and at that moment, she had the advantage.

However, many people didn't see it that way. Even though Yi Tian Jiao was being defensive, the crowd realized that she was releasing a terrifying phoenix, and a phoenix territory had appeared. Phoenixes could burn anything. Even the clothes of the Holy Jade Princess started burning.

"The Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao are extremely talented. They are among the strongest people of Qi Tian Holy Town. I wonder which one will become the most famous," someone wondered aloud.

"We'll see. Look, Wu Jue is here," said someone, pointing at a high mountain. There was someone wearing white clothes there, looking confident and at ease. He was alone, nobody around him, and cut quite an impressive figure.

"Wu Jue?" Lin Feng knew many people in the Holy City, but not in the other cities. When he heard them, it seemed that Wu Jue was even more impressive than Yi Tian Jiao and the Holy Jade Princess.

"Wu Jue has the potential to become the first Master of the Dark Night Region. Apparently, he's going to start traveling. Saint Emperor Wu Jue only had one child. He hopes Wu Jue can have more children to keep the bloodline healthy. Maybe that he wants to have a child with one of those two girls, that's why he came here," conjectured someone near Lin Feng. However, nobody said how strong he was.

Master Wu Qing was the first Prince of the Dark Night Region back in the days, thought Lin Feng. Prince, Master, all those were

respectful terms. Great emperors and emperors could be called Prince or Master, like Master Mi back in the days. It could also mean anything, it depended on the region. In the Dark Night Region, being the First Master meant being the strongest cultivator. It was even better than being a Champion. Champions had the potential to become Celestial Emperors, and maybe Saint Emperors if they didn't die. But in the region, only one person was called Master. Wu Jue had the potential to replace Prince Wu Qing and become the First Master.

And the same existed for women, there was a First Lady of the Dark Night Region.

Wu Jue had come to see the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao.

"The competition will be fierce for Wu Jue. Lin Feng, and the eight cultivators who fought against him, well, he killed five of them, but three are still left. Apart from Lin Feng, Chu Chun Qiu could also be a competitor. Even though he's not famous in Qi Tian Holy Town, he also went onto the Holy Way Stage. He didn't sit on the Holy Imperial Throne though, which means Lin Feng has more potential than him."

People kept chatting about the geniuses of the region. There could only be one Master and one Lady in the region.

Everybody knew about that in the Dark Night Region.

At that moment, the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao's battle was getting explosive. The Holy Jade Princess' attacks were getting more and more terrifying. Her mysterious Dao power looked real, as did her illusions. Her powers were mysterious. Yi Tian Jiao didn't change anything, her phoenix kept flickering.

Finally, fissures appeared, explosion sounds spread in the air, an ocean of flames appeared. The atmosphere was filled with destructive Qi.

The Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao landed on the ground

again and looked at each other. Their Qi kept increasing.

“You are both so beautiful, why fight!” said someone at that moment. The crowd was startled. Wu Jue had spoken.

Nine broken illusions appeared in a whistle of movement, all Wu Jue’s silhouettes, and very lifelike. He landed between the two women and smiled, “You are both so beautiful, come to my palace, we can learn from each other, but we can also chat about life.”

When the crowd heard Wu Jue, they thought he was very audacious, and also carefree.

“Wu Jue, you want both of us to go to your palace?” asked the Holy Jade Princess, smiling icily.

“Indeed!” Wu Jue nodded.

“You’re not very lucky,” said Yi Tian Jiao icily. The atmosphere became much hotter.

“Since I dared talk, I don’t mind,” Wu Jue smiled. The crowd frowned. That guy wanted both of those two incredible women? In one year, the Holy Jade Princess had become much stronger. Yi Tian Jiao wasn’t weak, either!

“Thanks for coming.” said the Holy Jade Princess smiling coldly. Then, she jumped away, her mysterious Dao strength rolling out provocatively. His soul started shaking.

“Your understanding of Deep Abstruse Dao has increased,” Wu Jue smiled indifferently. He waved his hand, and 81 gigantic hands appeared. They all contained a different type of explosive power, deadly, destructive...

The Holy Jade Princess’ Deep Abstruse Dao looked real. It looked terrifying.

“Wu Jue’s strength is impressive...” the crowd observed. Deep Abstruse Dao power was incredible and destructive. But Wu Jue’s attack was even more brutal, it could block the Jade Princess’ Deep

Abstruse Dao. He could kill people with invisible and intangible attacks. He could already easily kill ordinary high-level emperors.

Yi Tian Jiao also moved, she didn't mind joining hands with the Holy Jade Princess to fight against him, he was famous and was known as someone extremely strong.

The atmosphere became even more oppressive. The two women released even more terrifying attacks. However, Wu Jue remained as motionless as a mountain, and the manifested hands didn't break. Finally, he smiled and said, "You are so beautiful. Don't be mean. Come and have a walk by the lake with me. We can talk about love."

Wu Jue released even more aggressive energies, which bore down on Yi Tian Jiao.

"Since there are two beautiful women, you could give me one," said someone intervened at that moment. The crowd was astonished. Who else was provoking the two women?

Lin Feng jumped forwards. The crowd frowned. Who was this guy?

Lin Feng was incognito. He couldn't show himself, especially if he wanted to take the Holy Jade Princess away.

Wu Jue and the two women saw someone arrive among them, Wu Jue the most surprised. He wasn't the only audacious man there?

"If you want to talk about love with the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao, you must be strong enough," Wu Jue smiled. A gigantic hand appeared and moved towards Lin Feng. All sorts of strength surrounded him.

"Of course!" Lin Feng smiled back. He released deadly cosmic energies to counter Wu Jue's hand attack, multiple explosions manifested before the hand was ripped completely apart.

The gigantic explosion made everybody's hearts pound violently.

Another beast had arrived!

Chapter 2071: Indecent Provocations

Lin Feng's punch astonished the whole crowd. Wu Jue's attack was extremely explosive, he could resist both Yi Tian Jiao and the Holy Jade Princess at the same time, meaning he was extraordinarily strong. Otherwise, he wouldn't have dared talk freely about romance with them.

Lin Feng was still walking forwards slowly. The sounds of their auras clashing kept exploding about him. The three fighters had already dispersed. Wu Jue studied Lin Feng as he smiled. "Which one do you like, Your Excellency?"

"The Holy Jade Princess is pure as jade and clean as ice, she's noble and pure. I want to get on intimate terms with her," Lin Feng smiled back. The Holy Jade Princess smiled icily. These two men were truly indecent...

"Who are you, Your Excellency? You want to get on intimate terms with me, but I am afraid it won't be possible," the Holy Jade Princess said icily.

"Holy Princess, you're amusing," Lin Feng smiled. He continued walking towards her.

Wu Jue's silhouette flickered, and he landed before Lin Feng, saying, "Since you don't want to give me the two women, let me see if you are eligible to get intimate with the holy princess."

Dao power swelled and surrounded Lin Feng, making him feel extremely uncomfortable. The wind reached every single part of his body. Wu Jue was bald and his head polished shiny as he smiled broadly. He jumped forward and raised his fists.

Lin Feng looked confident and at ease, and didn't stop. He condensed cosmic energies into empty space energy and moved towards the punches. Lin Feng's fist was dazzling as he kept countering Wu Jue's attacks. Five gigantic fingers appeared, they

looked as hard as mountains and oppressed Lin Feng. Lin Feng had the impression he was going to collapse.

Lin Feng's physical strength was incredible, but those energies were really oppressive, and could easily destroy an ordinary high-level emperor. Wu Jue had the potential to become the First Master of the region, he was extremely strong without a doubt.

Lin Feng raised his hand and a sword streaked across the sky. It cut apart the gigantic hand, shattering it loudly. In one strike, Lin Feng had destroyed it!

Wu Jue was now standing in front of Lin Feng, his strength condensing with terrible power that was making the air vibrate. A moment before, when Wu Jue had fought against the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao, he hadn't used his full strength. He was even stronger than the watchers had believed...

However, Lin Feng also released and condensed strength. His cosmic energies erupted in pulses of power. At the same time, Lin Feng released ancient imprints, and a word appeared: MOURN. The power shook the earth and heavens.

"Ancient words, is that an incantation?" The watchers were astonished. What kind of strength was that? Surprisingly, Lin Feng dared use that kind of strength against Wu Jue's explosive attacks. Among people of his generation, few people dared fight against Wu Jue, and right now Lin Feng hadn't even used Dao power yet.

When Lin Feng and Wu Jue's powers collided, some parts of Juetian Mountain exploded. Clouds of smoke and dust appeared, forcing some people to fly away coughing. The Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao both looked astonished. Lin Feng and Wu Jue were both emperors, like them, but the two women had no choice but to admit the two men were much stronger than they were.

Initially, people had come here to watch the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao's battle, but now Wu Jue and that stranger were

drawing all the attention.

Wu Jue and Lin Feng separated, both somewhat surprised. Wu Jue was the most surprised, amazed that someone could compete with him. Lin Feng's cosmic energies were near unstoppable, and his punches were as heavy as mountains. It was difficult to defend against them!

Lin Feng was also astonished, because he knew how strong he was. He had incredible cosmic energies and an incredible physical strength, and at the same level, not many people could compete with him... but Wu Jue was one who could. His Dao power made even Lin Feng feel very uncomfortable.

Unfortunately for Wu Jue, Lin Feng's physical strength was simply too incredible. He had had to withdraw.

Lin Feng understood that Wu Jue didn't have an undeserved reputation now, and definitely had the potential to become the Master of the region. He could compete with the strongest geniuses of the Huang Qi layer.

Wu Jue looked at Lin Feng and smiled indifferently. "I really want to know who my enemy was?"

"You know it's me, so it's good. You don't need to know my name." Lin Feng smiled back.

Wu Jue's eyes twinkled and he nodded, "You are strong enough to get intimate with the holy princess. She's yours."

"Wu Jue is insolent, he dares say the princess is that guy's, as if she were his property! Who does he think the Holy Jade Princess is?" said someone speechlessly when they heard Wu Jue.

"Wu Jue is free and unrestrained. He doesn't want elders to follow him, or maybe Wu Jue's Holy Palace doesn't want the elders to influence him while he's traveling."

At that moment, Wu Jue looked at Yi Tian Jiao and smiled, "Since the Holy Jade Princess is his, you are mine. Let's go to the

Holy Palace together. We'll consummate our love."

"I'm not interested," said Yi Tian Jiao icily. Wu Jue had no respect for her. Consummate their love? How insolent! Was he talking about having a child?!

"I will definitely take you to my Holy Palace," Wu Jue said calmly. He sounded firm and stubborn.

Lin Feng landed before the Holy Jade Princess and smiled, "You're so beautiful. I've always loved you. Finally, we're going to be on intimate terms. You can't refuse!"

People were sweating coldly. Those two geniuses had come to the mountain, disturbed the two beautiful women while they were battling, and now they were making indecent remarks. It was difficult to imagine.

The Holy Jade Princess smiled coldly.

"Don't worry. I don't harm women," Lin Feng told her, smiling indulgently. He looked aloof and arrogant.

The Holy Jade Princess released her Deep Abstruse Dao power in an instant. An illusion appeared in his mind as the energies were reaching for him. She was so fast, pissed off at his sexual harassment.

A gigantic MOURN word appeared, Lin Feng closed his eyes and struck out with both hands. Powerful destructive energies rolled out, and the Deep Abstruse Dao power broke apart. The Holy Jade Princess was still moving towards him, however!

Lin Feng sensed the strong wind surround him. Her Deep Abstruse Dao power was terrifying. Even with his eyes closed, the illusions didn't disperse. The Holy Princess' attack messed with his perceptions!

Lin Feng continued moving and punched out again with thunderous force. He used his full strength, and the Holy Jade Princess was driven backwards. She wanted to escape, but Lin Feng

raised his hand again and a golden web appeared around her. Her expression changed, and she desperately started releasing as much strength as she could to break the web.

However, Lin Feng moved faster than the eye could follow, he was even faster than her!

“Holy Princess, don’t abandon me!” Lin Feng smiled.

The Holy Jade Princess’ cold smile had already disappeared as she shouted furiously, “You’re insolent!”

She released her Deep Abstruse Dao strength again, but a gigantic hand appeared and an implacable strength surrounded her. She couldn’t move fast enough. Lin Feng landed in front of her again and grabbed her hand with one hand and her waist with the other, stunning everyone with his audacity.

Lin Feng lowered his head, his lips moving towards hers. Her face turned deathly pale. This man dared assault her sexually in front of so many people!

Chapter 2072: Capture the Holy Woman

“Let me go!” shouted the Holy Jade Princess icily. At that moment, Lin Feng’s left arm was around her waist, his hand was on her bottom. He moved his right hand to her breasts. If he wanted to, he could easily kill her.

“You’re in my arms, how could I abandon you?” Lin Feng smiled. He started walking away, intending to leave with her.

“What an incredible guy!” Wu Jue was stupefied when he saw Lin Feng’s uninhibited actions.

“Insolent!” shouted someone icily. Some of the bystanders rose up into the air. The Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao both had terrifying backgrounds. Lin Feng and Wu Jue were harassing the two women, and initially, their people hadn’t gotten involved, such things were unavoidable on the path of cultivation and they had to deal with such things themselves. But now the two women had lost control over the situation and these men were humiliating them!

A few great emperors appeared in front of Lin Feng and ordered him icily, “Let her go!”

Lin Feng smiled indifferently. He was holding the Holy Jade Princess firmly. She felt humiliated, her face was deathly pale.

“If you don’t want her to die, let me pass,” replied Lin Feng indifferently, then continued walking forward. Everybody was startled at his insane actions. Surprisingly, he dared despise the strong cultivators of the Ancient Jade Dynasty?

“What an insolent bastard!” A great emperor released his Qi, the wind began to whistle around him. However, Lin Feng grunted icily, raised his hand and bombarded the Holy Jade Princess’ body with cosmic energies. She groaned with pain and coughed up blood, her face paling.

When the crowd saw that, many shuddered in fear. This guy was decisive and cruel! He even dared attack a beautiful woman!

“The Holy Jade Princess is pure as jade and clean as ice, flawless and noble. If I can’t get on intimate terms with her, then I’ll destroy her,” Lin Feng said to those Ancient Jade cultivators with a careless smile. The strong cultivators of the Ancient Jade Dynasty were flummoxed; they had thought that just showing up would be enough for him to give up!

When they heard his reply, they were really shocked. How come this guy was so insolent?

“You want to die?” swore the leader of the group icily.

“I don’t mind dying with the holy princess!” Lin Feng smiled broadly. He continued moving forwards. The Ancient Jade cultivators looked glum. They chased after Lin Feng, wanting to see who dared act this insolently and kidnap the Holy Jade Princess?

“Aren’t you afraid that I’ll kill her?” asked Lin Feng, turning his head to glance back at them.

“If you dare kill her, you’ll die too!” Those people couldn’t listen to Lin Feng without doing anything, so of course they wanted to chase him!

“Alright, follow me then,” Lin Feng smiled. He continued flying away. When the crowd saw that, they were amused despite themselves. This day had been even more fun than they had thought it’d be!

“Wu Jue didn’t act insolently, he really wants a child with Yi Tian Jiao. He can’t go too far. That guy though, he’s cruel and crazy! He kidnapped her!” The gossips began to wag their tongues. Who was he? He could compete with Wu Jue in terms of strength, and he was dauntless. He had even kidnapped the Holy Jade Princess!

Even Wu Jue didn't dare act that insolently, but this guy had. Was he simply too self-confident?

—

Lin Feng flew at full speed, the air shrieking about him. However, the group of great emperors chasing him wasn't any slower than he was.

Lin Feng saw a lake appear in front of him, and smiled icily.

Lin Feng accelerated and dove into the lake. At the same time, he released a special kind of Qi, his spirit world Qi!

"Eh?" The great emperors following him frowned and accelerated. They released their godly awarenesses and smiled coldly. Did Lin Feng think he could escape by entering the lake?

There was a flurry of popping sound. Lin Feng had cloned himself, hundreds of his silhouettes appeared. The great emperors saw it all with their godly awareness.

More clones continued appearing. The clones surrounding him started moving in every direction.

The Ancient Jade strong cultivators above the lake were stunned. Did Lin Feng think he could escape? Ridiculous!

One of them released a terrifying Qi. However, a Great Imperial Weapon appeared in Lin Feng's hand, blocking her power with an explosive force. The clones didn't vanish!

"Hmph!" One of the women cultivators of the Ancient Jade Dynasty released even more strength. Her attack had been the one blocked by the Great Imperial Weapon.

Waves of water crashed in every direction, and clones exploded one after another. When they all disappeared, the strong cultivators of the Ancient Jade Dynasty swallowed. How had he done that? They had watched him with their godly awareness, and yet the princess and Lin Feng had disappeared.

“Disperse. Let’s check the surrounding area!” said the leader of the group, pulling a long face. They separated quickly. Very quickly, they chased after the clones who had fled in every direction. They destroyed them easily, but quickly realized that they were all clones!

“What’s going on?” one of them asked feebly. They had already chased all the clones who were outside, destroying dozens of them easily, so where was he? How had he disappeared?

After a short time, the Ancient Jade cultivators came back and looked down at the lake, glancing at one another and grimaced as their faces paled. Had they lost their Holy Princess?

“What do we do?” asked one of them. They were panicking. They would have never thought they would lose their holy princess, especially in front of the whole crowd of them. She had been kidnapped before their own eyes by a cultivator of the Huang Qi layer!

Nobody replied. They were terrified of the consequences.

At the same time, Lin Feng had changed his clothes and mask, and now reappeared in Qi Tian Holy Town. He looked relaxed. Those people from Qi Tian Holy Town were too self-confident. He had just used an ordinary Great Imperial Weapon to get rid of them. In other words, he hadn’t lost anything.

Lin Feng had returned to the Dynasty already. He was in his own courtyard and entered his spirit world. The Holy Jade Princess was still there. There was no portal in or out, and Lin Feng could appear there as he wished. She was shocked as she asked, “Who are you? Where are we?”

“Holy woman, don’t you remember me anymore?” Lin Feng replied emotionlessly, walking over to her.

Her face stiffened and she blurted out, “If you dare rape me, the

Ancient Jade Dynasty won't let you off!"

"You really think you're pure as jade and clean as ice, pure and noble?" Lin Feng smiled mockingly. He raised his hand and took off his mask.

The Holy Jade Princess' face turned deathly pale.

"Lin Feng!" The Holy Jade Princess was horrified. Lin Feng... A pervert would have raped her, Lin Feng wanted to kill her!

However, she tried to remain calm as she swiftly said, "Lin Feng, no matter what you want, I will give it to you. You can even make love to me if you want. We can cooperate. I can even become your wife. What do you think?"

She was smart, she knew she wasn't strong enough to compete with Lin Feng and she didn't want to die, so she tried everything she could.

"Nah, too troublesome. I'll use you as a Demon Puppet. That way, I'll make love to you if I want to, I will even be able to control the Ancient Jade Dynasty using you. You'll become my slave," Lin Feng said icily.

The Holy Jade Princess grimaced horribly. A Demon Puppet! When she heard that, she realized her life was going to become a nightmare!

"You prefer making me turn into a walking corpse than deflowering me?" the Holy Jade Princess smiled seductively. An illusion appeared, she lifted her dress, her white thighs appeared.

Lin Feng remained stoic. She was staring at him, she even opened her cleavage. A terrifying demon light penetrated into her brain, and her face turned even paler. Lin Feng wasn't going to let her off! He was extremely determined, she couldn't tempt him!

Chapter 2073: Newborn

The Holy Jade Princess had disappeared. Many people in Qi Tian Holy Town were astonished. There was an undercurrent in Qi Tian Holy Town related to her vanishing.

People were chatting in a restaurant. “A young master disappeared, that girl disappeared, how many people have disappeared in Qi Tian Holy Town?”

“I don’t know exactly anymore. Between eighty and ninety people, I guess? All those people have something in common; they are all talented, and they’re all high-level emperors. I wonder who dares act that arrogantly? They’re all specially related to some geniuses of powerful groups. The leaders of those groups are all, at least, Celestial Emperors, some of them even have Saint Emperors!”

“The Ancient Jade Dynasty’s princess was kidnapped in front of many people by a perverted young man. Maybe nobody had thought an emperor would be able to kidnap her in front of everyone. They don’t even know who it was!”

Everybody kept chatting. If Lin Feng knew what they were talking about, he would be extremely surprised. There were members of the Dynasties of Qi Tian Holy Town, and from some universities. They were from the most powerful groups of the Dark Night Region. However, there were more Ancient Holy Clans in the Dark Night Region than Dynasties. Ancient Holy Clans weren’t at the top of the region. Recently, many young people from ancient clans had disappeared. Many people started thinking that Lin Feng had captured the Holy Jade Princess.

—

As all those people were chatting, Qin Gan, the Tianci Holy Emperor, and other people were gathered before an altar. There were gigantic pillars around the altar, a black mist surrounding

them. Atop each pillar was a high-level emperor, soul strength emerging from their third eyes and moving towards the person standing in the center of the room. He looked bestial, his face extremely white and small flames around him. The terrifying soul strength surrounded him.

After a short time, the faces of the younger people present distorted. When they released their last threads of soul strength, they died. Their souls were destroyed!

The bestial young man on the altar opened his mouth and absorbed their strength, looking drunk. He suddenly opened his eyes, and a gloomy Qi invaded the atmosphere. Even though he was just a high-level emperor, he didn't look at even Saint Emperors respectfully.

"Eighty-one of them, how's your soul now?" Qin Gan asked the young man. That young man was the Saint they had brought from the Saint's World, Saint Tianhun! They were feeding his soul with high-level emperors' souls, sacrificing the young people to him. His body and soul were improving.

Nobody would have thought that all the young people from ancient holy clans who had disappeared had been kidnapped by these Holy Emperors.

"Not bad. It's the only way," replied Saint Tianhun calmly. The lives of eighty-one geniuses had been used to feed him. As long as it was useful for him, they would keep sacrificing others to him.

"So, master..." said Qin Gan.

"Don't worry, I will do what you've asked me. You may all choose nine people and I'll transmit some powerful ancient techniques to them. You may also choose one person and I'll transmit holy techniques to them. Regarding you guys, we'll see about that in the future," Saint Tianhun said indifferently. They were all cooperating with him. Saint Tianhun wouldn't transmit all he had to these people, though. Otherwise, he'd be useless.

The Dynasties understood that, so they cooperated step by step.

“Who is the strongest Shrine these days in the Continent of the Nine Clouds?” asked Saint Tianhun, as if he had thought of something.

“Hm, the Fortune Shrine, I guess?” replied Qin Gan calmly.

Saint Tianhun’s eyes twinkled. The Fortune Shrine? He hoped they could help him, using a Misfortune Soul or the Godly Medicine of the Immortals!

“In the Dark Night Region, are there powerful enemies?” asked Saint Tianhun.

“The strongest person should be the First Master of the Dark Night Region, Prince Wu Qing. Besides him, there are some other very powerful cultivators who are extraordinary and have potential, such as Wu Jue, and the one who kidnapped the Holy Jade Princess, are also extremely strong. And there are some people who have King-type bodies.” said Qin Gan looking pensive. He continued, “By the way, I have the feeling that the one who got onto the Holy Way Stage, Chu Chun Qiu, is very dangerous. I think he might become a new King Chu.”

“King Chu?” asked Saint Tianhun expressionlessly.

“You’re from the ancient days, you don’t know King Chu. However, many years ago, when I was young, King Chu was like a god in the Dark Night Region, he feared nobody,” replied Qin Gan.

Saint Tianhun didn’t really care, he just nodded. His only goal was to stabilize his cultivation once more! He asked, “What about the one I saw before, the one whose body I wanted?”

Qin Gan and the others remained silent for a few seconds. They naturally all remembered Lin Feng. He had had two incredible battles in Qi Tian Holy Town, Holy Emperors had even fallen because of him. They hadn’t forgotten about him. And now many people had forgotten about him, they all thought he was dead.

“Back then, he had a great battle, we all think he died.”

“What a pity, his physical body was perfect!” said Saint Tianhun. He regretted that he had not obtained that body. The body he had now wasn’t nearly as good.

“Master, we’re going to select some people,” said Qin Gan before leaving. The rest all followed. The Ancient Jade Dynasty’s princess had disappeared. The leader of the Ancient Jade Dynasty was starting to have doubts about them, they had been forced to explain to her that they had nothing to do with that. Otherwise, it would have led to big problems. They didn’t want to offend the Death Fairy!

Besides, the Animal Clan had remained silent for such a long time. But since the Ancient Clans and the Animal Clans hadn’t shown up for a long time, they didn’t need to worry.

There were Animal Districts in all eighteen main cities of the Dark Night Region. They were all places where enlightened animals gathered. Humans ruled over the region, but they still coexisted with the Animal Clans. Qi Tian Holy Town was the same, they also had an Animal District. They were much stronger than Ancient Holy Clans. The Animal District in Qi Tian Holy Town had some truly formidable creatures living there. Such creatures were also extremely conceited. They had dominated humans ages ago, but then the different human groups had joined hands and now the Animal Clans hadn’t shown up for thousands of years. Nobody really knew how what they were doing or how strong they had become, they had been hidden for too long...

Things had changed with time. Some groups fell, some groups rose, they all had their own stories. Some stories were boring where nothing changed, and some stories were astonishing. However, only a few people could stand out because of their own story.

The world was very big, and there were many small worlds, some

of them as big as the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and there were many geniuses everywhere. Staying at the top was extremely complicated, and everyone there had their own stories too. The only way to stand at the top was to progress all the time.

Saint Tianhun was making efforts, the Animal Clans were making efforts, Yi Tian Jiao was making efforts, Zhuo Qing was making efforts, Wu Jue was making efforts, everybody, all the geniuses of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, were making efforts!

Lin Feng was also making efforts. They all had different lives, but they all had the same thought: reach the clouds! They all wanted to rule over the world someday and transmit their legacy onwards!

Chapter 2074: Movement in the Animal District

Millenia ago, the Animal District ruled over Qi Tian Holy Town. They acted independently and defiantly, standing up to others as equals aggressively. Many Animal Clans from elsewhere used to come to Qi Tian Holy Town back then to join the Animal District.

However, at some point, the Ancient Holy Clans and Dynasties of Qi Tian Holy Town joined hands and started a great war against them. Qi Tian Holy Town had turned into a field littered with corpses. Many strong cultivators had fallen, and many small worlds of the Animal District had been destroyed. Humanity had also paid the price, but finally the Animal District had fallen and lost their influence.

They couldn't afford to act arrogantly now, they weren't as imposing and awe-inspiring as before, even before they had disappeared. However, some news had started spreading through Qi Tian Holy Town. The members of the Animal District had apparently been traveling to gain experience discreetly...

—

The denizens of the Animal District had disappeared for a very long time into one of their sealed worlds, a place now filled with a brutal bestial Qi. It was extremely thick in one particular location. There was blood everywhere. There were hundreds of thousands of beasts: rocs, apes, bulls, rhinos, pythons... it was astonishing. They were all alive, but they seemed to be suffering, their blood dripping everywhere. They looked desperate and hopeless.

There was a lake made from their blood. There were some terrifying and ferocious beasts within that lake, greedily absorbing the other beasts' blood. The hundreds of thousands of beasts had been offered to them as a sacrifice. If the Dynasties of Qi Tian Holy Town had seen that, they would have been astonished and

troubled by the implications!

However, the people outside didn't know about that. This continued for three full years.

Within those three years, Qi Tian Holy Town had changed too, but there were some strange things going on, too. More and more people had kept arriving. If it had only been like that, it wouldn't have drawn people's attention, but the thing was that many beasts had been taken there and everything was done discreetly. Their target destination was the Animal Mountain, which hadn't been active for a long time.

Finally, the strong cultivators of the Dynasties investigated that location, and they all noticed the bestial Qi. People rose up in the air, not trying to hide their anger. On the ground, they saw people enter the Animal Mountain and disappear.

"Something serious is going on!" commented someone. All the Dynasties were astonished. They had the impression something terrifying was going to happen!

The Holy Spirit Dynasty's Holy Emperor was with Lin Feng. Someone came up to the Holy Emperor and said, "Holy Emperor, the Animal District has been active recently. They kidnapped many animals and took them to the Animal District, but they didn't hide."

"Animal District?" Lin Feng was startled.

"Lin Feng, the Animal District acted independently and defiantly in the past, but they couldn't compete with humanity. They were the strongest animal force of the Dark Night Region. They've been silent for thousands of years now, though..." the Holy Emperor informed Lin Feng. Then, he looked at the strong cultivators and asked, "Is there anything else?"

“No, they’ve been silent for thousands of years, we can’t get inside, so we couldn’t learn anything.” replied the strong cultivator.

The Holy Emperor nodded and said, “Let’s go to Animal Mountain and see.”

“Holy Emperor, I’m coming with you.” said Lin Feng. He wanted to see the Animal District.

“Alright, you can watch. But we can only stay outside, we can’t get in. Nobody from Qi Tian Holy Town dares go in,” said the Holy Emperor calmly. Lin Feng shivered. He understood the Animal District was extremely strong.

—

They headed to a location near to the Animal Mountain. Lin Feng could sense the bestial Qi, but he didn’t mind, he had studied animal cultivation too!

The Holy Emperor and Lin Feng gazed into the distance. Some strong cultivators were chained and taken forwards. There were dozens of people in that group, all of them emperors.

“There are some there too,” said Lin Feng.

“And there,” said the Holy Emperor, pointing at another place. He whispered, “The Animal District has captured many beasts, they can’t hide it, so they didn’t even try. They just tried to do it as quickly as possible. I wonder what they’re doing?...”

“Why does the Animal District need so many beasts?” asked Lin Feng.

“I’m not sure. In this world, there are many mysteries. Who knows what secret powers they have? It’s difficult to imagine,” replied the Holy Emperor. Lin Feng nodded. The world was big, there were many different methods of gaining power.

At that moment, the atmosphere suddenly became dark. More

bestial Qi covered everything, and suddenly rose up to blot out the sky.

There was no light anymore. Lin Feng was startled at the strength of the Qi. Surprisingly, they couldn't see the sun anymore.

"You really want to die!" someone swore suddenly. The strong cultivator who was dragging the chained beast cultivators had shouted. He had been harassed a few times, he hadn't thought anyone would dare provoke him. "How insolent!"

When he said that, he entered the darkness. A gigantic fire appeared, the flames looked like claws...

"Interesting. Surprisingly, more and more humans dare come to the Animal District. The one who controls the darkness probably controls genuine Darkness Dao," said the Holy Emperor. Lin Feng gazed into the distance, glancing at the chained people. Suddenly, Lin Feng released some ice-cold Qi.

"Lin Feng, what's going on?" asked the Holy Emperor when he saw Lin Feng. He was surprised. What was going on with Lin Feng?

However, Lin Feng already started forwards, releasing Death intent. Many people noticed him and were startled.

"Uncle Shen Yu!" shouted Lin Feng. Emperor Shen Yu frowned when he heard that familiar voice, he turned around and saw a stranger's face.

"Uncle Shen Yu, it's me!" said Lin Feng, as wearing a mask. At that moment, Emperor Shen Yu looked startled and shaken... it was Lin Feng!

"High-level emperor." Emperor Shen Yu realized that Lin Feng was a high-level emperor, he was astonished. He had been right, Lin Feng was extremely talented. He had become a high-level emperor so quickly!

However, Emperor Shen Yu quickly realized something and said

to Lin Feng, “Hurry up and run, leave!”

Many times, His Highness the Beast of the Night had come back empty-handed. Even though Lin Feng was talented, he was just a high-level emperor. Among the people who were chained, apart from the one who had fought against His Highness the Beast of the Night, there was an Great Imperial Beast too! Lin Feng couldn't compete with them. He couldn't save Shen Yu!

“Uncle Shen Yu, did they attack Yao Ye Island?” asked Lin Feng. He wouldn't have thought that the Animal District would go so far to kidnap beasts.

“Yes, they want to capture all the beasts. Lin Feng, hurry up and leave!” shouted Emperor Shen Yu to Lin Feng explosively telepathically. However, at that moment, Lin Feng's Death intent was even colder. How could he abandon the people from Yao Ye Island? They had saved him! They were the first people who had helped him in the great world! There were many elders whom he cared about in Yao Ye Island; the wind elder, Uncle Shen Yu, Hu Yue, the cute Great Earth Demon Ape, had they all been captured?

In the distance, the Holy Emperor hadn't thought Lin Feng would be friends with some beasts which had been captured. He was startled and found himself smiling wryly. What was going to happen?

“You want to die!” Bestial lights streaked across the sky and shot towards Lin Feng. Gigantic claws appeared and converged on him. The atmosphere became oppressive. That Qi was far more fearsome than a human's Qi.

“Lin Feng, go!” said Emperor Shen Yu. His face stiffened. Even though Lin Feng was talented, he couldn't be stronger than a beast!

There was a crackling sound, as if bones were being broken. Emperor Shen Yu looked extremely worried, but suddenly, he saw the body of the beast who was attacking Lin Feng explode, blood splashing everywhere.

Lin Feng was motionless. He just glanced around icily!

Chapter 2075: Young Beast Master

When Emperor Shen Yu saw that, he was astonished, and his heart started racing. He took a deep breath and realized that Lin Feng had changed a lot since the last time he had met him. He wasn't a baby anymore. One punch, and he could crush a high-level imperial beast!

When he thought about that, he had hope again. He had been practicing cultivation for so many years and he was still only a high-level emperor. He used to protect Lin Feng, a talented Zun cultivator. Maybe Lin Feng had become famous in the main cities now...

The chained beasts looked at Lin Feng, all of them angry and depressed. The one who was holding the chains and dragging them had pitch-black eyes, and looked gloomy suddenly.

“Lin Feng, that's a mahoraga python, his poison is terrifying. You're talented, don't risk your life here, escape now!” said Emperor Shen Yu to Lin Feng telepathically. The mahoraga python was a great emperor, Lin Feng couldn't compete with him!

“Uncle Shen Yu, he will die!” said Lin Feng icily.

The mahoraga python smiled icily. This little boy is audacious, die?

The snake's red tongue whipped out towards Lin Feng, the snake spat out poison at him. A high-level emperor dared threaten him!?

However, a terrifying and thick strength appeared around Lin Feng, dense waves of energies gathering. He raised his fist and punched out hard enough to make the air howl. The poison exploded with a rumble and boom. The snake put his tongue back in his mouth and spun around, turning into a gigantic snake hundreds of meters long.

The snake opened his mouth again. He could easily swallow a

dozen people. At the same time, he kept spitting out poison at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng looked at the snake icily, a terrifying strength surrounding his body. He condensed aggressive demon cosmic energies in his right hand and condensed incantation words in his other hand. Mourn, Weapon, Battle, the words resonated in his grip. Lin Feng's strength was blending with the earth and sky. A terrifying Qi surged up around him.

Lin Feng punched out once again, before condensing Kalpa strength and jumping forwards. He raised his fist, aiming at the snake's mouth. His strength bore down on everyone, shaking their souls.

The mahoraga python looked abruptly scared. An incantation, his poison was entirely destroyed?

However, the mahoraga python continued moving towards Lin Feng, as he had no choice. He had to kill Lin Feng!

There was an explosive impact. The confrontation was fast, precise, and cruel. The snake wanted to impale Lin Feng with his great fangs!

However, Lin Feng burst forward instead. He penetrated into the gigantic snake's mouth and at that moment, an explosive strength flared and spread through the snake's body.

The mahoraga snake's body was filled with poison, and even emperors could die in there. However, the mahoraga python instead started shaking violently. Even his poison couldn't destroy that strength!

The mahoraga python screamed, just before it suddenly exploded into tiny pieces of flesh raining down from the sky. The snake's soul started flying away, staring at Lin Feng icily.

How strong!, thought Emperor Shen Yu. His heart was pounding. Lin Feng could kill great imperial beasts...

“He has become so strong.” His heart kept pounding. He was speechless. As an emperor, Lin Feng could kill great emperors, it was astonishing.

The python’s soul hissed and flashed towards Lin Feng, turning into illusionary lights. He wanted to get into Lin Feng’s brain to destroy his soul!

However, Lin Feng merely grunted icily and condensed death strength. Then, he slapped out, his hand turning into millions of death imprints. They crashed onto the snake’s soul, who cried out helplessly. But his soul had been stamped, he couldn’t do anything anymore. Finally his soul turned grey and dispersed.

“He’s dead!” The crowd was astonished. An human emperor had killed a beast great emperor.

“Roar!” the beasts of the ground roared in a thundering rage. The great emperor who had kidnapped them was dead! They wanted to break free from the chains, and at the same time attack their remaining enemies, who all had ugly expressions. The slavers wanted to escape, but Lin Feng’s silhouette flickered. He raised his fist and attacked them one by one.

Very quickly, he had killed all of them!

Lin Feng’s sword destroyed the chains. The beasts from Yao Ye Island all looked at Lin Feng, stunned and speechless. Lin Feng was an emperor and surprisingly, he had become so strong!

“Uncle Shen Yu, where is Sister Hu Yue?” asked Lin Feng, glancing at the beasts he knew, he couldn’t see Hu Yue in the group.

“Two different groups kidnapped us, there was a Celestial Emperor. I hope Hu Yue isn’t in danger,” said Emperor Shen Yu. His face stiffened as he remembered. Being kidnapped was horrible, especially as a beast high-level emperor. The Celestial Imperial beast had tried to capture the great imperial beasts, but

he had failed.

—

As Shen Yu had said, in another place, there were two great imperial beasts and a few imperial beasts, they were dragging some enlightened animals. The passage of the Animal District was open, and a group of people came out. The leader of the group was a terrifying young man, his eyes were bloodshot.

“Greetings, Young Beast Master,” said the two great imperial beasts respectfully when they saw that young man. He was one of the 13 people they had chosen in the Animal District to receive the sacrificial legacies of hundreds of thousands of beasts. Those people would become the future of the Animal District and Qi Tian Holy Town. They were doing all this to regain their power and station!

Apart from that, they also hoping to bring their ancestor back to life, a Beast Saint. If they succeeded, they were soon going to become unprecedentedly strong again!

“Hey,” said the young master nodding at those people. He said indifferently, “Those chained creatures are all new slaves, I see.”

“Indeed.”

“Give me that girl,” said the young man, pointing at Hu Yue.

The great imperial beasts smiled. Their Young Beast Master liked females. And that one was very beautiful, so his actions were normal.

Hu Yue pulled a long face. She didn’t look happy like in the past, was she going to become a sex slave? What was the life of a slave?

Hu Yue looked extremely unhappy as the young man walked up to her and grabbed her chin. He then slapped her and said, “Have you ever had sex with anyone else?”

“Pah!” She spat at him, but the young man moved his head aside

and dodged. He was extremely quick.

The young man then smiled in a strange way and tapped her cheeks. He smiled and said, “If you have ever had sex with another beast, I’ll fuck you and then I’ll kill you long and painfully.”

Then, he walked to the big gate and smiled evilly. Hu Yue grimaced. Was she going to become a sex slave?

Chapter 2076: Ancient Beast

The beasts of Yao Ye had started fighting against the great imperial beasts of the Animal District. The atmosphere was dark. Qi was boiling. Lin Feng had already saved Emperor Shen Yu but was still furious. The Animal District was going to kill Hu Yue. Lin Feng was extremely worried for her!

The Holy Emperor had told Lin Feng a lot about the Animal District. He knew they were terrifyingly strong. They had a sealed world, and not even a Holy Emperor dared go there. Nobody even knew how strong they had become. But even if a Saint Emperor went there, they might die!

Lin Feng looked thoughtful. In the distance, a new group of people had appeared. Lin Feng saw the leader of the group, a young man whose eyes were bloodshot. He looked ferocious. Even when animals of the Animal District turned into human form, their bestial Qi was still terrifying. Their Qi was thicker than the Qi of the beasts of the Vast Celestial Ancient City's Animal World. Even Wu's bestial Qi wasn't that thick.

The young man frowned when he saw Lin Feng and the others. His Qi spilled out towards them. Surprisingly, a human had dared save their beast slaves just outside their territory. How insolent! They had been discreet for such a long time, and now some human already dared provoke them!

The young man turned into a beam of red light and shot towards Lin Feng. His speed made Lin Feng shudder with dread. He suddenly raised his fist and released his strength, his fist colliding with the enemy's claws. The claws crashed onto Lin Feng's fist, blood splashed and Lin Feng was driven back.

Lin Feng lowered his head and saw his own blood before he raised his head again. The strange young man continued releasing a terrifying bestial Qi. Lin Feng hadn't anticipated the young man

would be so strong. Lin Feng knew how strong he was himself, he could easily destroy ordinary great emperors. However, if Lin Feng had known who this enemy was, he wouldn't have been surprised. This person had been in the sealed animal world for thousands of years and had received hundreds of thousands of beasts' blood as a sacrifice. They were about to raise thirteen incredible geniuses. This young man was one of them, a terrifying descendant of the Animal District.

The Young Beast Master stopped moving. He put his hands behind his back and shook them out secretly. He hadn't expected Lin Feng to be so strong!

"You still want to try?" said Lin Feng icily.

The Young Beast Master grunted coldly and retorted, "How reckless!"

"Is that so?" Lin Feng released death lights and suddenly jumped away. The air began to shake and erupt from the conflict of energies as dazzling purple lights exploded.

The thunderclaps made the sky shake violently. The strong cultivators behind the Young Beast Master glanced at one another and one of them said telepathically, "Young Beast Master, back. His cosmic energies are terrifying!"

However, the Young Beast Master acted as if he hadn't heard them, stretching out his hands, which turned into sturdy blood-red claws. One glance sufficed to understand how terrifying those claws were.

"Assassinate!" The sharp claws turned into a curtain of eighty-one murderous heavy claws. They collided with the thunders, even the great imperial beasts were speechless. Surprisingly, a human was so strong, he could surprisingly compete with their Young Beast Master's assassination claws!

Emperor Shen Yu and the others were completely stunned. Lin

Feng was so strong! How fearsome! In such a short time, Lin Feng had become astonishingly strong. They couldn't believe their eyes. How talented! Emperor Shen Yu had never thought Lin Feng would become so strong...

Lin Feng and the young man separated. Lin Feng's hair was fluttering in the wind, Death intent rolled around him. There was lightning crackling in his hands. His enemy's arm had exploded from the lightning, his face had turned deathly pale.

The young man was staring at Lin Feng. He had never lost a battle, except against the other twelve young masters of the Animal District, and now a human could easily oppress him!

"What's your name?" the young man demanded of Lin Feng.

In response, Lin Feng walked towards him, and the young man shuddered in fear. He sensed an invisible and intangible strength surround him...

I'm one of the thirteen young masters of the Animal District, I'll become a leader someday! How can I fear a human? He should die! After thinking about that, the Young Beast Master released an even more terrifying bestial Qi. He raised his other arm, struggling because it was almost paralyzed, and his claws became gigantic again. He looked both hideous and ferocious.

A killing wind started blowing. Lin Feng charged ahead as fast as lightning. He rose up in the air and punched out again, and the sky followed behind his blow.

There was a crash of impact, and the Young Beast Master was smashed away. He coughed up blood a few times, his face even paler. At his back, the great imperial beasts stared at Lin Feng, and started releasing deadly energies.

"Move away!" The young man glanced at Lin Feng icily. He wiped off the blood around his mouth and looked at Lin Feng ferociously. The great imperial beasts he had made move away

were staring at him.

“It’s been a long time since someone made me bleed. It’s a pleasant feeling,” said the Young Beast Master, looking even more bloodthirsty. “Piss off or I’ll kick you away.”

Lin Feng just stared at him. This young man gave orders to great imperial beasts, he had to have a very high social status within the Animal District. If Hu Yue had been captured, he needed to act quickly.

When Lin Feng thought about that, he looked at Holy Emperor Ling and nodded, he said telepathically, “Holy Emperor, I need to capture him, help me.”

“Alright!” replied Holy Emperor Ling, moving towards the beasts. The great imperial beasts sensed that the Holy Emperor coming. They instantly released energies to surround their Young Beast Master.

“Blood shield!” Lin Feng frowned. Holy Emperor Ling was extremely fast, and had already arrived, but it wasn’t quick enough.

“Surprisingly, you want to capture me. I’m sure we’ll meet again,” said the Young Beast Master as he turned into an illusion. He quickly disappeared from Lin Feng’s field of vision.

Lin Feng’s face stiffened, and he shouted explosively, “If you want to fight again, remember to keep a beautiful female beast for me, her name is Hu Yue!”

“Alright, I’ll find her. Wait for me!” called back the voice. Lin Feng’s face was grim. As the young man disappeared, the other beasts of the Animal District who were fighting against the beasts from Yao Ye also stopped and rapidly fled.

Emperor Shen Yu and the others looked at Lin Feng and the Holy Emperor next to him. How incredible! Lin Feng even knew such a terrifying cultivator! They had never seen such an oppressive

strength, even from His Highness the Beast of the Night.

At that moment, Lin Feng gazed into the distance and noticed a dark silhouette. He was startled. That was the leader of Yao Ye Island, a mysterious creature. It was impossible to see his real body, even from a short distance. He just looked like a shadow.

“Let’s leave. Animal Mountain is the Animal District’s periphery. Some strong cultivators could come out anytime,” said the Holy Emperor to Lin Feng and the others. Lin Feng didn’t feel like leaving, but he had no choice. He hoped the Young Beast Master wouldn’t kill Sister Hu Yue. Lin Feng didn’t know whether she was there already or not.

“The Young Beast Master is proud. If he finds Hu Yue, he will not kill her, he will use her to attract you.” said the dark shadow.

“I hope so,” Lin Feng nodded. Their silhouettes flickered as everyone withdrew from the area. Surprisingly, the mysterious Animal District had even chased after people as far away as Yao Ye Island. What was their plan?

After they left, a group of terrifying beasts came out of the mountain, their bestial Qi terrifying. The crowd watched them from afar, deeply cautious.

“We can wait a few more days. When we’re done with the sacrifices, it will be the beginning of a new era!” said a strong cultivator of the Animal District icily. His Qi rolled far away in the distance. He wasn’t afraid of being seen by humans anymore!

Chapter 2077: Animal District's Agitation

The Animal District of Qi Tian Holy Town had been hiding for thousands of years. Finally, they had reappeared. All the powerful groups of Qi Tian Holy Town knew that the Animal District was preparing something. They were going to flip things over and rise again. At the same time, the elders of the different Dynasties told their young people about the Animal District's legends, which astonished everyone.

At the same time, Lin Feng brought Emperor Shen Yu and some other people from Yao Ye Island to the Holy Spirit Dynasty. The prisoners who weren't from Yao Ye Island left.

"Where will His Highness the Beast of the Night go?" asked Lin Feng to Emperor Shen Yu.

"You don't need to worry about him. It won't be easy for the Animal District to capture him, he's strong," said Emperor Shen Yu. His Highness the Beast of the Night was a mysterious being, a lord of darkness.

"It's a catastrophe for Yao Ye Island though. Two Celestial Emperor and two great imperial beasts went there, it was impossible to resist them. His Highness the Beast of the Night took everyone away, but so many of our friends have been captured or killed. The real target of the Animal District were the high-level emperors though, and then medium-level emperors," said Shen Yu pulling a long face. He hadn't thought Yao Ye Island would ever face such a calamity!

"The Animal District didn't only attack you, they attacked many animal groups in the Dark Night Region. They just didn't dare attack the strongest animal groups of the main cities," said the Holy Emperor. Emperor Shen Yu looked at him and sighed. He knew that this person was the Holy Emperor of a Dynasty, Lin Feng had already become powerful and influential. He could chat

freely with Holy Emperors. Such a thing would have been unthinkable years before!

The current Great Emperor Qing had oppressed Lin Feng in the past, but in the Holy Emperor's eyes, Great Emperor Qing was a nobody.

“Yes, all we can do is wait. I hope Hu Yue will be fine,” said Lin Feng coldly. If anything happened to her, he'd have to destroy those responsible as well!

Even though all the Dynasties in Qi Tian Holy Town knew that the Animal District was plotting, nobody dared go there. Even though back when the Dynasties had joined hands to fight against them, they couldn't go to their sealed world.

In the Animal District, the Young Beast Master who had fought against Lin Feng glanced at Hu Yue in a strange way.

“Are you really Hu Yue?” asked the Young Beast Master. After his battle against Lin Feng, he had gone back to the Animal District and had started looking for Hu Yue. He hadn't thought it was the female he had chosen.

Hu Yue's beautiful eyes twinkled. Why was he asking?

“Indeed. What do you want?” replied Hu Yue icily.

The Young Beast Master slowly drew his lips into an evil rictus grin, put his hand on her lips, and said, “I initially wanted to have fun with you, but since he wants you too. I'll first defeat him and then I'll have fun with you.”

When Hu Yue heard that, she frowned and asked, “Someone is looking for me?”

“Indeed, he's very strong. He's stronger than me now. Maybe he's your boyfriend, but after the sacrifice, I'll kill him!” said the Young Beast Master, chortling in anticipation. He took back his

hand and smiled icily, “I’ll kill him in front of you. I’ll tell him that from now on, you’re my war trophy.

“I’ll show him!” After that, the Young Beast Master left. The sacrifice was almost over. After that, he’d break through and become much stronger!

At the site of the sacrifice, all the beasts had been chained and cut so their blood would flow. The blood lake was floating, blood kept dripping down and turning into a scarlet lake. The blood of all the beasts began to condense...

Some skeletons walked over. They might be dead, but they had terrifying eyes.

Those people used to be leaders of the animals long ago, all of them terrifying creatures.

At that moment, a group of formidable old beasts appeared, their Qi daunting. They looked at the skeletons and said, “Dear animal leaders, please take care of the end of the sacrifice.”

“Alright, the Animal District is going to rise once more!” said the animal leaders hoarsely. The old beasts in the sky looked solemn and respectful. They were going to reclaim their place!

The beasts which had been captured for the sacrifice were still bleeding out their essence. The skeleton leaders entered the blood lake and bathed in it. They were returning to life!

“For the thirteen Young Beast Masters!” said someone loudly. The thirteen young men were also in the lake of blood. Those people were almost all high-level emperors, they had perpetrated this slaughter for the future of the Animal District in the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

At that moment, the thirteen cultivators looked solemn as they enjoyed the blood of the mass sacrifice. They were going to rise and control the Animal District in the future!

The blood was thoroughly red. The sky in the Animal District had turned red too. The hundreds of thousands of resident beasts were shouting furiously. Their Qi was getting stronger and stronger, and so was their vitality. Flesh started appearing on the thirteen skeletons. The slave beasts kept roaring in pain. Their blood kept dripping and gushing into the pool.

However, that was just the beginning. A gigantic silhouette descended from the sky, its Qi terrifying. It was an animal Saint's body. His wings blotted out the sky and covered the sun.

Suddenly, the blood moved towards that old body, the resident beasts looked solemn and respectful. An infinite amount of blood appeared in the sky.

The thirteen beasts looked touched and moved. They had summoned the Ancient Beast Saint to receive his legacy, and then they'd rise again. They'd go and travel around the world, they'd become much stronger. Nobody would be able to compete with them anymore! But now it was time for the sacrifice!

On that day, blood flowed unceasingly. Beasts roared furiously as their Qi invaded the whole region. That small world was seething with excitement and bloody anticipation.

In the outside world, nobody knew what was going on there. They just guessed that the Animal District was preparing something. They didn't know that the Animal District had been getting ready for a very long time...

Seven days later, outside of the Animal District in the mountains, many beasts appeared and walked into Qi Tian Holy Town. They didn't slaughter people carelessly, they had learned from past mistakes. They didn't want to be enemies with the Dynasties anymore. However, many people noticed them on the streets

because they were terrifyingly strong.

Everybody understood what it meant. The Animal District was back!

During those days, the news spread that an emperor from an Ancient Holy Clan had been punched by a member of the Animal District and hadn't withstood a single attack, dying instantly.

The news also spread that a young man of the Animal District had killed a potential Champion of Goblin Spirit University and eaten him!

The news spread that the Animal District had come back to life and was relentless.

Finally, some members of the Animal District were in the central part of Qi Tian Holy Town where the Qi Tian Battle Stage was, and had started confronting young people of all the Dynasties and Ancient Holy Clans.

At the same time, Hu Yue would appear there too, but many people didn't understand what that meant because they had never heard of Hu Yue. They didn't even know what it meant. Of course, Lin Feng did know what it meant. It meant that Hu Yue was safe, which relieved him!

Chapter 2078: Arrogant Beast

The news shook the whole town. The Qi Tian Battle Stage was a special place. Only very important battles occurred there, hence its location in the very center of Qi Tian Holy Town. The Animal District was challenging all the young people of all the Dynasties and all the Ancient Holy Clans. They wanted to show everyone they were back!

People quickly forgot about the historical remains. The Animal District had come back to life and was caused trouble. Everybody was only talking about the Animal District. How strong had they become? Did they want to be enemies with all the Dynasties? Impossible. They had probably learned from their previous mistakes...

—

In the Qin Dynasty at the sacrificial altar, Saint Tianhun looked perplexed. “Those people from the Animal District are all descendants. Surprisingly, they dare act that arrogantly!”

“Master Tianhun, the Animal District keeps causing trouble in town, especially a few young people who are extremely strong. They can kill some geniuses from Ancient Holy Clans with one punch. One of them even devoured a Champion. I don’t know what’s going on. Surprisingly, they raised such strong cultivators!” said the Qin Holy Emperor.

The Qin Holy Emperor wasn’t happy at all. Back in the Saint’s World, Lin Feng had benefited the most. He had obtained their Ancestor, the Qin Clan had sent a few geniuses there and obtained nothing. Now there was Saint Tianhun, they had chosen some extremely strong and talented young people to sacrifice to him, just as the Animal District was rising. He had the feeling they wouldn’t be able to deal with the Animal District.

“Perfect. I’ll go and practice. Since they took the initiative to

come and provoke us, I'll teach them a good lesson. Wonderful!" said Saint Tianhun, smiling evilly. He said to the Holy Emperors, "You can all go and rest. I need to practice cultivation for a few days and then I'll come out."

"Alright." The Holy Emperors all nodded and left. Saint Tianhun had absorbed eighty-one emperor's souls, but he didn't know that the Animal District had done even worse, their new young masters had absorbed hundreds of thousands of souls!

—

Three days passed in a flash.

The central part of Qi Tian Holy Town was vast. There were eight palaces around it used to challenge people. At this time, nobody was inside. There were many people at the foot of the buildings, though. In the middle, a battle stage had appeared indistinctly. It was in suspension and contained a terrifying Qi.

The Qi Tian Battle Stage was from ancient times, created by a peerless cultivator. Even when Saint Emperors fought on it, their energies didn't spill over. It was a very safe battle stage.

At that moment, an endless number of people were standing around it. They all looked excited.

In the sky, a strong wind started blowing. Strong cultivators from the Ancient Clans descended from the sky and landed on the top of the buildings. They looked both solemn and respectful.

"Those people are strong cultivators from Goblin Spirit University. They actually arrived first! They all have beast spirits. When their spirit fuses together with their blood, they become half beasts, a specialty of Goblin Spirit University! Their students are extremely talented."

The crowd watched those strong cultivators descend from the sky, and kept talking. More and more strong cultivators descended from the sky. There were so many strong cultivators, it was like a

Dynasty had descended from the sky.

“The Ancient Jade Dynasty’s people are here, too. The Holy Jade Princess has disappeared. We don’t know who kidnapped her. It’s funny though, the person who kidnapped her must be extremely strong. Surprisingly, he kidnapped the Holy Jade Princess in front of everybody.”

“The members of the Great Desert Dynasty are all here, too. So many strong cultivators. All the Holy Emperors are here, too. They all attach importance to the Animal District!” the crowd chattered. They all feared the Animal District, it seemed!

“Look, Qin Dynasty. Surprisingly, someone is sitting next to the Holy Emperor. That person is just an emperor, though. Is he a new genius of the Dynasty?”

“He looks evil and sly. I’ve heard that there is no prince in the Qin Dynasty. Even if he were a prince, he wouldn’t be sitting next to the Holy Emperor anyway. He must be incredibly strong and talented. The Holy Emperor must respect that person,” observed some people.

The person next to Qin Gan was Saint Tianhun, but he had a new body. Apart from a few Holy Emperors, nobody knew who he was. Saint Tianhun naturally wasn’t going to say anything either, or it would cause trouble.

As people were talking, red lights appeared in the distance. They looked like blood. People raised their heads and sensed bestial Qi approaching them.

“The Animal District is here!” The crowd shivered. They understood who these people were. Silhouettes descended from the sky one after another. The Qi of the nine people in the front was fearsome.

“What a powerful bestial Qi. They must be leaders, like Holy Emperors in Dynasties!” exclaimed a few members of the crowd

when they saw the nine leaders. They all shuddered with fear. The Holy Emperors frowned. They were astonished. It was them: they were surprisingly still alive? They looked even slyer than they had before...

“The young people behind the leaders are impressive too,” keen eyes from the crowd noticed. Those young people had been raised by the strongest cultivators of the Animal District.

“Dear friends, long time no see,” said one of the beasts icily. They landed on a palace higher up in the air than everybody else.

“The Animal District hasn’t shown up for thousands of years. Indeed, long time no see. You’re all safe and sound. Good for you,” said an old man of the Great Desert Dynasty.

However, the beasts smiled in a cold and evil way, “Indeed, so much time, I wonder how everyone is doing in Qi Tian Holy Town nowadays. Therefore, I decided to take some young people out.”

When he said that, he pointed at the young people behind him. They all looked astonishingly strong. They had been traveling for a long time, it seemed.

Lin Feng looked at the Animal District’s people icily. He could see Hu Yue and two guards at her sides.

Hu Yue was a high-level emperor, but she looked weak in comparison to all those people. They could all kill her if they wanted to. She was scared, especially since the Animal District’s people had taken her out because someone wanted to see her. She didn’t know who, though. It had to be someone extremely strong, otherwise, the Animal District’s young master wouldn’t have obeyed.

At that moment, Hu Yue had the impression someone was staring at her, she glanced around and gazed into the distance. She noticed someone was looking at her. He had a familiar Qi, but she had never seen that face.

“Is it him?” When she saw those eyes, Hu Yue who was usually insensitive and rough suddenly looked touched. Someone cared about her that much? It wasn’t Shen Yu, that was certain...

“Thousands of years have passed and now we came back out, let’s see how strong the young people of Qi Tian Holy Town have become in comparison with ours!” stated a beast aggressively. The crowd was shuddering with fear. He was challenging all the Dynasties, Ancient Holy Clans, and universities. Nobody could refuse. It would be a humiliation, and it would also mean that they surrendered!

Chapter 2079: Animals' Explosive Power

The Animal District was showing up after thousands of years. The first thing they did was challenge all the powerful groups of Qi Tian Holy Town to fight on the Qi Tian Battle Stage.

The Animal District didn't choose to make their elders fight. If their leaders fought against the Holy Emperors, the consequences would have been tragic. Making young people fight was more appropriate.

The animal leader's voice seemed to linger in the silent atmosphere.

"Since you're not saying anything, I suppose you agree," said the animal leader indifferently. A silhouette sprang out and landed on the Qi Tian Battle Stage. He glanced around in a sharp way. His eyes were bloodshot.

"Anyone from a Dynasty, an Ancient Holy Clan, or a university, please go and exchange views on cultivation," said the animal leader. Then he looked at the strong cultivator on the Qi Tian Battle Stage and said, "He's a young man from the Animal District. He's the ninth one. He has no name. You can just call him Ninth Beast."

The Animal District had managed to make thirteen cultivators strong again: two great emperors, seven high-level emperors, three medium-level emperors and one low-level emperor. The Ninth Beast was one of the seven high-level imperial beasts.

Of course, people from Qi Tian Holy Town didn't know how strong he was. They just knew that only a high-level emperor could fight against him.

The atmosphere remained eerily silent and then at some point, a young man slowly walked towards the stage. He released bestial Qi.

“A genius from Goblin Spirit University, Ling Cheng. He has a great roc of darkness spirit. He’s extremely strong. He’s good in both defense and offense.” Everybody recognized him. The Animal District had sent a very strong cultivator, so Goblin Spirit University had to send someone strong as well.

Ling Cheng released bestial Qi in waves. His blood also started boiling. A dark great roc appeared, his hands turned into sharp claws and he started flapping his black wings. The crowd was amazed.

A strong wind was blowing. Ling Cheng flapped his wings above the Qi Tian Battle Stage. Dark lights condensed around him, and he charged towards Ninth Beast while brandishing his sharp claws.

“Goblin Spirit University’s students all have a beast spirit, and they all control animal cultivation. They are even more terrifying than ordinary cultivators. It’s the case for Ling Cheng as well. His attacks are terrifying. He can even compete with Crazy Bull.”

The crowd frowned when they saw the dark silhouette because the Ninth Beast remaining motionless. He looked extremely strong and conceited.

Ling Cheng was as fast as lightning. However, when he appeared above the Ninth Beast, he looked him in the eyes. Suddenly, a massacre appeared in Ling Cheng’s brain. He had the sensation he was going to collapse and faint. His eyes even started bleeding.

The crowd finally saw the Ninth Beast move. He stretched out his hands, the crowd saw some blood, and then the Ninth Beast appeared behind Ling Cheng and blood sprayed. The crowd was stupefied: Ling Cheng’s head flew away, he had been beheaded!

The Ninth Beast didn’t even look at Ling Cheng. He chopped down, and red lights surrounded Ling Cheng’s body, which disappeared.

The young cultivators of Goblin Spirit University all stood up.

They looked furious and astonished. Even the older strong cultivators of Goblin Spirit University were astonished, and staring at the Ninth Beast.

This young man was so strong...

Everybody was speechless. Ling Cheng was so strong and surprisingly he hadn't withstood a single attack. The Ninth Beast was too strong, it was too shocking...

"Animal District." The crowd was speechless, even the strongest cultivators were speechless and thought, How did the Animal District raise such strong cultivators? And apart from the Ninth Beast, how strong are the others?

Saint Tianhun was startled and smiled coldly. "Interesting!"

Indeed, this was interesting to him. He used to be a saint, and now he had captured a body. Theoretically, he was invincible at the same cultivation level. Now that the Animal District had appeared, he realized those people could compete with him. He hadn't thought he'd see cultivators who could compete with geniuses of the old days during the first battle though...

In the Dark Night Region, there were eighteen cities and three main celestial cities. Not many people had the potential to become Champions. Champions were already geniuses amongst geniuses, and very rare. There were only a few people like Prince Wu Qing, or Wu Jue. Usually, only a very few people had the potential to become peerless cultivators, but this generation was different.

They were so strong, there were so many strong cultivators. In the Holy City, Ying Cheng and Ji Chang used to be Champions, and now Chu Chun Qiu was more talented than Ying Cheng. Lin Feng used to be even more talented, he used to be a beast, but he had died during that great battle. Now the Animal District had come back to life, and their first fighter was astonishingly strong.

It was difficult to imagine how much effort the Animal District

had made to raise those beasts. A short time before, their strongest cultivators only had the potential of Champions, but they had sacrificed hundreds of thousands of their own kind for them, and now they were terrifyingly strong.

The only people who weren't surprised were the Animal District's members. For them, this was natural and obvious. They had made so much blood flow, they hadn't done it to waste resources, they had done it to win! They wanted everybody to understand that the Animal District was terrifyingly strong!

The Animal District's strong cultivators remained calm, which made the crowd feel even more pressure.

The Ninth Beast was so strong, who could defeat him?

The Dynasties, Ancient Holy Clans, and universities remained silent. That silence meant something: the Animal District is incredibly strong.

"With the Ninth Beast's strength, if I don't intervene, nobody will be able to defeat him. And the others must be even stronger than him," said Saint Tianhun calmly. The people next to him were silent. They thought the same!

"The Ninth Beast is the ninth cultivator. And among high-level emperors, they have seven people. The Ninth Beast must be the weakest high-level emperor," analyzed Saint Tianhun indifferently. People next to him shuddered with dread.

"And what about those who have received your legacy, Master? Can't they defeat the Ninth Beast?" Qin Gan asked Saint Tianhun telepathically.

"They received my legacy a few days ago only. They can't compete with him. Their thirteen cultivators have probably received terrifying legacies as well," replied Saint Tianhun. Qin Gan nodded slow agreement. Saint Tianhun's arguments were well-grounded.

“I’m going.” After having remained silent for a few seconds, someone spoke up on the side of Goblin Spirit University: Crazy Bull, the Champion!

When the elders of Goblin Spirit University saw Crazy Bull stand up, they looked extremely nervous. They didn’t know what the Animal District had done to make the Ninth Beast so strong, but it was going to be very difficult for Crazy Bull to win. If they lost their Champion, it would be a tragedy.

“A Champion is fearless. A Champion is destined to become a king,” said Crazy Bull. He looked wild and manic. Ling Cheng had been killed. He knew that the Ninth Beast was terrifying, as he had fought against Ling Cheng before. Since he was a Champion, he couldn’t fear to battle. He had to be insane if he wanted to become a king in the Dark Night Region someday. He had to take risks!

Crazy Bull jumped ahead, he looked solemn and heroic. The eyes of the elders of Goblin Spirit University glittered. They didn’t prevent the fearless Crazy Bull from fighting.

Lin Feng was there, his heartbeat racing. Crazy Bull was brave. Lin Feng realized that the Ninth Beast was abnormally strong. He also saw the young man who he had fought on the other day, standing in the seventh position in the line. Was he the Seventh Beast?

Just like Lin Feng had expected, that person was the Seventh Beast indeed. He walked to Hu Yue, his eyes still bloodshot and said, “You overestimate yourself, little boy. If you don’t come out for your sweetie, I’ll humiliate you.”

Hu Yue looked at him icily. She had a secret lover? She didn’t know who it was, though. Was it the young man the Seventh Beast was pointing at?

Chapter 2080: Without the Slightest Scruple

When Crazy Bull landed on the Qi Tian Battle Stage, his blood started boiling. He looked like a terrifying ancient bull as he released a sturdy and powerful strength in waves. His attack was terrifying. A path appeared between the Ninth Beast and him, like a herd of beasts were running towards the Ninth Beast.

The Ninth Beast grunted icily. He stared at Crazy Bull with his bloodshot eyes, releasing Dao power which penetrated into Crazy Bull's brain. Patterns appeared again, the terrifying strength flowing throughout Crazy Bull's brain. At the same time, he raised his hand and roared in a thundering rage. The earth and sky kept shaking, his energies sending the wind howling. In his energies, people could see the Ninth Beast's totems. There were rumblings as Crazy Bull's Dao power slowly broke apart.

The Ninth Beast rose up in the air and the path between them turned into a gigantic great roc, and then an eagle. It opened its wings, which blotted out the sky and covered the earth. Blood-red lights glittered.

"Die!" shouted the Ninth Beast furiously. The scene of the massacre kept appearing in Crazy Bull's brain. At the same time, a terrifying Dao power continued oppressing Crazy Bull. His face turned deathly pale, and he could only grimace. He remained determined, even as his spirit shook. He shouted furiously, and the ground shook under his feet before he jumped forwards. His attack looked indestructible.

The Ninth Beast looked at him in a disdainful way. He bombarded Crazy Bull's horn violently, and the horn exploded. At the same time, the strength continued penetrating into his body. He was driven backwards and his face became even paler, his mouth bleeding.

As the crowd had expected, Crazy Bull the Champion couldn't

compete with the Ninth Beast!

Nobody knew how the Animal District had done this, but if the others were stronger than him, then it was really terrifying!

The Ninth Beast kept assaulting Crazy Bull. Crazy Bull's had the impression his body was going to be crushed. He was a Champion, he was really strong and looked crazed at this point. He turned into a gigantic ancient bull, covered all over with cuts and bruises. But he didn't care, he didn't want to give up, even the Ninth Beast was surprised and a bit scared by his frenzy.

Goblin Spirit University's strong cultivators stood up and stared at the Qi Tian Battle Stage. One of them said, "That's enough, no need to fight anymore."

Crazy Bull and the Ninth Beast collided once more, Crazy Bull was thrown off the Qi Tian Battle Stage. The Ninth Beast jumped and chased Crazy Bull.

"He's away from the Qi Tian Battle Stage now, why chase him!?" shouted a strong cultivator from Goblin Spirit University. He jumped forwards and landed before Crazy Bull, catching him and taking him away. The Ninth Beast could only watch him gloomily and sinisterly.

"Since he came onto the Qi Tian Battle Stage and lost, why drift and live without purpose?" spat the Ninth Beast icily, then jumped back onto the Qi Tian Battle Stage. He calmed down. A Champion had just been defeated!

"How terrifying. The Animal District are too powerful, nobody can compete with them!" sighed the crowd. They were staring at the strong cultivators of the Animal District. They still looked aloof and composed. They had everything under control!

"Anyone else?" asked the Ninth Beast, glancing around at the members of the Dynasties, Ancient Holy Clans, and universities. He looked extremely evil. He looked like a bloodthirsty beast

which wanted to devour its prey. He had even tried to kill Crazy Bull after he had already won!

There was an eerie silence. Even though there were many geniuses in the Dark Night Region, Champions were rare. Not many people were as strong as Crazy Bull. There were only a few people like Chu Chun Qiu, and a few other people who were at the top of the Huang Qi layer, as well as people who had King-type bodies. Nobody had thought the Animal District would have such strong cultivators.

“That’s ridiculous. Qi Tian Holy Town is so big and nobody dares fight!” jeered someone at that moment, jumping forwards. It was the Eighth Beast. He glanced at the crowd and said icily, “Even if nobody wants to fight, I still want to ask everyone to prove that their high-level emperors are strong.”

He started flapping his gigantic wings. He suddenly rose high up in the air. He landed in front of the crowd of people from an Ancient Holy Clan and looked at a high-level emperor. He shouted furiously, a horrible shriek splitting the air as the Eighth Beast grabbed him with his claws and instantly killed him by slicing apart his skull.

“How insolent!” A strong cultivator of that Ancient Holy Clan rose up into the air and pulled a long face. The Eighth Beast dared kill their people in front of them!

The Eighth Beast didn’t stop. His silhouette streaked across the sky and blood gushed. He killed another person from another Ancient Holy Clan. The crowd was astonished. The Eighth Beast was stronger than the Ninth Beast! How terrible! And what about the other ones? The crowd couldn’t imagine.

“Be careful!” everyone said to their young people. The Eighth Beast was a high-level emperor and he only killed people of the same level, so people who were stronger couldn’t attack him. If their high-level emperors were getting killed by the Eighth Beast,

it just meant that their people weren't strong enough.

“Die.” The Eighth Beast killed someone else. His wings were extremely sharp and covered with blood. Another head flew away as the atmosphere became oppressive. The Eighth Beast was too fast...

The Animal District's strong cultivators just watched at all the high-level emperors of the different Dynasties, Ancient Holy Clans and universities disdainfully.

“Be careful!”

“Move back if you aren't sure you can resist.”

All the strong cultivators warned the people of their groups. The Eighth Beast was too fast. In a flash, he had killed a few strong cultivators already. High-level emperors couldn't compete with him. The Eighth Beast was too terrifying. Everybody was astonished. How had the Animal District done this?

Simple, they had sacrificed hundreds of thousands of their fellow beasts to allow thirteen people to become extremely strong!

There were sudden explosions. The crowd realized someone had just blocked the Eighth Beast. When the crowd saw him, they were astonished: that young man looked confident and at ease, no wonder, since he was so strong. People gulped... it was him, Wu Jue! He had the potential to become the First Master of the Dark Night Region!

“Wu Jue can compete with him, but then, how many members of the Animal District have the potential to become First Master of the Dark Night Region?” The crowd shuddered with dread when they realized that. The thought was dreadful. The Eighth Beast stopped moving and smiled evilly, “Not bad. You're the only one.”

He continued flapping his wings, and at that moment, people didn't dare block him, moving away to avoid him. When the Eighth Beast arrived in front of the members of the Qin Dynasty,

Saint Tianhun's grey eyes twinkled, filled with lightning.

"Insolent!" said Saint Tianhun icily, and jumped forwards. Grey lights emerged from his eyes. Red lights emerged from the Eighth Beast's eyes, both colliding. The Eighth Beast had the impression his soul was going to explode!

"How strong!" The Eighth Beast was stupefied. He closed his eyes and swiftly flew back, saying icily, "You're very strong!"

The crowd looked at Saint Tianhun. Who was this person? Surprisingly, the Eighth Beast said he was very strong. He was a stranger to everyone, however...

At that moment, Saint Tianhun's eyes glittered.

"I understood something!" said Saint Tianhun icily. The Animal District was indeed sly. Surprisingly, they had used a terrifying sacrificial ritual. How mad!

(Editor's Note: Of course, the fact he had done the same thing he completely ignores, of course....)

The Eighth Beast continued killing people around. When he landed in front of the Holy Spirit Dynasty, he looked at Lin Feng.

Lin Feng condensed terrifying cosmic energies, lightning gathered around him as his eyes turned as grey as thunderclouds. The Eighth Beast flashed towards him. Lin Feng jumped forwards in response, staring the Eighth Beast in the eyes, those eyes were filled with flames of fury. Lin Feng raised his fist and punched out against the Eighth Beast's claws.

"It's you!" said the Seventh Beast. He grabbed Hu Yue with his claws and jumped onto the stage. The Eighth Beast stopped and looked at him icily.

Lin Feng looked at the Seventh Beast and said indifferently, "It's me."

The Seventh Beast sneered when Lin Feng admitted it was him.

Then he glanced at Hu Yue.

Hu Yue studied Lin Feng. She didn't understand, why was this person trying to save her?

Lin Feng took a step forwards, he looked at the Seventh Beast and said icily, "Let her go and I won't fight today."

The Seventh Beast sneered, his eyes bloodshot, and said, "You're not fighting today? Then I'll kill her on the spot!"

Chapter 2081: Capturing a Beast

When Lin Feng heard the Seventh Beast, he remained silent and released even more terrifying energies. His Qi began to spread out slowly, but it was explosive. His Qi had completely changed. He looked like an insane demon.

“Will you let her go?” repeated Lin Feng icily. He looked emotionless, like a waiting god of death.

“Is she your sweetheart?” spat the Seventh Beast, moving his claws closer to her face. His eyes were bloodshot and looked terrifying. At that moment, Lin Feng jumped forwards. He didn’t jump towards the Seventh Beast, however... he jumped towards the Eighth Beast!

The Eighth Beast smiled evilly as he and Lin Feng collided again. He wanted to see how strong Lin Feng was.

“Die!”

He stared at Lin Feng with his bloodthirsty eyes. Lin Feng saw a massacre in his brain and a terrifying strength started flowing throughout his mind. Lin Feng saw many bleeding beasts, his soul was being attacked.

The Eighth Beast was cruel, brutal, and violent. They had all come back to power after the sacrifices and they had become much stronger. Then they had received the Ancient Beast Saint’s legacy, and reached the top of their cultivation layer. Even Lin Feng, who had a powerful soul had the impression his soul was going to be crushed.

A golden palace appeared in Lin Feng’s mind and protected him. At the same time, his grey eyes became pitch-black, black water appeared in them and collided with the red lights of his enemy’s eyes, while in his black ocean, death strength emerged and protected his soul.

In the outside world, the Eighth Beast brandished his sharp claws, he wanted to cut Lin Feng apart!

Lin Feng's expression didn't change. He raised his fist and punched the claws, destroying them. Lin Feng then moved into the wind, the crowd could barely see him.

"Surprisingly, someone can resist the Eighth Beast, and he even took the initiative to fight against him. He's terrifyingly strong. Where is that man from?" wondered everyone. The Eighth Beast had amazed everyone. He was aggressive and terrifying, killing cultivators from the Ancient Holy Clans and Dynasties a moment before. The strange person who was with the members of the Qin Dynasty and this person were the only ones who could resist the Eighth Beast.

"Hmph!" the Eighth Beast grunted icily. His bloodshot eyes glittered. Lin Feng started shaking violently as the air started to hum. He had the impression his body was going to explode. It wasn't the Eighth Beast's main attack though, he threw himself at Lin Feng and clawed at him again.

The Animal District didn't focus on only one person, thought the crowd. They were astonished. However, Lin Feng just looked solemn and wary. Many invisible and intangible threads of sound energy appeared behind him.

The two fighters got closer and closer. However, at that moment, Lin Feng cloned himself, and a dozen Lin Fengs appeared all around and moved towards the Eighth Beast.

The terrifying invisible and intangible soundwave strength dispersed. The crowd was astonished as the buzzing sounds stopped.

"Soundwave attack, what a terrifying soundwave cosmic energy. Invisible and powerful. You can't even hear it, but each soundwave is as sharp as a sword. How deadly!" someone blurted out. As expected, the Eighth Beast's sharp claws collided with the

soundwaves and a hurricane appeared.

At the same time, the crowd saw Lin Feng move his hand towards the Eighth Beast. The Eighth Beast had the impression a mountain had fallen onto his back. He released as much strength as he could, but he still felt oppressed. The two fighters were drawing closer and closer to one another...

“Die!” shouted the Eighth Beast furiously. His claws became dazzling and golden. They were great oriental greenfinch roc’s claws, but there were dragon scales on them, forming a terrifying defense. He was a mixed-breed!

Lin Feng’s clothes were ripped apart by the claws. The strength almost pierced through his skin, his hair bristled. The attack hadn’t even reached him, and he was already having a hard time...

However, at the same time, he condensed Demon Kalpa strength, then moved faster than they could see. Demon lights pulsed out. People’s hearts were pounding. Two of his clones also released strength. The Eighth Beast was stupefied, The clones also have strength?...

He didn’t have time to think too much. He attacked Lin Feng’s real body in front of him, the collision raising a strong wind. Red lights and demon lights exploded together. The two clones also attacked. The Eighth Beast shouted explosively as their energies collided explosively. He blocked one clone, but not the other one. At the same time, Lin Feng’s real body came back to him.

Lin Feng raised his demon hands, aimed at the Eighth Beast’s head, and there was a crack of impact that astonished those watching. Blood splashed, but the Beast didn’t escape from Lin Feng!

“He resisted so many attacks!” murmured those watching. Their hearts twitched. He seemed like he wanted to capture the Eighth Beast?

“How strong.”

“Who is he?”

The crowd was astonished. Since when was there such a strong cultivator in the Holy Spirit Dynasty?

“Who are you?” asked someone at that moment. It was a member of the Ancient Jade Dynasty. She looked furious and she was staring at Lin Feng.

The members of the Tianci Dynasty also stood up. Their Holy Emperor even stood up and stared at Lin Feng. Everybody was staring at Lin Feng.

“Who am I?” repeated Lin Feng, smiling icily. He looked at the Seventh Beast and said icily, “Let her go.”

“Continue fighting. It’s not over,” replied the Seventh Beast disdainfully. He hadn’t used his full strength yet.

“I told you to release her,” said Lin Feng icily. He condensed strength in his hands again. Many strong cultivators of the Animal District finally stood up and pulled a long face. They had raised their thirteen geniuses, these people were the future of the Animal District. The Eighth Beast and Ninth Beast had already amazed everybody, but now that person had captured one of them!

They looked at the Seventh Beast as a sign he had to release that woman, her life couldn’t be compared with the Eighth Beast’s life.

Hu Yue looked at Lin Feng, her eyes twinkling. How strong! But why did he want to save her? Who was he?

The strong cultivators of the Ancient Jade Dynasty condensed their strength to bear down on Lin Feng, demanding icily, “Who are you?”

Lin Feng looked at them and smiled coldly, “What do you think?”

He took off his mask and his real face appeared, with a dark smile on his face. “I’m Lin Feng!”

When he said that, everybody went silent.

Hu Yue was astonished. Suddenly, she smiled broadly, like she had in the past.

So that little boy had finally grown up and could take care of his sister!

Chapter 2082: Decisive Battle

Hu Yue was astonished, she hadn't thought that little boy would become this strong. Back in the days, she was the one who had to protect him. She remembered back then when she used to take him to all her friends to teach. Back then, emperors could bully Lin Feng easily. Now, he was here and he had captured the Eighth Beast, just so the Animal District would release her!

"Little boy," Hu Yue smiled. She had the impression she was in a dream. When the Seventh Beast had told her someone wanted to save her, she would have never thought it would be Lin Feng!

"Sister Hu Yue!" replied Lin Feng, smiling back at her in greeting.

At that moment, everybody was staring at Lin Feng. The atmosphere became oppressive.

"Lin Feng, he didn't die back then during that battle."

"No wonder he has become so much stronger. It's Lin Feng. No wonder..."

"Back then, Lin Feng fought against eight geniuses, and killed five. Now, even though the Eighth Beast is much stronger than those people back then, he can still compete with him. It's not surprising since it's Lin Feng!"

The crowd was staring at him. Had the Animal District captured one of his women? But that woman had to be a beast!...

The Holy Emperors of the Qin Dynasty and the Ancient Jade Dynasty had all stood up. They released a terrifying Qi towards Lin Feng. He wasn't dead yet!...

Back then, the Ancient Holy Clans and Dynasties wanted to kill Lin Feng and had joined hands, their eight geniuses had fought against him and failed. Now, Lin Feng was back and he had shown up without the slightest scruple.

“Lin Feng,” a strong cultivator from the Ancient Jade Dynasty spoke up. She asked icily, “You captured our Holy Princess, right?”

They immediately thought of Lin Feng. Lin Feng was wearing a mask just now, and he also used clones, he was extremely good at fighting, and he hated the holy princess; everything seemed to lead to Lin Feng.

“The Holy Jade Princess is so beautiful, after sleeping with her, I made her leave. Hasn’t she come back to the Ancient Jade Dynasty yet?” asked Lin Feng, smiling indifferently. When he said that, everybody was astonished. Lin Feng had raped the Holy Jade Princess?

The members of the Ancient Jade Dynasty all had unsightly expressions.

“All the Ancient Jade Dynasty’s beautiful women wanted to kill me back then. However, I don’t mind, I love beautiful women, I wish I could deflower all of you. I just had sex with her, anyway. I hope you don’t mind,” continued Lin Feng, smiling dismissively. The members of the Ancient Jade Dynasty were furious and released even more energies. But they couldn’t say anything; they had joined hands to fight against Lin Feng and they had failed. Now he was back and the Snow Clan wasn’t there to help, could they still kill him?

Lin Feng was backed up by Shi Jue Lao Xian. Lin Feng also controlled the Saint’s body, they couldn’t do anything to him. They hadn’t forgotten what Shi Jue Lao Xian had told them back then...

When the crowd remembered those things, they looked amused. Lin Feng could beat the Animal District’s strong cultivators, he had a powerful background, he was a good fighter, he could compete with the Eighth Beast and Ninth Beast. How strong was he in comparison with the other Young Beast Masters?

“You want your woman to die?” Ice-cold bestial Qi invaded the

atmosphere and the Seventh Beast grabbed Hu Yue's head.

Lin Feng punched out in the Eighth Beast's direction and shouted explosively, "If you touch her again, I'll kill him!"

"Will you dare!?" shouted someone from the Animal District icily.

"Of course I'll dare!" replied Lin Feng. Bestial Qi surrounded Lin Feng, but he looked incongruently calm as he looked back at them. He said grimly, "If you don't believe me, try and you'll see!"

The members of the Animal District remained silent. A strong cultivator of the Animal District looked at Lin Feng calmly, and said to the Seventh Beast, "Release her."

For the Animal District, Hu Yue's life was far less important than the Eighth Beast's. They had spent so many resources on these people. They had done all they could, using a special technique to raise them. Therefore, the thirteen young masters couldn't die!

The Seventh Beast was speechless, but he released Hu Yue, sneering "Piss off!"

Hu Yue didn't look at the Seventh Beast and flashed over to Lin Feng. However, Lin Feng was still holding the Eighth Beast.

"We released her already. What are you waiting for?" demanded the Seventh Beast icily.

"Patience, my friend," said Lin Feng smiling. He said to Hu Yue, "Sister Hu Yue, follow me."

Lin Feng grabbed her and flew over to the Holy Spirit Dynasty's Holy Emperor and said to the Eighth Beast, "You go back."

A strong wind crashed onto the Eighth Beast and flung him away.

The Seventh Beast jumped up to catch the Eighth Beast and glared at Lin Feng icily. However, Lin Feng was looking at Hu Yue and asked, "Sister Hu Yue, they didn't do anything to you, right?"

"They didn't. Little boy, you progressed so quickly," answered

Hu Yue. She still looked sexy in her red robe, and put her arms around him, smiling.

“Sister Hu Yue, you haven’t changed.” said Lin Feng, smiling wryly. Hu Yue was so close to him, her beautiful eyes kept twinkling. “I saw you grow up, you don’t need to hide anything from me,” said Lin Feng, shrugging. He smiled and said, “Anyway, I need to solve this issue.”

Hu Yue looked at the members of the Animal District and then let go of Lin Feng. Lin Feng looked at the Seventh Beast and Eighth Beast, they also looked back at him ferociously.

“You want to play so bad?” Lin Feng looked at the two Young Beast Masters, he wanted to fight. These Young Beast Masters were terrifyingly strong. They wanted to show everyone how strong they were.

“Of course, we all do!” Wu Jue jumped up, his face surrounded by a halo. In his white robe, he looked elegant, confident, and at ease. He smiled at Lin Feng, “I would have never thought you were Lin Feng. You captured the Holy Jade Princess and raped her, you’re really audacious.”

“You’re as brave as me, if not moreso!” Lin Feng replied to Wu Jue. Wu Jue had provoked the Holy Jade Princess and Yi Tian Jiao at the same time! He was as strong as he was audacious.

“Therefore, together!” said Wu Jue with a smile. He slowly walked up to the Qi Tian Battle Stage, the one on the battle stage was still the Ninth Beast.

“Since you want to play, I’ll play with you,” said the Ninth Beast scornfully.

“Since you want to play, all together,” said Wu Jue indifferently. The Eighth Beast and Seventh Beast’s bodies turned into red light beams. They both jumped onto the Qi Tian Battle Stage at the same time and released bestial Qi.

“If you want to fight, I’d love to!” said Lin Feng indifferently. He also jumped onto the Qi Tian Battle Stage, five incredible emperors on the battle stage at the same time.

“Who else wants to play?” Wu Jue looked at the people from the Dynasties and the Holy Clans. Actually, he was mainly looking at Saint Tianhun, who was with the members of the Qin Dynasty. A moment before, he had been the only one, along with Lin Feng who had managed to compete with the Eighth Beast. He was very strong.

Saint Tianhun’s eyes glittered darkly. After that, he slowly stood up, moving as if he had had no bones, and quickly landed on the Qi Tian Battle Stage. There were now six people on the battle stage, all geniuses among emperors; ordinary emperors couldn’t compete with such people. Only people who were extremely talented, good at fighting, and determined could normally become like that... but there were exceptions: Saint Tianhun the body-stealer, and the thirteen Young Beast Masters!

“Die!” shouted the beasts as they released bestial Qi, bursting into motion. The Seventh Beast threw himself at Lin Feng. The Eighth Beast attacked Wu Jue. The Ninth Beast charged Saint Tianhun. The three beasts had a single common point: their bestial Qi was explosive!

“A bunch of deadly fighters!” murmured those watching. No wonder that only three people could compete with those beasts. But what about the ten other beasts? How strong were they?

The Seventh Beast turned into a terrifying red beam of light. It was like an ocean of blood was flooding towards Lin Feng. That blood contained endless skeletons who wanted to eat Lin Feng alive!

The terrifying ocean surged closer to Lin Feng. Lin Feng could tell the ocean of blood was much more powerful than his previous opponent’s energies. Lin Feng stretched out his hands, fissures

appeared, and the ocean of blood divided into two. At the same time, he ran forwards as soundwaves destroyed the skeletons in the ocean of blood.

Chapter 2083: Venerable Sacrificial Soul

Fire

Lin Feng and the Seventh Beast fought for the second time. The ocean of blood kept rolling and splashing around them. However, Lin Feng condensed ancient imprints, ancient words appeared around him, resonating with the earth and sky. At the same time, he also released sword energies to surround his body. The sword curtain and the earth and sky became one, and everything in their way broke apart, the ocean of blood turning into endless tiny drops. The Seventh Beast, who had turned into a blood light, withdrew quickly.

He looked at Lin Feng ferociously. The Seventh Beast's eyes were so bloodshot, it was like wanted to stab Lin Feng with them. He was excited, he had thought he'd kill Lin Feng easily after the sacrifice, but realizing it wasn't the case made him happy. He still had a rictus grin warping one side of his face.

At the same time, the Eighth Beast and Wu Jue were fighting, and the Ninth Beast and Saint Tianhun were dueling. The battles were dreadful. The three beasts had similar attacks: explosive, brutal, violent. Wu Jue condensed all sorts of strength in his punches, they seemed indestructible.

The Ninth Beast and Saint Tianhun's battle looked less violent and brutal than the two other groups'. However, the Ninth Beast felt different, he was astonished at the Saint's strength. It was like Saint Tianhun wanted to absorb his soul!

Everybody was astonished and blankly staring at the battle. Those three Young Beast Masters were dreadful foes. They could compete with all the geniuses of Qi Tian Holy Town, no wonder they had challenged everyone. But now there were three people who could match them!

At that moment, the Seventh Beast stretched out his hands and a

gigantic weapon appeared. Those watching shuddered with dread. There were bestial marks on it, and its Qi was ominous!

“Animal World Brutal Weapon, Bestial Marks Ax.” Some strong cultivators’ eyes glittered when they saw it. That weapon was extremely rare. Ordinary beasts couldn’t use and control such weapons. It required many beasts to be sealed inside it, the more beasts the more explosive the weapon was. The Seventh Beast had probably sacrificed many beasts to create that weapon!

“The bestial marks ax is terrifying. Lin Feng is extremely strong, but it’s getting dangerous for him, can he compete with the Seventh Beast?” someone wondered aloud.

The Seventh Beast roared in a thundering rage and jumped forwards, “You’re quite talented, but now I’m going to offer your blood to my weapon!”

The Seventh Beast’s ax descended from the sky, fissures in space following it. A terrifying amount of strength fell on Lin Feng. It felt like millions of bloodthirsty beasts were attacking him. Even his godly awareness shook!

Lin Feng had a hallucination that he really was surrounded by millions of beasts.

Lin Feng raised his hands and condensed more ancient imprints as quickly as possible. The words of his incantation all appeared and surrounded him as he steadfastly stood his ground. At the same time, a Holy Spirit appeared around him, a demon king or god of death surrounded by death Qi. Everything began to rot around him.

Lin Feng ran towards the Seventh Beast, the words from the incantation rotating around him like dark hymns. At the same time, his blood was boiling as he turned into a gigantic ax. Strength pulsed all around him.

The bestial axe was a beast’s weapon, aggressive and explosive.

Swords were sharp and swift. Axes were heavy, so Lin Feng couldn't really use a sword to destroy that axe, so in the end he also used an axe. It was heavier and more aggressive, more appropriate.

Lin Feng the axe charged to meet his enemy's weapon. Both were releasing terrifying amounts of Qi. They were both using their blood spirit strength, that's how these weapons were made.

A terrifying Qi bore down on the Seventh Beast. The Seventh Beast had the impression he was going to be crushed!

The Seventh Beast raised his axe higher up, strength condensing. The earth and sky kept shaking violently. His blood strength was rising with the beast axe to an astonishing level.

The axe tore apart the air, Qi filled the air above the Qi Tian Battle Stage. Axes were explosive weapons, and the Seventh Beast attacked nine times in a row, each time shaking the earth and sky. The strength of the axe was monstrous as it collided with Lin Feng's!

Dreadful energies exploded unceasingly and made the Qi Tian Battle Stage shake violently. Crackling sounds sounded as the bestial axe began to crack. It was going to break apart! Lin Feng's gigantic axe relentlessly pressed forwards, and the Seventh Beast felt pressured.

The Seventh Beast spat out blood. He turned into a red beam of light and retreated as fast as he could. The gigantic axe turned back into Lin Feng.

"Saint's technique: Ancient Holy Technique. It can oppress anything, as expected. Even the Seventh Beast was forced to move away. However, he's really extremely strong. He managed to protect himself, and probably wants to continue fighting." murmured the crowd when they saw that. Lin Feng was terrifying, but the Young Beast Masters were also fearsome, especially as they became stronger.

On the other side, the battle between the Eighth Beast and Wu Jue was also becoming more and more dangerous, explosions ringing out about them. Saint Tianhun, at that moment, was surrounded by eighty-one flames. The Ninth Beast was astonished at the sight.

The Seventh Beast attacked again, too. He flew towards Lin Feng at full speed, but Lin Feng was charging him, too. Aggressive demon energies swept out. Dozens of swords kept appearing behind him, Lin Feng pointed his finger at the Seventh Beast and a sword shot out.

Saint Tianhun also moved, turning into a shadow, his silhouette becoming blurry. The Ninth Beast looked ready to battle. However, at that moment, Lin Feng frowned and suddenly turned around. He saw a silhouette moving towards him. The eighty-one flames were attacking him!

Everybody was completely astonished. That person, who had come with the members of the Qin Dynasty, was attacking Lin Feng! Even the beasts of the Animal District were astonished. The Ninth Beast released even more Qi and ran towards Lin Feng.

—

“Qin Gan!” Holy Emperor Ling suddenly stood up and shouted furiously, “Lin Feng and the two others are fighting against the Animal District and now your guest is backstabbing Lin Feng!”

“It’s the Qi Tian Battle Stage, anyone can fight against anyone as long as they agree,” said Qin Gan calmly. He didn’t control Saint Tianhun. He didn’t know why Saint Tianhun would suddenly attack Lin Feng, either. But when he saw that, he shuddered with fear, what did Saint Tianhun intend to do?

He felt responsible for both Lin Feng and Saint Tianhun. With the other Holy Emperors, he had managed to convince Saint Tianhun to join them, it was good for them, but they couldn’t control him. As for Lin Feng, he still had their Ancestor’s body.

The members of the Ancient Jade Dynasty and the Great Desert Dynasty remained silent too, naturally. They even looked amused. Even if Saint Tianhun failed, it didn't have anything to do with them. They just knew that Saint Tianhun's strength was terrifying. They couldn't know what spells, techniques and skills he knew though, he was a Saint, after all.

Lin Feng sensed the eighty-one flames move towards him, his spirit shaking violently. He grimaced, knowing that fire was dangerous. It was a sacrificial fire, its purpose was to burn his soul!

He suddenly released even more death energies, he wanted to extinguish the fire, however, the fire seemed indestructible. Saint Tianhun said telepathically, "Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire, you can't destroy it!"

Then, the fire pierced through Lin Feng's death Dao strength and shot towards his soul. Lin Feng's face twisted. He hadn't thought such a terrifying cultivator would attack him, it was definitely a Holy Technique!

Chapter 2084: Battle to Death?

“He practices soul cultivation and he has studied some Saint’s techniques.” It was the first time Lin Feng had to deal with such terrifying cultivators. People who practiced soul cultivation were rare. The first person he had met who did was Mu Chen, and the second one was this opponent. His attack was some kind of sacrificial fire.

Apparently, the Ninth Beast wasn’t his main target, his main target was Lin Feng. He wanted Lin Feng’s soul! If this man managed to succeed, Lin Feng guessed the consequences would be horrible. Lin Feng couldn’t let him win! He had to kill him

Lin Feng suddenly sat down cross-legged and dozens of gigantic swords rotated around him and protected him. The crowd was astonished. Lin Feng surprisingly sat down cross-legged before his enemy. Lin Feng had no choice but to use his full strength to protect himself.

The Ninth Beast stopped, wiping off the blood at the corner of his mouth. The Seventh Beast also looked at Lin Feng, a red light emerging from his third eye and shooting towards Lin Feng. But when it penetrated into Lin Feng’s third eye, he was stupefied and his face stiffened. Dazzling lights flashed in his eyes and he looked at Saint Tianhun deeply. What a powerful soul attack! His thread of soul had been instantly destroyed!

Some people practice soul cultivation, I understand why they are considered terrifying now, sighed the Seventh Beast. He didn’t continue attacking Lin Feng. Even Wu Jue and the Eighth Beast stopped fighting. Wu Jue’s silhouette flickered, he landed next to Lin Feng and looked at him. Then he looked at Saint Tianhun, who was seated cross-legged as well. He was using his Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire attack, he had to use his full strength to succeed, otherwise, stealing Lin Feng’s soul wouldn’t be easy at all.

The previous time, he had failed to steal Lin Feng's body, but now he had another opportunity and he couldn't let it slip. Lin Feng had the Qin Saint's body, but Saint Tianhun didn't care as without a soul, Lin Feng wouldn't be able to use it anymore.

He was a soul cultivator, Saint Tianhun understood how Lin Feng controlled the Saint's body better than anyone. Of course, he wasn't going to tell anyone else about those things.

At that moment, Lin Feng used all the Wisdom Kings to protect himself. He had to destroy that damn fire. However, the eighty-one flames surrounded the five Wisdom Kings, they were about to collapse. However, they managed to destroy the flames. One flame was left, but instantly eighty-one flames appeared again, as long as one flame was left, the other flames could reappear. It was extremely dangerous.

Lin Feng's soul suddenly turned into a sharp black sword, it was dark. It emerged from his third eye, and the eighty-one flames followed as well. At the same time, on the Qi Tian Battle Stage, Lin Feng's sword and the Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire appeared outside above the Qi Tian Battle Stage. The darkness of the sword made everything look pale on the Qi Tian Battle Stage below. Lin Feng also released glittering Deva-Mara Kalpa strength. Lin Feng's soul had been cleansed by Deva-Mara Kalpa strength many times.

The eighty-one flames looked pure and pale. It had been purified many times. Tianhun had used it to burn millions of souls in his life and carry out sacrifices.

Then, apart from his soul sword, Lin Feng also released a golden palace, it was dazzling. There were millions of marks on it, marks of the great Dao.

Then, the palace surrounded the soul sword.

"The sword is made of Lin Feng's soul, the palace is made of his godly awareness palace, Lin Feng is worried!" those watching could see. The terrifying eighty-one flames oppressed Lin Feng's

soul. At that moment, Lin Feng's body was just a shell, his psychic essences were outside.

At the same time, a grey strength emerged from Saint Tianhun and moved towards Lin Feng. It turned into a grey cloud. At the same time, in front of the grey cloud, a pitch-black light appeared and condensed into a long spear which thrust out towards Lin Feng at full speed. However, Saint Tianhun's real body was still seated cross-legged.

“He wants Lin Feng's physical body?”

“Body Capture?”

“Initially, he was fighting against the Ninth Beast and suddenly he attacked Lin Feng, is it because of his body?”

At that moment, the crowd remembered that Lin Feng had an incredible body. He had been on the Holy Way Stage and had many secrets. He also had possession of a Saint's body. However, this guy wanted to steal Lin Feng's body? What about his current body? Wasn't it his?

When the crowd thought about that, they shivered. The Animal District had come back to life and now a terrifying cultivator had appeared!

Wu Jue moved in front of Lin Feng and looked at the spear moving towards him. Wu Jue looked confident and at ease. This was a soul attack! Ancient imprints emerged from his third eye and turned into a destructive punch. Rumbling sounds spread in the air, the long spear broke apart. However, the grey Qi penetrated into Lin Feng's third eye. People's faces stiffened.

“Lin Feng's soul is still there, it hasn't been destroyed, and that guy is trying to steal Lin Feng's body anyway, which means that he perfectly controls his soul strength.”

The crowd was staring at Lin Feng, the Animal District's strong cultivators just watched, including the three Young Beast Masters,

they had retreated to the edge of the battle stage and were watching.

“Lin Feng.” Hu Yue looked extremely nervous. Saint Tianhun was evil and cruel! Lin Feng was in danger!

At that moment, a terrifying sword determination exploded, grey Qi splashed out of Lin Feng’s third eye.

“Dual soul.”

The grey Qi hurriedly retreated to Saint Tianhun’s third eye. He opened his eyes and looked at the sword spirit in disbelief. What kind of spell had Lin Feng learned? Surprisingly, he had two souls, and one of them was indestructible!

“Soul sacrifice.” Saint Tianhun raised a finger and the Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire moved towards Lin Feng’s godly awareness palace. However, the godly awareness palace became dazzling and turned into a hall, Lin Feng’s soul strength was being cleansed. He was using lots of godly awareness strength, but Saint Tianhun was still astonished, Lin Feng’s defenses were astonishing.

Tianhun made some hand seals, white flames appeared that seemed like they could destroy anything. The air above the Qi Tian Battle Stage turned white with heat, that fire was astonishing.

The godly awareness palace was burning. The flames then started attacking Lin Feng’s soul sword. The sword of darkness kept glittering, and Demon Kalpa strength destroyed the fire. The white fire and the darkness kept intertwining, everybody understood that this was a battle to the death.

“Lin Feng might get killed. Even if he has two souls, if his soul sword is destroyed, he’ll die.” The crowd looked at Lin Feng, who was bleeding. He was having a hard time. Of course, Saint Tianhun was also sweating, his soul strength pulsing around him. He would have never thought an emperor could be so strong. He had done so much to become so strong, and now it had become difficult...

Lin Feng released cosmic energies which turned into a sharp sword, and then multiplied. They started fusing together, his body changing, and people's hearts started pounding. Everybody's expressions changed as they stared at Lin Feng.

"He can still move?" Wu Jue was amazed. Lin Feng released ancient imprints, a word appeared, and he used the power of his incantation. When he used his incantation attack, his strength became explosive. His real body turned into a sharp sword and streaked across the sky, shooting towards Saint Tianhun.

Saint Tianhun's face turned deathly pale as he grimaced. He had thought he had almost succeeded, and yet Lin Feng still had strength to counterattack, he had been waiting for such a moment the whole time! Saint Tianhun was also exhausted, he had done all he could using the Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire!

Saint Tianhun waved his hand and many spears shot towards Lin Feng's gigantic sword, exploding against it. At the same time, he looked unhappy and recalled his fire. The eighty-one flames moved back into his third eye. A gigantic black fist appeared in the air and blocked the gigantic sword and pushed it away.

"Pfew..." Saint Tianhun opened his eyes, he was shaking. He didn't look calm and poised anymore. Lin Feng's real body reappeared, his face deathly pale. Nobody could imagine how he felt, but the pressure was incredible.

"You're that damn Saint," said Lin Feng to Saint Tianhun icily. Everybody's heart started pounding again... a Saint?!

Chapter 2085: Animal District's Announcement

Lin Feng had already had to deal with Saint Tianhun in the Saint's world at the altar. He had used his soul strength to attack Lin Feng there. Now he had a new body, but still wanted Lin Feng's body.

Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire, Holy Technique strength, this guy controlled so many Saint's spells, skills, and techniques. Even the Qin Dynasty didn't have such things. He was definitely a Saint!

When the crowd heard Lin Feng, they looked at Saint Tianhun sharply. A Saint?

In the crowd, apart from Holy Emperors, nobody knew the truth so they were astonished, especially since Saint Tianhun had just tried to steal Lin Feng's body. It meant that it was indeed possible. When stealing someone's body, it was impossible to recover one's own strength completely, so the best thing was still to grow up and become stronger step by step. Therefore, unless they had been killed, cultivators never tried to steal people's bodies. And on top of that, only extremely strong cultivators usually learned the technique. This guy who was extremely strong wanted to give up his body to steal Lin Feng's, it probably meant that the body he had wasn't his own body!

"I don't know what you mean," replied Saint Tianhun. He naturally wasn't going to admit Lin Feng was right. He hadn't thought that someone would be able to compete with him at the same cultivation level after coming back to life. Perhaps his cultivation level hadn't completely stabilized, otherwise, nobody would have been able to compete with him, including Lin Feng.

"Back then in the Spirit World, you wanted to steal my body. Now the Qin Dynasty hid you and helped you come back to life. But you haven't changed, because you're still not satisfied. Master

Tianhun, for my body, you're really ready to do anything!" spat Lin Feng icily. He was quite strong and still Saint Tianhun had posed a threat to him. At the same cultivation level, a Saint who had come back to life was stronger than anyone else with a few exceptions, especially if the body he had captured wasn't powerful enough. He needed time to become really strong again.

"I'll be merciful this time," said Saint Tianhun, staring at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was really strong, killing him was difficult, his soul and his new body had to fuse together better for him to be strong enough. He needed to become stronger, then he'd be able to burn Lin Feng's soul with his Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire and be able to capture his body.

Saint Tianhun jumped off the Qi Tian Battle Stage, he had used too much strength against Lin Feng, and couldn't continue fighting. He was a Saint, his goal wasn't to defeat the Animal District's cultivators, but to become stronger and then become one of the strongest cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds once again. He was convinced that the members of the Animal District had the same goal.

Lin Feng ignored Saint Tianhun. Since he was a Saint who had come back to life, Lin Feng couldn't kill him easily, he felt under pressure though, the Saint would progress quickly, and the Saint's memories were precious treasures.

At that moment, Lin Feng nodded at Wu Jue, he smiled and said, "Why did you help me?"

"I helped you?" replied Wu Jue airily, which naturally made Lin Feng smile. He didn't say anything else. Wu Jue was an interesting guy and a strong fighter.

Lin Feng looked at the Seventh Beast and said indifferently, "You're still not strong enough."

He jumped off the Qi Tian Battle Stage. Like Saint Tianhun, he had used too much strength and felt tired. That soul fire technique

was too powerful, he was injured.

“Everybody, come back.” said a strong cultivator of the Animal District calmly. The three Young Beast Masters also withdrew.

“Thousands of years have passed, there are still some geniuses in Qi Tian Holy Town. However, they are disappointing. Almost nobody has the potential to become a peerless cultivator someday,” said the strong cultivator of the Animal District calmly. He remained seated. Lin Feng and the two others were exceptions, they were geniuses and it was normal, but that one who was staying with the members of the Qi Tian Holy Town was a Saint, so he didn’t even count if that was the case.

When the crowd heard him, they were speechless. The Animal District had come back to life and those battles were a way to show it to everyone.

At that moment, a strong wind started blowing. The crowd saw a Young Beast Master rise up in the air. It was the first one, a great emperor.

He glanced at all the strong cultivators of Qi Tian Holy Town. Suddenly, he waved his hands, and in a flash, bestial Qi rose up in the air. A dragon, a unicorn, a turtle, and a wind beast streaked across the sky and two gigantic words appeared in the sky: ANIMAL DISTRICT.

Then, the first beast master said indifferently, “From today, humans are prohibited from going to the Animal District in a circumference of three thousand li. The Animal District is back in town.”

Then, he returned to his place. People’s hearts started pounding violently, the first Young Beast Master was terrifyingly strong. They hadn’t seen how strong he was but he was probably as strong as Xue Ao from the Snow Clan.

Lin Feng went back to the group of people from the Holy Spirit

Dynasty and looked at the two gigantic words in the sky. He was impressed. The Animal District had just come back to life, and they were astonishingly strong.

At that moment, Lin Feng realized that he didn't belong to the same world as before anymore. He was already starting to fight against the strongest cultivators of his generation. He had started in a small world, then he had gone to the nine great celestial castles, traveled around in the great world, gone to the Vast Celestial Ancient City, then to the Holy City and Qi Tian Holy Town, and now his activities involved the whole Dark Night Region.

It all would have been unthinkable many years before. Hu Yue would have never thought it was possible for him to progress so fast, for example. Lin Feng was so strong that almost no emperor could fight against him anymore.

Hu Yue understood that there was a huge difference between people who had reached the top of the Huang Qi layer, and people who had the potential to become peerless cultivators and were at the top of the Huang Qi layer. Many people could reach the top of the Huang Qi layer, but few people had the potential to become peerless cultivators someday. Someday, they'd have no enemies at all.

At that moment, the strong cultivators of the Animal District stood up and left without saying any more. Their bestial Qi dispersed as they disappeared from people's field of vision.

"The Animal District has announced they have come back. In the future, they'll probably become the strongest cultivators in town," someone murmured. They were worried.

"Everybody, go back," said Qin Gan indifferently after standing up. Everybody remained silent. This battle had been too shocking, and the Dynasties had lost face.

"Lin Feng." said someone from the Ancient Jade Dynasty's side,

“Where’s the Holy Jade Princess?”

“Maybe that she didn’t want to go back to the Ancient Jade Dynasty after we had sex. How could I know where she is or what she thinks? Go and ask her,” replied Lin Feng, waving his hand dismissively.

Would the Ancient Jade Dynasty have to choose a new Holy Woman? The Ancient Jade Dynasty had no solution.

After the crowd left, the battle stage was still floating in the air. It had witnessed countless battles in history.

Now the Animal District had oppressed all the Dynasties on it and they had announced nobody could go into their territory anymore.

Perhaps other beasts would come to Qi Tian Holy Town to join them in the future. From one day to the next, things had changed in Qi Tian Holy Town...

——

After that, Lin Feng waited outside the Holy Spirit Dynasty and received some guests, mostly Tiantai’s strong cultivators: Hou Qing Lin, Tian Chi, Ruo Xie, Tantai, Huang Fu Long, and the others. They had all come. There were many other cultivators from Tiantai, including people who had joined after them. Lin Feng was happy to see them.

“Holy Dynasty Prince!” They walked on the Holy Dynasty Prince’s territory and realized everyone was bowing before Lin Feng respectfully. He was their Holy Dynasty Prince. Lin Feng had been one of three people who had been able to compete with the beast masters of the Animal District. The Holy Spirit Dynasty was quite happy about that.

Lin Feng nodded at everyone. Tantai smiled, “Lin Feng, you have a high position here.”

“The Holy Spirit Dynasty and I have excellent relations. Why did

you come here, guys?” asked Lin Feng to his friends.

“We need to travel to become stronger at our cultivation level. Many people from Tiantai are already high-level emperors. We want to travel in the Dark Night Region. We want to try and become great emperors!” said Hou Qing Lin calmly.

Lin Feng nodded agreement. Traveling and seeing many strong cultivators was a good way to become stronger.

Chapter 2086: Mu Chen's News

Lin Feng took them to a palace, Holy Emperor Ling welcomed them personally. He smiled at Lin Feng and said, "Lin Feng, these young people are all outstanding, are they our friends?"

"They're all from Champion University, and some of them come from the small world like me. We're like brothers and sisters," Lin Feng said to Holy Emperor Ling.

Holy Emperor Ling nodded and smiled. "Your friends are outstanding and extraordinary. In a few years, they'll amaze the whole region."

"Naturally. I hope they will all reach the maximum level on the path of cultivation and become peerless cultivators," Lin Feng said calmly. He sounded incredibly confident. He had faith in himself, but also in Hou Qing Lin and the others. They had all received the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, as well as many other precious treasures. If they were determined enough, they could all become peerless cultivators. They just needed to practice, to be determined, and to give all they could.

Back then, Hou Qing Lin and Jian Mang had tried to go onto the Holy Way Stage. Two more steps... their blood and body as well as potential needed to be improved, but their determination was not a problem at all. Lin Feng's Kalpa Indestructible Deva-Mara skill and his Deva-Mara Kalpa strength cleansing technique were perfect for him so in terms of body, there was no problem, but might not be good enough for them.

When Holy Emperor Ling heard Lin Feng, he smiled to himself. Lin Feng was young and arrogant sometimes, but he could be that way because he was strong enough. When the beast masters had shown up, Lin Feng had remained fearless. He had even made the Seventh Beast flinch. The Saint had even attacked him by surprise, but had failed. Holy Emperor Ling was convinced that if Lin Feng

didn't die, he'd become a peerless cultivator sooner or later.

"Since they're your friends, they can come in," Holy Emperor Ling said cheerfully, nodding at everyone.

—

He organized a banquet for them, everyone sat down and Holy Emperor Ling asked, "Lin Feng, the Animal District came back, do you know why?"

"There's something secret going on?" asked Lin Feng, intrigued.

"Maybe that they're not only interested in Qi Tian Holy Town, maybe they want the beast masters to get ready for the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds," proposed Holy Emperor Ling calmly. Lin Feng frowned, not understanding.

"The Continent of the Nine Clouds is divided into several regions: Godly Clouds, Dark Clouds, Green Jade Clouds, Red Clouds, Bright Clouds, Jade Clouds, Blue Pale Clouds, Purple Clouds, Supreme Clouds. People rarely travel between the different regions because there are only two ways of traveling between regions. The first one is to cross the Celestial Country, and the second way is to use an empty space tunnel. People who have the strength of the Huang Qi layer and under can cross the Celestial Country, but great emperors have no choice but to use an empty space tunnel. Therefore, people rarely have news about the other regions," Holy Emperor Ling said calmly. He had lived for many years, and he had been to another region only once.

"Do cultivators practice cultivation the same way as we do in other regions?" Lin Feng asked him.

"We can all reach the same goal by different routes, all roads lead to the capital. They are cultivators like us, but they have different methods. I've heard that in Red Clouds, people are incredible doctors. I've heard that in Blue Pale Clouds, there are many terrifying sword cultivators. People practice cultivation differently

depending on where they're from. Godly Clouds is the central part of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and it's also the strongest region, all the schools of thought contend there. Many geniuses like you, who have the potential to become peerless cultivators, want to go there to see the strongest geniuses of the world."

"What is that meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds? Where is it and who can go?" asked Lin Feng. He had heard of the regions of the Continent of the Nine Clouds; nine regions, one in the middle, eight around it. Godly Clouds was the only region which had a border with the other eight region; the other eight regions only had three borders with other regions, and they all shared a border with Godly Clouds.

"The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds takes place every one hundred years. The Shrines organize it. This time, I think Destiny Shrine is in charge of the next one. The different Shrines handle the event once every thousand years. This time, it's Destiny Shrine's turn again. I wonder who will be fortunate this time," said Holy Emperor Ling. When Lin Feng heard that, his heart started pounding.

"So does that mean the Destiny Shrine will recruit people?" asked Hou Qing Lin, also remembering the Destiny Shrine, unable to restrain himself.

"Indeed, the Destiny Shrine will recruit people, the lucky ones will reach the apex in terms of power: a Shrine!" replied Holy Emperor Ling. The Shrines recruited people based on two kinds of circumstances: when they attached importance to someone they bumped into, mostly people who had king-type bodies, or people who proved they were strong during the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds.

Therefore, people who came from Shrines were all terrifyingly strong, and it was extremely beneficial for their families, like the He Clan from Tian Yuan Ancient City. They had some disciples in the Destiny Shrine. Because Godly Clouds was a region well

connected to the Shrines, many people wanted to go there. It was also why Godly Clouds was the strongest region.

“So the Animal District raised those thirteen Young Beast Masters to enable them to go to Godly Clouds?” murmured Lin Feng.

Holy Emperor Ling nodded, “Indeed, they want their young masters to go to the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. There are also ones who want to become the First Master of our region, the Dark Night Region. Wu Jue is an example, and that’s why the Wu Jue Holy Palace wants Wu Jue to have children before leaving. If Wu Jue dies abroad, then they won’t have any more descendants.”

When Lin Feng heard that, he smiled. Wu Jue really did want to have children with Yi Tian Jiao. The fact made Lin Feng laugh, he had thought the other was joking. Anyway, the strongest cultivators of the Continent of the Nine Clouds were progressing quickly. They had to, for the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, and to be the foremost cultivators of the region, too. Who would come back safe and sound, though? Only the strongest cultivators!

“We don’t have geniuses in the Holy Spirit Dynasty. Lin Feng, don’t miss this opportunity. The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds is not just about being recruited as a disciple by a Shrine, it’s also an incredible opportunity to receive priceless treasures,” Holy Emperor Ling told Lin Feng. Lin Feng was only one step away from reaching the top of the Huang Qi layer. At that level, Lin Feng would become terrifyingly strong. Even though Lin Feng was still unable to dazzle at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, he had time to progress!

Lin Feng muttered to himself irresolutely, saying nothing. He didn’t want to miss the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, obviously.

At that moment, Lin Feng looked over at Hou Qing Lin, they lowered their heads and remained silent, they looked unhappy.

“Second fellow disciple, third fellow disciple, Ruo Xie, Xing Zhan, Ban Ruo, didn’t you all come out just to practice cultivation?” Lin Feng’s eyes glittered. If they had just come out to practice, why would they stay in such a big group?

“Brother, has anything happened?” asked Lin Feng.

Hou Qing Lin was stupefied, he raised his head and looked at Lin Feng. Then, he looked at Holy Emperor Ling.

Holy Emperor Ling smiled and said, “I’m off. If you need me, please ask for me, all of you.”

The Holy Emperor left. Lin Feng was sure there was a problem now.

“Brother, what’s going on?” asked Lin Feng again.

Hou Qing Lin raised his head again, looked at Lin Feng, took a deep breath and said, “Brother, we have news from Mu Chen.”

“Mu Chen.” Lin Feng’s eyes glittered and he asked, “Where is he?”

“I didn’t want to tell you at first, but since you want to leave for Godly Clouds, I have no choice but to tell you. When we left the small world back then, Mu Chen and Emperor Yu were connected by a thread of soul, and they had also exchanged jade talismans. Mu Chen’s soul jade talisman is cracking.” said Hou Qing Lin.

Lin Feng’s heart twitched and his face turned deathly pale. He clenched his fists. “Is it broken?” he asked.

“It’s not. It’s strange. It’s all cracked, it looks like a spider web. But it’s not broken. He must be in danger. And Emperor Yu has received some news from him through a thread of soul.” said Hou Qing Lin. He looked extremely nervous as he ground his teeth. He continued, “He told Emperor Yu that if he reincarnated, they’d

still be like brothers, he also said that Godly Clouds would be his burial site, and that he had had a worthy life, he doesn't want his death to be avenged and he asked Emperor Yu not to tell us about it."

"Mu Chen went to Godly Clouds." Lin Feng's face stiffened. In the Dark Night Region, it would have been okay, but Godly Clouds was another story. How could they find him there? And from the message he had passed on, he had encountered a terrifying enemy. Otherwise, he would have never told them not to avenge his death. But why is his talisman only fissured and not broken?

"Yes, we don't know how, when or why, Emperor Yu wanted to go and find him alone, but we stopped him, then we decided to go and look for him ourselves, and asked the university to look after him."

"Brother, how could you hide the truth from me?" shouted Lin Feng furiously. It was the first time he was angry at Hou Qing Lin. How could they want to go to Godly Clouds without him?!

"Lin Feng, Shi Jue Lao Xian, and you have an agreement. Meng Qing is pregnant, we wanted to protect you. And if anything happens to us in Godly Clouds, at least you'll be able to avenge our deaths. After all, you are the most talented of all of us," sighed Ruo Xie. "But since you also want to go to Godly Clouds, then we can go together."

Lin Feng tried to calm down, but it was difficult. He said, "Tiantai's Disciples, all like brothers and sisters!"

Chapter 2087: Judgement Day City

The members of Tiantai remained silent for a few seconds and then nodded, “Tiantai’s disciples, all like brothers and sisters!”

“Even if we find Godly Clouds, how will we find our brother?” asked Lin Feng. They had to find him quickly, but it was easier said than done.

“The Ancestors of the university can help, they prepared some Great Imperial Weapons for us, including some Soul Locking Bells. Emperor Yu put Mu Chen’s soul thread in the Soul Locking Bells, it can help us find him. Therefore, if we find Godly Clouds, we can find where he is. Of course, as long as...” Hou Qing Lin trailed off. Mu Chen wasn’t dead yet, but his talisman was cracked.

“The matter should not be delayed. Let’s get ready to leave!” said Lin Feng. They had to rescue Mu Chen! Lin Feng revered his dear teacher Mu Chen!

“Alright, good! We have a map. The border city between Godly Clouds and the Dark Night Region is Judgement Day City. It’s also one of the eighteen main cities of the region, it’s on the edge of the region. We should go to Judgement Day City first and then we’ll use an empty space tunnel to travel to Godly Clouds.”

Judgement Day City was the most special town in the Dark Night Region, due to its location as a border city with Godly Clouds. Some extremely strong cultivators sometimes used the empty space tunnel and went there. It was quite chaotic there sometimes. Sometimes extremely strong cultivators killed people to steal their treasures. Hence the name: Judgement Day City.

“I need to go and see my son first,” said Lin Feng to Hou Qing Lin. Hou Qing Lin and the others were astonished, child?

“Lin Feng, you...”

Lin Feng smiled and said, “You don’t know yet, right? I have a

son in the Holy Spirit Dynasty too, his name is Lin Qiong Sheng.”

“Is it Meng Qing’s-”

“No.” Lin Feng interrupted him and said, “Come with me.”

—

His friends followed him to a courtyard. You You was playing with Lin Qiong Sheng, and when the child saw those people, he was curious.

“Brothers, that’s my wife, Tang You You,” said Lin Feng, pointing at Tang You You. Hou Qing Lin and the others were astonished. They had all heard Tantai talk about that battle when all the Dynasties had surrounded Lin Feng back then, a beautiful woman had almost died in Lin Feng’s arms, that had been Tang You You. They hadn’t thought Lin Feng would have a child with her.

“Qiong Sheng, come, greet your uncles and aunts,” said Lin Feng, grabbing Lin Qiong Sheng’s hand.

The little boy looked at the crowd and said, “Uncles and Aunties!”

“Good little boy. He is already a Tian level cultivator!” Hou Qing Lin hugged Lin Qiong Sheng and lifted him, smiling and saying, “Lin Feng, that little boy is already much stronger than us back in the days, he’s growing up in an adequate environment.”

“Indeed. When he’s older, we’ll make him go through some hardships!” said Lin Feng smiled. Cultivation couldn’t be easy!

“Lin Feng, you should bring him to my tribe, but as a Tian level cultivator, it’s already a pity,” said Tantai looking at the child. Lin Feng rolled his eyes; Tantai’s tribe raised young people differently. They didn’t let them break through too quickly, they suddenly became much stronger after many years.

“You You, I’m going to Godly Clouds with my friends. Please stay

here,” Lin Feng said to Tang You You.

“I’ll come with you. The Holy Spirit Dynasty will take care of Qiong Sheng,” Tang You You said to Lin Feng.

“Alright, you can stay in that world then,” said Lin Feng, caressing Tang You You’s cheeks. She understood and nodded.

“How cool!” said Tantai. Everybody burst into laughter. Lin Feng turned around and punched Tantai’s shoulder.

Lin Feng prepared some things for the trip. He also said goodbye to the Holy Spirit Dynasty’s cultivators, they weren’t going to prevent You You and him from leaving. As long as Lin Qiong Sheng stayed with them, it was fine.

Lin Feng and the others left for Judgement Day City.

On the same day, thirteen cultivators from the Animal Dynasty left, as well. When the strong cultivators of the different Dynasties saw them, they were startled. The thirteen strong cultivators were going to try their luck abroad. These days, the Animal District had proved they were stable and extremely strong, nobody would dare attack them. The thirteen strong cultivators had to rise.

In Wu Jue’s Holy Palace, Wu Jue was lying in bed with a beautiful woman and said, “Wait for me, I’ll come back.”

Yi Tian Jiao looked at him furiously, wanting to kill him. Her lips bled. She still had mixed feelings. Wu Jue was a bastard, but he had managed to bring her back to have a child.

“I know you’ll miss me,” said Wu Jue smiling. He kissed her on the lips and said, “I’ll come back as a hero and we’ll have a real wedding ceremony!”

“You think I’ll raise your child?” spat Yi Tian Jiao icily.

“We’ve been together for a few days already, why act like that? Wait for me, I’ll come back.”

Wu Jue caressed her cheeks and left. Then, he rose up in the air and left, he looked confident and at ease. Yi Tian Jiao’s face was deathly pale, she was furious: that bastard!

During those days, another group of strong cultivators, including Saint Tianhun, left. There were many people from different Dynasties, including a lot of great emperors.

They all had one goal: Judgement Day City!

Every hundred years, Judgement Day City hosted many strong cultivators. It was a very ancient city. Every hundred years, the atmosphere became chaotic. The price to go to Godly Clouds was more expensive each time, the people who controlled the empty space tunnel kept increasing the price. Because of that, many people killed other people to steal their treasures to pay for the trip.

Many strong cultivators from remote places went there and realized that they still didn’t have enough precious items to pay for a trip even though some of them took everything their family owned. Most grew desperate. Going to Godly Clouds wasn’t easy!

Apart from that, the economic competition was also fierce, but doing business in Judgement Day City was a flourishing activity since it was a border city. Besides, every hundred years, many people also realized, when arriving, that the tickets for the empty space tunnel were sold out, fully booked. However, some people who had bought them in advance sold them at terrifying prices.

The people who controlled the empty space tunnel formed an alliance. Seven Ancient Holy Clans had joined hands to control it, and had a great deal of power in Judgement Day City. Nobody dared attack them, so they were very rich. Otherwise, people

would have destroyed them, they owned such a terrifyingly profitable business.

At that moment, outside of the station, Lin Feng and the others asked some people about how to go to Godly Clouds. They were stunned. They learned that special boats were required to use the empty space tunnel, and they were extremely rare. Only one boat left every three months, and a boat could only accommodate a hundred people, it was far from enough. Therefore, people were sometimes here for years before going to Godly Clouds. Now, even though they were near Godly Clouds, it would be difficult for them to get tickets, especially since it was a peak period.

“What bastards. There aren’t any tickets left for the boat in three months, and since you can buy tickets for a later date, because of them, we can’t go to Godly Clouds,” swore Tantai angrily. He was even wondering whether they were doing such a thing on purpose.

“It’s normal. That way, if you really want to buy a ticket, you must buy it at ten times the price!” said Hou Qing Lin. He remained calm. They needed to find another way and in any case, Hou Qing Lin would have bought tickets if possible and sold them at a much higher price. He would have been a good businessman.

“So should we wait for three months?” asked Tantai.

“You can’t get a ticket even if you wait, you’ll just wait in vain, you won’t get a ticket,” said Lin Feng, “We need to find another way to get tickets.”

“Alright, let’s go and see the auction house,” said Hou Qing Lin. The group had heard that Doomsday Auction House was the biggest auction house of Judgement Day City. Three tickets were sold there everyday.

Lin Feng and the others were furious. Who would wait for so long? There were more and more people everyday in Judgement

Day City, which meant that if you waited, it got more and more difficult to get a ticket. For example, on the first day, there were a thousand people for three tickets, on the second day, there were two thousand people for three tickets and so on.

How cruel! Apart from Doomsday Auction House, the other auction houses had even less tickets, one every day. Getting tickets wasn't easy at all!

Chapter 2088: Auctions

The Domsday Auction House was an imposing auction house. Nobody had the advantage there, everybody was treated equally.

When Lin Feng and the others arrived, they were stunned and speechless. It was incredible, there were so many people, if someone obtained a precious treasure in front of everyone, wouldn't the strongest cultivators want to steal it from them?

Lin Feng and the others didn't know what to think.

At that moment, there were many people already. They had been waiting since the beginning. Lin Feng and the others joined the crowd and sat down high up in the bleachers. Since there were only three tickets every day, they wanted to obtain the first one at least. They couldn't waste time.

"Brother, you have the Soul Locking Bells, how's Mu Chen?" asked Lin Feng to Hou Qing Lin.

"He must be fine. We need to hurry," said Hou Qing Lin, nodding while inspecting the Soul Locking Bells.

"Yes, I'll sit elsewhere, we can't show everyone we know one another, it's safer," said Lin Feng. He stood up and went down the bleachers.

After a short time, Lin Feng arrived at the front lines, he saw a row where only one woman was seated. Some people waved at Lin Feng and said, "Your Excellency, please go elsewhere."

"Are there private rows in the auction house?" asked Lin Feng with a caustic smile, but he didn't insist. He just sat down in the third row, the auctions were going to start.

That woman is protected by great emperors, she must be from an ancient clan, thought Lin Feng. He didn't mind though. He didn't need to.

Hou Qing Lin and the others didn't show they knew Lin Feng. If Lin Feng got a ticket, it wouldn't be easy to find him, one person was more difficult to find than a group of people.

More and more people arrived. The place was vast, but it was comparatively silent. Nobody talked, and when they did, they just whispered.

—

Finally, some people from the auction house appeared at the same time. They carried all sorts of boxes and chests. They didn't put anything in rings.

The manager was a middle-aged man. He had an imposing appearance, and was a great emperor.

"Same old rules, offer a good price, there is no base price," said the middle-aged man, showing off a box. Everybody heard him clearly.

"We have to choose without seeing the item?" Lin Feng was stupefied. The Doomsday Auction House was strange.

Someone next to Lin Feng whispered, "Doomsday Auction House's rules, you can't see the first three items, it's all luck."

"What if it's a bad item?" asked Lin Feng.

"Well then, you have no choice but to accept your fate." replied the person. Lin Feng was speechless. Then the person continued, "Of course, sometimes items are sold at a very low price and in the end were very precious, in which case many people regret not having bought it."

"Of course, the auctions are about luck too, you can't get all the items, there are so many people." Lin Feng understood. Only big auction houses could do such a thing because they constantly had many people. Maybe it was good, maybe not.

"So the first three items always belong to the Doomsday Auction

House?”

“Wrong. All the items belong to them. If you want to sell your things here, you can’t. If you want to sell something here, they buy it from you at a price which corresponds to your expectations and their calculations, and then when it’s theirs, they sell it. Of course, if your item is incredible, the Doomsday Auction House will be fair. The price at which they sell items you sold them has nothing to do with you anymore, even if they get an incredible price for it.”

“Interesting.” Lin Feng smiled. Many people started shouting prices. They didn’t know what the item was, so nobody proposed a terrifying price. Most people were proposing Imperial weapons or ordinary scriptures, and sometimes some strange things.

“Great imperial scriptures, Rotten Hell Ocean, rotting strength, it makes people’s blood rot instantly, it’s perfect for people who control death cosmic energies,” said Lin Feng calmly at that moment. Instantly, many people looked at him: Great imperial scriptures? And it was a very rare book! For an unknown item, it was a bit too much.

The middle-aged man on stage looked at Lin Feng and smiled indifferently, “Anyone else?”

Nobody said anything. Rare Great imperial scriptures were already too much.

“Alright, congratulations, you obtained the first item. When the third item is sold, you can come and pick up your item,” said the middle-aged man, nodding calmly. He took out a second box and lifted it without saying anything. He had nothing to say so he remained silent. It seemed even more mysterious.

“Yellow Spirits Great imperial scriptures, they teach you how to condense yellow springs in your fingers and kill people, it makes them fall into the yellow springs,” said Lin Feng again. The crowd frowned. An eerie silence took over.

However, at that moment, Lin Feng looked calm and serene as if he hadn't been proposing Great imperial scriptures. Lin Feng had spent much time in the Celestial Country, and had killed so many people, obtaining many ancient scriptures. All the books he had obtained were perfect for people who controlled death strength. He had obtained so many Great imperial scriptures from Hell. He had lots of books and all of them were precious, why not exchange them if he didn't need them?

Nobody tried to get the second item. When the man took out the third box, and Lin Feng proposed another Great imperial scripture from Hell, everyone was staring at him. That guy had so many Ancient scriptures. He had just decided to exchange three Great imperial scriptures against three unknown items!

For Lin Feng, it didn't matter, he didn't care about those Great imperial scriptures. He hoped he'd get something great, though.

"Your Excellency, please come and get your items," said the middle-aged man nodding at Lin Feng. Lin Feng rose up in the air, however, at that moment, people in front of him suddenly turned around and shouted furiously, "How insolent! Get down to go out!"

If Lin Feng wanted to fly, he had to fly above that woman's head...

He glanced at them unhappily. They had prevented him from sitting where he wanted and now they didn't want to let him fly, what was wrong with them? Who was being insolent?

Lin Feng ignored them and continued flying forwards. He looked at the woman and said, "Miss!"

The woman looked wealthy and noble. She just waved at Lin Feng. Lin Feng had just obtained three precious treasures, but she didn't even look at him.

Lin Feng exchanged his scriptures against the three items, then he looked at the woman and said, "You want me to fly or walk?"

“Sit here,” said the woman, pointing at the seat next to her and smiling.

Lin Feng was surprised and nodded, “If they hadn’t stopped me, I would have sat here with you earlier.” He calmly sat down next to her. Her guards looked at him icily.

The middle-aged man of the auction house looked at Lin Feng in a strange way, but quickly returned to normal and smiled, “Alright, the next item is a Great Imperial Talisman. It doesn’t contain a deployment spell anymore, but there are still traces inside. Powerful deployment spell casters can benefit from it because it’ll be easier to carve great imperial deployment spells on it, and you can use it several times. Please bid.”

Lin Feng’s heart twitched. He had carved many deployment talismans before coming to Judgement Day City. He hadn’t thought he’d see a Great Imperial Talisman here. He really wanted to obtain it.

“Great imperial scriptures, Huge Vigorous Lion Qi, extremely powerful, increases a cultivator’s strength, gives a cultivator the power of a great imperial beast, one roar can crush a cultivator’s heart,” said the woman next to Lin Feng calmly. She immediately proposed Great imperial scriptures!

Chapter 2089: Immortal Body

Most people didn't bid when they heard the woman. It was just a Great Imperial Talisman, only deployment spell casters could benefit from it. The price was already too high for them.

However, it was a priceless item for strong deployment spell casters. As it contained deployment spell traces, it was very helpful for an army, as it could also be used as a body protection deployment spell. It was a priceless treasure!

"Great imperial scriptures, Indestructible Mountains and Rivers-like Body Imprints Technique, perfect for gold cultivators, it allows a cultivator to have an indestructible golden body. It's powerful," spoke up an old man calmly. The crowd looked at him, a Great Emperor wearing an ordinary grey robe. He looked like a deployment spell caster, actually.

"I'll add a level two Great Imperial Weapon," said the woman calmly, without turning around. She was from a powerful deployment spell caster family. She had come precisely to find items related to deployment spells.

The old man frowned when he heard the woman and said, "I'll also add a level two Great Imperial Weapon."

Great Imperial Weapons and Imperial weapons were divided into nine levels. Great Imperial Weapons were much more difficult to make than Imperial weapons, however!

"I'll add a level three Great Imperial Weapon," said the woman calmly. The great emperor was stupefied, a level three Great Imperial Weapon? Level three Great Imperial Weapons were priceless. Even level four Great Imperial Weapons were strong enough to fight against Celestial Emperors. He couldn't trade any, he had only one and it was too important to him.

"She's from a rich family, she can afford it," whispered the

crowd. The old man sighed. Even though he was from a good family, he was old, his clan didn't spend resources on him anymore, powerful groups spent time and resources on young people. Old people had to rely on themselves!

The price was too high, it seemed nobody wanted to get the item for such a price.

“Great imperial scriptures, Mountain and River Illusion, when you practice it, a million illusionary clones appear, but they look real. You can trick the enemy. It's from the Ancient Jade Dynasty in Qi Tian Holy Town. Besides, I'll also add some more Great imperial scriptures, the Seven Deep Abstruse Dao technique, you can attack seven times with it, the attacks are powerful. It is also from the Ancient Jade Dynasty, but it is a little bit less powerful than the Great Deep Abstruse Dao,” Lin Feng spoke up evenly at that moment.

Everybody was astonished. This guy was wealthy!

“That guy has so many rare Great imperial scriptures! He even has Great imperial scriptures from the Ancient Jade Dynasty? Was he from the Ancient Jade Dynasty? But the Ancient Jade Dynasty only recruits women!” people whispered curiously.

The woman next to Lin Feng looked at him, her beautiful eyes glittered. She smiled indifferently, “For ordinary people, that talisman is useless. Why do you want it?”

The woman thought Lin Feng was trying to provoke her. He was very young, he couldn't be an incredible deployment spell caster. Why did he want that talisman?

Lin Feng looked at her, he knew she thought he was trying to provoke her. He didn't have time to waste doing such things though, so he didn't explain anything, he just smiled thinly without saying anything.

The woman looked at Lin Feng and smiled, “Since you like it, you

can have it. You won't have it easy, though."

She stopped bidding and nobody else rose to contest him. Lin Feng obtained the talisman. He gave the two books from the Ancient Jade Dynasty in exchange. If the members of the Ancient Jade Dynasty had known about that, they would have been furious.

After that, more treasures were traded, Great imperial scriptures, Great Imperial Weapons, pellets; some people also sold items they had to other people in the crowd directly. Lin Feng had many Great imperial scriptures, but he didn't need all of them, so he could sell them to other people.

Many people were there only for ship tickets.

Lin Feng didn't participate in the auctions for a few rounds, and finally the first ticket appeared. It was for the boat a month from now. Lin Feng gave up, he couldn't wait for one month. When he saw the price for which it was sold, he was astonished. Many strong cultivators had come for the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

Finally, the first ticket was exchanged against some powerful Great imperial scriptures and a level four Great Imperial Weapon. It was very expensive. In normal times, a ship ticket could be sold for one level one Great Imperial Weapon or some powerful Great imperial scriptures, especially for a boat which was a month from now.

The second ticket was for fifteen days from now, Lin Feng's heart twitched. How could he obtain more tickets? He didn't know, so he had to get that one. Not everyone would be able to get tickets, so how could they do it? Use their spirits?

Lin Feng really needed that one ticket.

Many people wanted it. Many of them were great emperors, even some Celestial Emperors tried to bid. Obtaining one ticket was

extremely complicated.

Very quickly, the price of the second ticket exceeded that of the first one: someone proposed a level five Great Imperial Weapon. For a great emperor, that was a terrifying price. With such a weapon, they could pose a threat to a Celestial Emperor!

“Ancient Holy Scriptures from the Ancient Jade Dynasty, Great Deep Abstruse Dao, for two tickets,” said Lin Feng at that moment. Everybody suddenly became silent. He was trying to exchange Ancient Holy Scriptures against ship tickets? On top of that from the Ancient Jade Dynasty? The Great Deep Abstruse Dao? How crazy! If the Ancient Jade Dynasty knew about it, they would have tried to kill him instantly. Of course, Lin Feng didn’t mind, the Ancient Jade Dynasty already wanted to kill him!

The middle-aged man stared at Lin Feng and said indifferently, “It’s against the rules, you can only get that one first.”

“What’s the date of the second ticket?” asked Lin Feng.

“Which one do you want to buy?” asked the middle-aged man.

“If you can’t tell me the details, I’ll just cancel my offer and leave. I’m sure anyone else would be happy to obtain the Ancient Jade Dynasty’s Ancient Holy Scriptures against a ship ticket,” said Lin Feng calmly. The middle-aged man remained silent. How cunning!

“Alright, I’ll tell you now. The next one is for this month, thirteenth day, it’s in five days.”

“Will you give me the next ticket for the Great Deep Abstruse Dao?” asked Lin Feng calmly. The two other tickets’ date was too far away in time. Lin Feng needed to leave as soon as possible.

“Anyone else for that ticket then?” asked the middle-aged man glancing around. However, only people from terrifyingly powerful clans had Ancient Holy Scriptures, and they didn’t want to exchange them. Ancient scriptures were no problem, but not Ancient Holy Scriptures. Their families wouldn’t agree with that

at all!

Besides, Lin Feng wanted the second ticket, he couldn't possible exchange Ancient Holy Scriptures for the previous one.

"Alright, it's a deal," said the middle-aged man smiling indifferently. A ship ticket against Ancient Holy Scriptures, that was a very profitable deal for the auction house.

"I hope you didn't make a mistake," said the middle-aged man calmly. That person was trading the Ancient Jade Dynasty's Ancient Holy Scriptures against ship tickets, he probably had an extremely high social status.

"I hope you will be able to benefit from the Ancient Holy Scriptures," Lin Feng smiled. If the Ancient Jade Dynasty learned about this, they might put pressure on the Doomsday Auction House, depending on their backing?

"Don't worry about that," replied the middle-aged man without talking too much, and went back to the second ticket.

The woman next to Lin Feng looked at him and said, "The Doomsday Auction House doesn't protect people who buy here, you're pretty audacious!"

An emperor was taking out Ancient Holy Scriptures in the open? Lin Feng's ticket was for five days from now, and many people were now paying attention to him, he was pretty brave. Many people were already staring at him. However, he already knew things were going to happen that way, so he preferred doing it anyways.

The second ticket was finally sold for a level six Great Imperial Weapon. Lin Feng started thinking that the alliance who controlled the boat company probably cooperated with the auction house. It was logical, it was the best way for them to benefit and rip people off.

Then, the man took out a black box. It was pitch-black, as if a

terrifying strength had been sealed inside. The middle-aged man said to the crowd with a smile, “It’s the last item, an immortal body.”

Chapter 2090: Who's Stupid?

“An immortal body?” The crowd was shocked. Emperors’ bodies could remain intact for many years, and great emperors’ bodies, when intact, never decomposed. Those were normal bodies, but what the Doomsday Auction House was proposing seemed like an extraordinary cultivator!

The crowd looked at the long box. The middle-aged man put it on the ground with the greatest care. A few ancient imprints appeared and the gigantic box slowly opened itself. The crowd saw the body within. It had no Qi, it just looked intact.

“What kind of body is that?” asked someone. Lin Feng was curious too. He had the Saint’s feet and he had sensed a terrifying strength emerge from them. However, that body just looked like an ordinary corpse.

“What a strange corpse.” It was the first time that the woman next to Lin Feng sounded surprised, she whispered, “It has no Qi at all, it’s like an ordinary body, but it’s immortal. What kind of cultivation level did that person have?”

Everybody was thinking the same. “This body has been checked, he was over a hundred thousand years old or more. It’s completely intact. It was a strong cultivator in the ancient times. However, it has no Qi at all, like an ordinary person,” said the middle-aged man when he saw everybody was curious.

A hundred thousand years old or more?

“Of course, if you don’t believe me, I can show you.” said the middle-aged man smiling. An ice-cold blade appeared, it contained gloomy Qi, everybody sensed it clearly. The middle-aged man’s hand streaked across the sky, people were all startled.

“What a terrifying blade, it’s a level four or more Great Imperial Weapon!”

A terrifying strength attacked the immortal body. The crowd's face stiffened. There was a metallic clank, and everybody was astonished because the blade didn't do anything to the corpse!

"This blade is extremely powerful, as everyone has seen, but nothing works on it. According to our quality testers, it might be a Saint's body," said the middle-aged man indifferently. The crowd burst into an uproar, others remained silent. A Saint's body in an auction house?

"Maybe that you doubt about my words, but I can tell everyone that that body has no Qi and doesn't deteriorate, it's a terrifying physical body. Even though we think it's a Saint, we can't do much with it. We tried to modify it but we can't. That's why we're selling it. Of course, if the price isn't high enough, we won't sell it either," said the middle-aged calmly. The Doomsday Auction House was different from other auction houses. If they weren't happy with the price, they kept the items.

"If you can't use it, why could we?" said someone who didn't intend to bid.

"Why don't you tell us a base price then?" asked someone else.

The middle-aged man shook his head and smiled, "If you want to bid, just bid, otherwise, don't bid."

If they proposed a base price, people wouldn't take any initiative.

Lin Feng shook his head, he wasn't interested in a body he didn't understand, but at that moment, his expression slightly changed. Something was telling him he had to obtain that body.

It was an indescribable feeling, as if he were possessed. Lin Feng was suddenly excited.

"A level two Great imperial scripture and one tome of Great imperial scriptures, what do you think, Your Excellency?" asked Lin Feng.

The middle-aged man just smiled and said nothing. Lin Feng's

price wasn't enough.

"A level four Great Imperial Weapon for the body," proposed a strong cultivator indifferently.

"Level five armor," said the woman next to Lin Feng calmly. She looked interested now. Many people were surprised, a level five Great Imperial Item, even defensive, was expensive, she was definitely rich!

The woman ground her teeth too. She had proposed a high price, she only had one item like that, but a Great Imperial Item couldn't be compared with a Saint's body. If she managed to understand it, she'd probably become extremely powerful. She would be able to inspect it back in her clan.

"Since you don't want to buy that weapon in front of everybody, I'll tell you something personally," said Lin Feng indifferently. He talked to the middle-aged man indifferently, the man was astonished and frowned. People were surprised, what had Lin Feng proposed? More Ancient Holy Scriptures?

"Deal!" said the middle-aged man without hesitating.

Lin Feng smiled and stood up. His silhouette flickered, he jumped onto the stage, said something to the man using his godly awareness, and took the immortal body.

"Who's that guy? He bought so many things!" exclaimed quite a few people.

The woman next to Lin Feng was stupefied. She realized that this young man who hadn't even reached the top of the Huang Qi layer had so many things. She found herself curious. Some clans loved ancient scriptures, that wasn't surprising, especially scholars since they had studied at university.

However, this Lin Feng seemed stupid, he had shown too much, did he think he'd manage to leave safely? So many people were staring at him...

When Lin Feng came back, the woman stood up and said to Lin Feng, “When you leave, many people will surround you. The Doomsday Auction House won’t help you, they’re not responsible for you. Give me the talisman and I’ll help you. Otherwise, you will die before being able to go to Godly Clouds.”

“Thank you for proposing your help,” replied Lin Feng indifferently.

The woman frowned and asked, “Why? That talisman is useless for you. I’m a deployment spell caster. I really need it.”

“Miss, if you need...” said someone next to her at that moment, releasing icy energies.

“My ticket is for the boat in five days as well, that’s why I want to help you. I hope you understand,” said the woman to Lin Feng.

“Thank you very much, you’re too kind,” said Lin Feng, nodding to her, and then he ran into the crowd. Many people released Qi around Lin Feng. He frowned and accelerated.

When the woman saw Lin Feng, she frowned and stared at him.

“Miss...”

The woman remained silent for a few seconds and shook her head, “He’s just stupid. Forget about it.”

Lin Feng was in the middle of the crowd and suddenly a strong wind brushed against him. Many people grunted icily.

Many people were propelled away. Some people staggered. The atmosphere suddenly became chaotic.

“Insolent!” shouted a strong cultivator furiously, before punching out. However, at that moment, the strong wind moved towards the clouds, many people chased him, but after a short time the wind disappeared. Lin Feng appeared and turned around, looking back at the crowd.

“You think you can just leave?” said an old man in grey clothes.

He was the one who had wanted the talisman.

“Give me the item. You’re just an emperor. You’re acting recklessly.”

“I wonder where that moron studies.”

The crowd had just left the Domsday Auction House and they were all baring their fangs. They were fearless and didn’t even try to hide their desire to steal his treasures.

“I haven’t seen someone so ridiculous in a long time,” said a young man with his arms crossed before his chest. Great emperors were at his sides protecting him.

Lin Feng didn’t continue running. He just stood there and said nothing. He smiled mockingly.

“A bunch of morons.” People’s expressions slightly changed. One of them realized something and punched at Lin Feng. Lin Feng didn’t dodge. There was a rumble and explosion. The body exploded and disappeared. When they thought about his mocking smile a moment ago, they all pulled long faces.

Who was a moron?

It was just a clone, Lin Feng had already left! But why hadn’t they been able to follow him with their godly awareness?

Chapter 2091: Another Saint's Body

“He’s gone?” The woman was also stupefied when she arrived. She smiled thinly, “No wonder he dared act so insolently. He had a way to escape.”

As Lin Feng had moved through the wind, he had actually changed his mask and clothes. When the crowd penetrated into the wind, he left the strong wind, and that wind had moved forwards, taking his clones along. At that moment, Lin Feng was back with Hou Qing Lin and the others. They were calmly watching the scene.

“Let’s go,” said Lin Feng and they got up to leave.

“Brothers, we are many people, even if we get as many tickets, we also need to get tickets for the same day and that will be very difficult, we’ll need too much time,” Lin Feng said to Hou Qing Lin. After all, they couldn’t get many tickets for the ship which was five days later. There were many auction houses but for a dozen people, it would still be difficult to get so many tickets.

“So what do you want to do?” asked Hou Qing Lin to Lin Feng.

“I can bring everyone along, but the problem is you won’t be able to enjoy and learn from the empty space tunnel,” explained Lin Feng.

“Learning from the empty space tunnel is less important than gaining time to find Mu Chen. When we come back from Godly Clouds, we’ll all be able to learn from it,” replied Hou Qing Lin. Lin Feng nodded and said, “Alright! In five days, we will go to Godly Clouds. Let’s relax for the next few days. Don’t offend anyone. When we come back, we’ll enjoy ourselves a bit here.”

Everybody understood, they were in a rush. Mu Chen used to be a friend and a teacher, so if Lin Feng could take them along ‘for free’, it was the best solution. Everybody cared about Mu Chen

greatly!

As Lin Feng had said, the best thing to do was not to offend anyone and relax for a few days. Lin Feng found a tranquil place and took out his new talisman. He opened the talisman and a beam of light emerged from it. Lin Feng put his godly awareness inside and sensed some deployment spell essence. This kind of talisman was perfect for carving deployment spells.

“Even though I am strong in comparison to people of the same cultivation level, I can’t compete with great emperors. If I carve some great deployment spells inside this talisman, I will be able to use it if I face a great danger. That way, I won’t need to use the Saint’s body,” he said to himself. He extended his hand out and condensed all sorts of cosmic energies. At the same time, his Heavenly Grace Godly Wood appeared indistinctly behind his body, a hurricane made of cosmic energies gathering around it. Then, those cosmic energies condensed down into his finger.

He couldn’t use such powerful cosmic energies on an ordinary talisman, or it would break!

Lin Feng started carving on the Great Imperial Talisman. Cosmic strength spread around him. Lin Feng hadn’t carved deployment spells this seriously for a long time, and was extremely focused. The deployment marks were being carved with single-hearted devotion and without distracting thoughts, glittering as they formed.

After a long time, Lin Feng finished carving the deployment marks and put his talisman away. He was happy and smiled. He took out the three boxes he had obtained without knowing what they were.

“Two ordinary Great Imperial Weapons and an Imperial weapon, I lost.” Lin Feng smiled, he didn’t mind. The Ancient scriptures he had traded weren’t useful to him. As long as he had the ship ticket, he was satisfied.

After that, Lin Feng went into his spirit's world. The Saint's body was there, dead and inert. No Qi emerged from it. Lin Feng walked over to Qin Shan and put his soul strength into Qin Shan's brain. After a short time, Lin Feng's soul arrived in front of a dazzling light. Qin Shan was awake already, but he hadn't recovered, he still needed godly medicine to recover.

"Master, can you help me check that body?" asked Lin Feng to the Saint.

"Saint's body!" declared Qin Shan. Lin Feng's shivered. It was really a Saint's body! Why didn't it have Qi though? Even the strong cultivators of the Doomsday Auction House couldn't use it, so they had sold it.

"Make it fuse together with my consciousness and I'll see whether it still has a thread of consciousness or not." said Qin Shan. Lin Feng fused his soul together with the Saint's consciousness. Qin Shan walked over to the Saint and his eyes twinkled.

Dazzling lights emerged from the Qin Shan's eyes and penetrated into the Saint's body. However, Lin Feng saw no consciousness at all, as if the Saint was really dead.

Lin Feng and Qin Shan's consciousness flew throughout that body. They realized that some kind of strength was blocking them, as they couldn't explore the Saint's body thoroughly.

Qin Shan used more of his will to pierce through the strength and penetrate into the body thoroughly. Lin Feng saw a golden empty space world within, but it seemed broken.

A terrifying strength flowed towards them from the body. Qin Shan sensed a terrible power collide with his own. Golden lights bombarded his body with a crash and explosion of force. The Saint was propelled away a thousand meters and crashed onto the ground.

He recalled his consciousness. Lin Feng was astonished. That body which hadn't moved for a very long time had attacked Qin Shan!

"What's that?" a voice resonated inside Qin Shan's body and made him shake.

"Master, his body, that's..." Lin Feng was shaking.

"Even though it's golden, it doesn't have any cosmic energy inside. It's as if his own strength has been broken, a golden empty space, a broken world. It's definitely a Saint, but something catastrophic must have happened to him."

Lin Feng and Qin Shan's consciousness had fused together. They could communicate directly without speaking.

"But he attacked our power?"

"For him, everybody else is a nobody, an insignificant tiny little insect. He despises Heaven and Earth," murmured Qin Shan. He was a Saint too, but he had never seen such a Saint's body.

"That obstructive strength is formidable, it could destroy my consciousness. However, why could my consciousness pierce through the obstructive energy and penetrate into his body?" wondered Qin Shan, seemingly talking to himself.

"Master," said Lin Feng at that moment.

"Hm?"

"My soul can get into it." whispered Lin Feng. Qin Shan remained silent for a few seconds. If he had a real body, it would have been perfect.

"I'll transmit an ancient technique to you, try and control that body," said Qin Shan after remaining silent for a few seconds. He relayed an ancient technique to Lin Feng, and their minds separated.

Lin Feng recalled his soul strength and studied the ancient

technique. After a short time, he opened his eyes with a glitter. He stared at the Saint's body as his soul came out of his body and moved into the Saint's Body. He inspected that broken golden world, with neither strength nor Qi in it. Lin Feng had the impression that he was back in Hell, it was the same kind of feeling.

After a long time, the body finally moved and opened his eyes.

"It works!" Lin Feng was stupefied. It was starting to work. Then, Lin Feng moved his arm, and then his legs.

After a very long time, the body stood up.

"Master." Lin Feng took a deep breath. He was moving, could he really control this body?

"Don't get too excited. You've just started. It's a dead body, you can control it, but because it's a Saint's body, it's not that easy either, as you can't use a Saint's strength. In that body, there is absolutely no thread of consciousness. So you can use the body, but regarding the strength you can deploy with it, I guess it depends on how familiar you are with it," Qin Shan said to Lin Feng.

Lin Feng nodded and said, "I understand. It's a dead body. I can control it, but it has no strength. But this body, as a shell, is quite powerful. I'll do all I can to practice the ancient technique you transmitted to me."

Then, Lin Feng started walking around with a body that wasn't his own.

At Lin Feng's cultivation level, his soul could easily move away from his body. Controlling a dead body wasn't difficult. The real difficulty was in controlling a dead Saint's body. Even though it was just a shell, not everyone could easily defeat such a body!

Chapter 2092: Deadly Tunnel

Time passed quickly without Lin Feng realizing it. He still hadn't managed to control the Saint's body, but it was time to go to the empty space tunnel.

The tunnel was a golden gate. It contained a deadly golden wind, strong enough to easily defeat a cultivator. Nature's strength could be dreadful sometimes, especially in the empty space tunnels which connected the different parts of the continent.

A ship had stopped at the gateway. It looked like a gigantic and terrifying warship, and seemed to be made of pure gold.

"That kind of empty space ship can easily cross the empty space tunnel. It's not actually made of gold, powerful cultivators make them using cosmic energies. There are dangerous marks on it, and Dao essence." Lin Feng shivered when he saw the ship, wondering at the cost. Even though the ship was gigantic, there weren't many seats in it, because most of the ship components were there for defensive purposes to cross the empty space tunnels.

It was said that Saints could cross the tunnels relying on their own strength. Great emperors, however, could not.

The alliance who controlled the empty space tunnels was very strict when it came to migration flows. There were many strong cultivators at the entrance who checked everyone. There was even a terrifying cultivator in charge of the team. They had to guarantee proper operation of the ships or their business could crash.

There were many people there today. They were walking up the flight of stairs which led to the ship. Lin Feng gave his ticket to the guards and entered the ship. There were many people already present. The crew made full use of the ship, it was packed with a hundred people, the maximum number of people who could be accommodated.

The ship was surrounded by a curtain of dazzling lights, but one could still see the landscape outside. In the distance, was the deadly golden wind. Lin Feng couldn't imagine what would happen if someone went into it. He remembered back when in the small world when he had fallen into fissures and had ended up in the terrifying passage. The empty space tunnel was even scarier...

"It's you!" said someone. Lin Feng turned around and saw the woman he had seen the other day at the auction house.

Lin Feng smiled indifferently and answered, "It's me."

The woman smiled too and looked him over. "You're strong. You used a special method to escape!"

Lin Feng shrugged, but didn't say much. He just sat down. He only wanted to get to Godly Clouds.

Finally, the hundred ticket-holders had arrived and the gigantic ship started moving. It was still surrounded by formidable golden lights, and a very powerful cultivator was driving the ship. When the ship left, there was a boom of imploding air, and then the ship disappeared into the distance.

What a terrifying speed. Are we traveling through time?, thought Lin Feng, gasping with amazement. The landscape through the windows was incredible, it was like a golden ocean.

Suddenly, some people fell down as an incredible gravitational pressure slammed down on Lin Feng. He had the impression his body was going to be crushed. The air was vibrating from the pressure!

"What kind of strength is this?" wondered Lin Feng. He had the impression he was going to suffocate, the air felt too heavy to breathe. The vibration in the air was making his blood bubble. Lin Feng was shocked and sat down carefully again. What kind of strength was this?

Something rang in the air. The terrifying strength kept pressing

down on the crowd. Many people coughed up blood. Lin Feng groaned with pain. The golden strength was too brutal!

“Miss, the turbulences are terrifying today,” one of her guards said to the woman, pulling a long face.

“It happens sometimes. I hope it’ll get better later,” she murmured back. She looked at Lin Feng and said, “Is this the first time you’ve taken the empty space tunnel?”

Lin Feng nodded.

“The most terrifying kinds of strength of the earth and sky are condensed inside the empty space tunnel. Only Saints can cross it freely. Sometimes, the strength in the empty space tunnel has the power of a Saint. The ship is hard, but it can’t stop all the threads of strength. If the strength in the tunnel is too powerful, then it spreads to the passengers, the ship can’t take all the damage. Some people can die,” said the woman.

Lin Feng nodded. He hadn’t thought it would be like this...

“Therefore, you have to be at least a high-level emperor to take it, weaker people will get crushed instantly.”

Lin Feng nodded again. He looked at the beautiful golden landscape passing by on both sides of the ship. He couldn’t imagine how fast they were traveling. He had the impression they were traveling sideways through time. The strength wasn’t destructive, it was oppressive and made Lin Feng’s blood boil.

Some time passed, people’s faces stayed red. The atmosphere was so still, it was almost scary. Everybody remained silent. Time seemed to be passing very slowly.

Even after a very long time, everybody still felt uncomfortable...

Suddenly, the atmosphere became dark. People’s faces changed drastically, some of the passengers turned deathly pale, like sheets of paper.

“Oh no.”

“Deadly tunnel. How can we cross the deadly tunnel?”

“Deadly tunnel?” Lin Feng didn’t understand and looked at the dark hurricane outside. The atmosphere became even more oppressive.

The strong cultivator who was outside leading the ship came into the ship, a grimace on his face.

“Master?” the woman asked the strong cultivator. Her face turned deathly pale. She had come to the Dark Night Region because she had heard that a collection of great deployment spells illustrative plates had been sold to the Doomsday Auction House. Her clan had sent her there hoping she could buy it. However, they hadn’t thought she’d run into a dark death tunnel.

“Nobody can predict a death tunnel. I hope it won’t be too scary, otherwise, the ship will not be able to endure it and we will all die. That would be horrible, especially since we’re almost there,” said the strong cultivator glumly. “Everybody, release your strength! Rely on yourselves to survive!”

Then, the man closed his eyes, looking ready to do battle. Nobody knew how strong the destructive death tunnel strength would be. Were they going to be lucky or not?

Lin Feng pulled a long face. The captain looked extremely strong, but at that moment he was talking in a grave and solemn way, which meant the situation was really dangerous!

Demon and earth Dao strength surrounded his body, everybody was releasing energies to protect themselves at that moment. Nobody could care about others.

When the strength collided with the ship, it shook violently. Some people’s defensive energies crackled, was this their Judgement Day? Lin Feng kept releasing life cosmic energies.

“There.” Lin Feng saw the woman, dazzling lights were

surrounding her and her people.

Lin Feng suddenly jumped forwards as the ship shook even more violently. Many people could barely stand steadily.

A terrifying strength streaked across the sky again. Lin Feng ran towards the woman and took her in his arms. She frowned darkly, but did nothing. She couldn't take care of herself, so she couldn't take care of anything else.

Lin Feng lost consciousness...

——

Godly Clouds, Feng Zhou City, exit of the empty space tunnel...

The waiting crowd saw a ship come out. When they saw all those people lying down on the ship, they were astonished. They had probably run into a death tunnel.

“Many people are dead or injured.” someone's eyes twinkled, he got closer, there were many corpses on the ship. Since they were dead already, their items weren't theirs anymore...

“Move away!” ordered someone icily. A group of strong cultivators arrived in front of the ship.

“Miss is there!” said someone. The group of strong cultivators all grimaced. Surprisingly, so many people were dead!

“She still has Qi!” Someone slowly walked up to her. A young man was holding her in his arms. When they crowd saw that, they looked at him icily, especially the young men around.

Chapter 2093: Qing Shan City

“Does anyone know him?” asked that strong cultivator. Everybody shook their heads, they looked furious.

“Uncle, should we kill him?” asked someone.

Their leader muttered to himself irresolutely and said, “We don’t know if he knows Miss Ye, let’s bring him back.”

“Alright.” the crowd nodded and started picking up things from the ship. The captain of the ship and some great emperors started waking up. The others were either dead or injured. Lin Feng was lucky, he was injured, but not dead due to his incredibly powerful soul and body.

——

Godly Clouds was in the very center of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. It had a border with the eight other regions of the continent. It was also the widest and strongest region. All sorts of cultivators gathered there. Their battles were magnificent and explosive. Great Scholars, doctors, deployment spell casters, and people who had special powers dwelled there.

In the central part of Godly Clouds were many powerful cities. They all had their own rules. Some of them had Holy Clans, some of them had universities, some of them had sects, some of them were like Hell, where a central government ruled over the city.

In Qing Shan City, ancient families were extremely powerful, or in other words, were Ancient Clans. Two families were particularly strong: the Jing Clan and the Yu Clan. They were both families of deployment spell casters, and extremely powerful.

The Jing Clan was gaining strength, especially their young people. They seemed stronger than the Yu Clan. However, recently, a scandal had struck the Jing Clan, as one of their descendants, Jing Xiao Yue, had fallen in love with someone she

shouldn't have. Many people still talked about it. The Jing Clan could go and kill him, but Jing Xiao Yue threatened to kill herself if they did.

That scandal spread all around Qing Shan City. Everybody was talking about it. Some people had compassion for Jing Xiao Yue. In the cultivation world, few people ever knew what real love was. She had found someone she loved, but unfortunately, he was already hundreds of years old, and even though he was strong, his potential had limits and the Jing Clan didn't want her to get married to such a person.

In a dark tower of the Jing Clan...

A man was chained up, screws stuck into him, looking extremely weak. Two flames kept flickering as he suffered from unspeakable pains.

Someone came to him and smiled evilly, "If you tell Xiao Yue you deceived her on a stage in front of everyone, you'll be freed."

The man raised his head and smiled at him mockingly, replying icily, "Hundreds of years passed and I thought I'd never find love again. However, I met Xiao Yue. Even if you kill me, I will never say that! My disciples will help avenge me if you kill me. My fellow disciple is with them. If I can't be with her in a relationship, then you can just kill me!" He smiled broadly.

"You want to die?" his torturer smiled pitilessly. "Since you don't agree, you'll stay here forever and suffer unbearably. Xiao Yue doesn't know we captured you. She will slowly forget about you, find someone else and fall in love with them."

"We set a date. If she doesn't see me on that day, she'll know the truth. She knows I would never abandon her," said the man indifferently.

"You're wrong. We've already told her that you wanted to use

her to join our the Jing Clan. If you don't show up, she'll know you just wanted to deceive her," said that person emotionlessly, and then he disappeared down a dark corridor, following the faint torches on the walls.

The man sighed. He remembered back then when he had fallen in love. He remembered they were incredible cultivators in his world. Then, he had joined hands with his friends to leave that sealed world to come to the great world, which had always been a dream of theirs, and now he was in such a situation because of love.

Since he was imprisoned, he thought about his disciples all the time. Some of them had already become high-level emperors. He was convinced that some of them would become terrifying cultivators someday. He had met Xiao Yue by a lucky coincidence, she was so similar to the woman he had loved. He had noticed some things were different, but it hadn't prevented him from loving her. However, the cultivation world was cruel. If you weren't strong enough, it could be a nightmare!

High-level emperors were incredible cultivators in their previous world, but in this new world, they were extremely weak!

.....

In a room in the Yu Clan...

Lin Feng opened his eyes. He was still in pain.

I'm still alive!, thought Lin Feng, taking a deep breath. That strength in the tunnel was too terrifying, even a great emperor could have died in there. He remembered thinking he was going to die.

He struggled to stand up, it was so painful. His body and soul were both sore. He had the impression his body weighed hundreds of kilos, or as if his body wasn't his own anymore.

Where am I?, he wondered. He realized some of his rings had

disappeared. Even though he had put the most important things in his spirit's world, he still used rings, and had hidden many things in them. Someone had stolen his rings...

He slowly finished standing up and walked up to the door. He opened it and saw a courtyard beyond, with some guards stationed there. When they saw him, one of the guards said, "You're awake, you should rest for now."

"Where are we?" asked Lin Feng.

"Yu Ministry Buildings, Miss Yu's residence," said the guard calmly. A lady's residence, there was only an ordinary guard, and on top of that he told Lin Feng to rest.

"I'm going out," said Lin Feng calmly, continuing forwards.

However, the guard blocked him and said icily, "Before Miss Yu wakes up, you're staying here."

Lin Feng frowned. He remembered that he had taken a woman in his arms just before losing consciousness. She had something to protect herself, so he had used her item and jumped into the lights. Was the guard talking about that woman?

"Are we in Godly Clouds?" asked Lin Feng. Even though he knew it, he wanted to make sure.

"Godly Clouds, Qing Shan City," answered the guard.

"I'm in Godly Clouds!" Lin Feng's eyes twinkled. He had to find a way to leave, to go find Mu Chen.

"Stay here!" When the guard saw that Lin Feng wanted to leave, he looked angry.

Lin Feng grunted icily. He wanted to force his way through, but at that moment, there was a whistling of rapid movement. A group of people appeared. The woman was among them!

The woman landed in front of Lin Feng and ground her teeth. She said icily, "Shameless bastard!"

“I had no choice, otherwise I would have died. Please forgive me,” said Lin Feng. He had almost died, he hadn’t had time to think.

“Yu Ye, since you don’t know him, then...” a young man next to the young woman said icily. He wanted to kill Lin Feng.

However, Yu Ye ignored him and said to Lin Feng, “You can leave, but first give me the Great Imperial Talisman!”

Lin Feng looked unhappy and said, “Your friends took all my rings, and you want my Great Imperial Talisman?”

“Did that happen?” Yu Ye asked the young men next to her icily.

He replied, “Uncle took his rings. He was waiting for you to wake up to make a decision.”

“Let’s go and see my father,” said Yu Ye. She turned to Lin Feng and told him, “Come with me.”

—

The group of people headed towards a palace. A middle-aged man was within, looking at a deployment talisman. The one who had carved that talisman was extremely strong...

The talisman in front of him was the talisman Lin Feng had carved. He had found it by crushing one of Lin Feng’s rings after inspecting his memories. Lin Feng had to be a Great Scholar!

Chapter 2094: Deployment Spell Family

Yu Kun focused and put his godly awareness in the talisman and inspected the marks, asking, “Did you get this from that little boy?”

“Indeed. Miss Yu hasn’t woken up yet. Maybe they know one another, but we took the ring anyway,” replied the other one.

“When Yu Ye wakes up, tell her to come to me,” said Yu Kun.

As he was talking, the group of people had already landed out of the palace and a voice came to his ears, “Father!”

“Oh, I was just talking about you, and now you’re here!” Yu Kun smiled. He looked out of the window and saw them come.

“Deployment talisman.” Yu Ye looked at the deployment talisman in Yu Kun’s hand.

“Hey, Little Ye, look,” said Yu Kun giving the talisman to Yu Ye. Yu Ye took it and put her godly awareness inside, her expression changing.

She said, “Those deployment marks are so complex. The one who carved that talisman is extremely strong. Did you do that?”

Yu Kun shook his head and looked at Lin Feng, he asked, “Little boy, are you from a clan or sect of deployment spell casters?”

Lin Feng’s hair bristled. These people were shameless. They had inspected his rings and taken things out. Luckily, he hadn’t put anything too important inside, but there were many Ancient scriptures within them.

“It’s him,” said Yu Ye pointing at Lin Feng. Then, she remembered something and said, “Is that the talisman you got at the auction house? You just polished it a little bit, right? The essence was already very thick inside, right?”

Yu Ye was convinced that Lin Feng had no knowledge of

deployment spells. She was from a family of deployment spell casters, they were extremely strong, yet many of their people couldn't carve such good deployment talismans. Even her father, who was a Great Scholar, couldn't carve such perfect talismans. It was extremely difficult.

"Kind of, maybe," replied Lin Feng evenly, before asking, "Will you give me back my things?"

"I don't care about your items, but first tell me who helped you carve that talisman. The essence was useless, it was like blank paper. The one who carved the talisman is incredible," said Yu Kun calmly.

Lin Feng's eyes glittered. If he told them the truth, they weren't going to let him go. He replied, "My teacher helped me."

"Your teacher." Yu Kun's eyes twinkled. He had guessed so.

"Did your teacher come with you on the ship?" Yu Kun asked Lin Feng politely. Lin Feng was some Great Scholar's disciple, they could establish good relations!

"It was difficult to get ship tickets. I just bought one. My teacher got one, but for a different date, he should be here too now," replied Lin Feng.

"I see. What's your name?" asked Yu Kun, smiling at Lin Feng politely.

"Lin Feng."

"Oh, Lin Feng, please be our guest. When your teacher comes, he should come here," said Yu Kun amiably, and then glanced at Yu Ye. "Little Ye, be nice to Lin Feng."

Yu Ye looked surprised. Her father wanted to invite Lin Feng and his teacher, she had underestimated him. From what her father had just said, no matter what Lin Feng had said or done to her before, it wasn't important. The most important thing was to get to know him and be friends with him!

“Alright, father,” said Yu Ye glancing at Lin Feng. She remembered that Lin Feng had so many Ancient scriptures. He had bought so many things in the auction house. So initially his teacher was a Great Scholar, no wonder he was so rich. Deployment spell casters could sell things to others and obtain great items. Buying things was easy for someone wealthy. She was from a clan of deployment spell casters, so she understood the principle.

“Lin Feng, take your rings. Little Ye, give the talisman back to Lin Feng,” ordered Yu Kun, returning Lin Feng’s rings to him. Lin Feng took them and reestablished a connection to them. Then he put all his other rings in one ring.

“Lin Feng, let’s go,” said Yu Ye to Lin Feng. She had a strange feeling, but she controlled herself and didn’t mention it. After all, Lin Feng’s teacher had to be a Great Scholar in the field of deployment spells!

“Alright.” Lin Feng wanted to leave too. Now, nobody was going to stop him. He was happy. However, those next to Yu Ye were furious. This guy was surprisingly from a clan of deployment spell casters, they couldn’t do anything to him?

If they knew that Lin Feng had made the talisman himself, how would these people have reacted?

“I want to go out,” said Lin Feng to Yu Ye after they left the palace.

“Alright, I’ll take you out.” Yu Ye rose up into the air and glanced around, then she pointed out to Lin Feng, “This is my clan’s territory, the Yu Clan. We are one of the two strongest clans in Qing Shan City. We are a clan of deployment spell casters. We’ve existed for ten thousand years. Apart from our territory, we have many deployment mines.”

“Deployment mines?” Lin Feng didn’t understand. What was a deployment mine?

“You’ve never heard of deployment mines in the Dark Night Region?” asked Yu Ye, curious.

“I haven’t!” said Lin Feng.

“I’ll take you to see one when we have time,” Yu Ye smiled. After a short time, they had left the Yu Ministry area.

Lin Feng said to Yu Ye, “I want to go out on my own.”

Yu Ye was surprised, but she smiled and nodded, “Alright... If you need anything, come to our clan. Here, this is my jade talisman.”

“Alright.” Lin Feng nodded and took it. They exchanged their godly awareness talismans and then Lin Feng departed.

—

“I’ll take Hou Qing Lin out and then we’ll look for Mu Chen.” Lin Feng glanced around and then flitted away. He found a place with nobody around quickly enough, and then Hou Qing Lin and the others appeared around him.

“Lin Feng.” Hou Qing Lin looked to him and asked, “Are we in Godly Clouds?”

“Yes, Godly Clouds, Qing Shan City. Where’s Mu Chen?” asked Lin Feng urgently.

Hou Qing Lin nodded and took out the Soul Locking Bells, rising up into the air. The bells rang and the sound spread out softly.

“That way! I don’t know how far though!” stated Hou Qing Lin. A boat appeared and Lin Feng and his friends hopped aboard, following the signal of the Soul Locking Bells. Lin Feng didn’t intend to go back to the Yu Clan, he just wanted to find Mu Chen!

The air whistled past them as the ship streaked across the sky of Qing Shan City. The Soul Locking Bells rang louder and louder. Hou Qing Lin was startled, as in front of them, a vast palace appeared. It was a rich clan’s mansion house!

“Lin Feng, stop!” Hou Qing Lin said suddenly. His eyebrows looked as sharp as swords.

Lin Feng sensed something and stopped quickly. The bells were ringing louder and louder. The signal pointed to the mansion house in front of them!

“Go.” Hou Qing Lin threw out the Soul Locking Bells, which turned into a beam of light. Lin Feng and the others stared after them. Very quickly, the bells entered the mansion house. Lin Feng and the others followed the bells. In order not to draw people’s attention, they were flying up in the clouds.

Hou Qing Lin and Lin Feng remained silent. They had the feeling that Mu Chen was in the mansion!

As expected, the bells entered a black tower. The bells were ringing so loud that it made their souls shake.

“Black tower, Mu Chen.” Hou Qing Lin was grim as he said, “Mu Chen is in the black tower!”

Lin Feng and the others shivered. At that moment, a group of strong cultivators started chasing the Soul Locking Bells. Lin Feng said, “Brother, recall the Soul Locking Bells!”

“Alright.” Hou Qing Lin nodded and recalled the Soul Locking Bells. The strong cultivators followed them. The Soul Locking Bells returned to Hou Qing Lin, and the strong cultivators noticed them.

“Who are you?” the leader of the group asked Lin Feng and the others icily.

“We’re just passengers. We didn’t want to disturb you. Sorry,” replied Hou Qing Lin, looking calm and composed. These men were all great emperors.

“What was that thing?” asked that person icily.

“An ordinary toy we were playing with. Sorry for having disturbed you. We’re leaving!” said Hou Qing Lin with a courteous

wave, and then he ordered, “Let’s go!”

They left, but they were furious. They wanted to go into the tower and force the way, but it was too risky!

Chapter 2095: Tower of Torture

Hou Qing Lin and the others departed quickly. The men from the tower didn't try to ask them anything else. After all, Lin Feng and the others' Qi looked extraordinary. They might have a powerful background...

After leaving, Lin Feng and the others finally let their fury show.

"Brother, are you sure Mu Chen is in that black tower?" asked Ruo Xie coolly.

"If the signal of the Soul Locking Bells is right, then he should be in there. He's probably imprisoned," Hou Qing Lin replied grimly.

"Let's go. Let's investigate first. Since he's been imprisoned by a powerful group, maybe some people know about him in the region," suggested Tian Chi. He was trying to control himself.

Everybody nodded agreement. Then, they descended from the sky and found a pub with many people. They all decided to sit down at different tables where there were people already.

Lin Feng found a table and asked to those who were seated there, "Can I sit here?"

That person looked at Lin Feng, smiled and said, "Please do."

Lin Feng sat down and glanced around. Then, he whispered, "I came to Qing Shan City because I want to learn more about this place. There is an imposing and magnificent mansion house over there, whose house is it?"

Lin Feng pointed at the black tower in the horizon out of the window.

Lin Feng's interlocutor smiled and said, "My boy, it definitely is your first time in Qing Shan City, it's the Jing Clan."

"Is the Jing Clan very strong?" asked Lin Feng.

"Of course! Qing Shan City is an ordinary city in Godly Clouds,

there are only a few powerful clans here, but the Jing Clan and the Yu Clan are the strongest clans in town. They are both families of deployment spell casters. And let me tell you, in the last hundred years, the Jing Clan had become much stronger than the Yu Clan, there's now a huge gap between them. If the descendants of the Yu Clan don't make efforts, the Jing Clan will crush them someday," whispered that person. Even though everybody knew that in Qing Shan City, saying that loudly could make others unhappy...

"Yu Clan, deployment spell caster." Lin Feng was stupefied. The Yu Clan was precisely Yu Ye's clan. Lin Feng actually knew them.

"Does the Jing Clan have Saint Emperors?" asked Lin Feng.

"Naturally. According to legends, there are six Saint Emperors in Qing Shan City, spread over four clans. The Jing Clan and the Yu Clan have two Saint Emperors each, the two others clans a Saint Emperor each. Maybe there are some others, but that I don't know about them." said Lin Feng's informant happily. He was happy to chat with someone, and this kind of stuff was hardly secret anyway.

Lin Feng could evaluate the situation approximately. Two Saint Emperors each, so he had to use the power of a Saint, Tiantai's disciples couldn't rescue Mu Chen. Lin Feng didn't know if he could fight using Qin Shan's body again. If he did, it meant taking the risk of destroying Qin Shan's consciousness and body, as well as his own.

In the worst case, Mu Chen is imprisoned by the Jing Clan and they are not willing to release him, in which case I'd have to use the Saint's power..., thought Lin Feng. He asked, "Have you ever heard of Mu Chen?"

"Mu Chen." When he heard Lin Feng's question, the other man's expression changed in a strange way, especially since Lin Feng had asked him whether the Jing Clan was strong or not.

"Do you know Mu Chen?" asked that person.

“I don’t know him. I’ve heard many people talk about the Jing Clan and Mu Chen. I was wondering who he was?” asked Lin Feng, trying to remain composed, he even smiled indifferently. He wanted to see the man’s reaction.

“Hehe, Mu Chen is a little bit famous in Qing Shan City, so it’s normal that people are talking about him. I guess I can tell you about him,” the other man smiled.

“Thank you very much!” Lin Feng said politely.

“To be honest, we have to admit that Mu Chen is incredible. He’s not a young man, but he’s a high-level emperor already, and his fighting abilities are incredible, his soul strength is terrifyingly powerful. But there are many strong people in Qing Shan City. When talking about Mu Chen, you have to mention someone else: Jing Xiao Yue! She’s well-mannered, pretty, and polished, as well as elegant and free from vulgarity. She’s also extremely strong and talented, especially when it comes to deployment spells. Also, she’s not even forty yet, and is at her prime. Many people wish they could get married to her.

“However, she surprisingly fell in love with Mu Chen, which perplexes everyone despite much thought. Even though cultivators can live for a very long time and age doesn’t matter in terms of love, those two really don’t belong to the same world, so it’s strange for them to be in a relationship. Don’t you think?” explained the man.

He didn’t understand what was going on. However, Lin Feng shivered. Mu Chen had fallen in love with someone again. She was probably extremely beautiful. However, people in the cultivation world were often extremely parochial.

Mu Chen had charisma. It wasn’t surprising that a woman had fallen in love with him. Lin Feng and the other disciples respected him regardless.

“What happened after that?” asked Lin Feng.

“After that, many things happened. Mu Chen killed many members of the Jing Clan. They were furious and wanted to kill Mu Chen. They injured him, but then Jing Xiao Yue threatened to kill herself if they killed him. The Jing Clan didn’t dare kill him, as Jing Xiao Yue holds a special position in her clan. She’s extremely strong and her close relatives, such as her brothers and her father, are all extraordinary. She’s important to her clan. She can’t die, so Mu Chen can’t die either.”

“So they imprisoned him?” Lin Feng was furious and blurted that out unthinkingly.

However, his interlocutor was surprised and said, “Imprisoned? I don’t think so. I think they gave Jing Xiao Yue and Mu Chen an opportunity.”

“What opportunity?” asked Lin Feng.

“To fight over a deployment mine,” said that person, “In Qing Shan City, there are some very important deployment mines which are very useful for clans of deployment spell casters. Therefore, there are four clans which keep competing over them, especially the Jing Clan and the Yu Clan. The competition between them is fierce, each time many people die when they fight over them. Right now, the Jing Clan is the strongest clan. They are slowly dominating the Yu Clan. Therefore, the Jing Clan wants to gain control of the four major deployment mines. Right now, each of the four clans guard one deployment mine.”

“The Jing Clan wants to get the deployment mines of the three other clans, but they naturally don’t agree, right?” said Lin Feng. He wasn’t worried about the deployment mines, he was worried about Mu Chen.

“Indeed, the three clans are all angry at the Jing Clan. They have fought many times. However, they have not managed to prevent the Jing Clan from expanding. Eventually they agreed on something: using young people to determine to whom the

deployment mines belong. If anyone loses, they must give up their deployment mine, including the Jing Clan.”

“So the Jing Clan can’t use the same batch of people?” asked Lin Feng. If using the same batch of people was possible, the Jing Clan could use their strongest cultivators and steal all the deployment mines. After all, according to what this guy had said, the Jing Clan had the advantage.

“Indeed, the four clans protect their own deployment mine. If they are strong enough, they can also steal the Jing Clan’s deployment mine, which is also the best one,” replied his informant.

“The Jing Clan wants Mu Chen to help them steal a deployment mine?”

“Indeed, the Jing Clan and Mu Chen agreed that if he could help steal the Yu Clan’s deployment mine, they would accept his relationship with Jing Xiao Yue. But Mu Chen might die there. The Yu Clan isn’t ready to give up, maybe they won’t try to steal the Jing Clan’s deployment mine, but at least they’ll do all they can to keep their own. The two others are the same. They all invited some extremely strong young people to help them out.”

Lin Feng pulled a long face. The Jing Clan wanted Mu Chen to help them, but he was imprisoned, what was that supposed to mean? Lin Feng’s interlocutor didn’t seem to know that Mu Chen was in the Jing Clan, it probably proved that he was imprisoned.

“Can other people still participate and help the clans fight for the deployment mines?”

“I think so. The Jing Clan is the most powerful clan of deployment spell casters. They want to expand more anyway,” replied the fellow.

“I understand. Thank you very much for all those pieces of information, brother. Oh, do you know what the Jing Clan’s black

tower is?” asked Lin Feng.

“You mean the black tower in which they torture people? People who are imprisoned there never come out,” replied his interlocutor. Lin Feng frowned and his eyes glittered icily. The Jing Clan didn’t intend to let Mu Chen participate in the competition for the deployment mines, it was just an excuse. He was in the black tower which nobody ever came out of!

Chapter 2096: Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry

Lin Feng and Tiantai's people left the restaurant. They exchanged the pieces of information they had obtained in there. The gossipers hadn't lied, it would have been pointless. Everybody knew about what was going on in Qing Shan City, only strangers like them didn't.

The case was actually quite simple: the Jing Clan had deceived Jing Xiao Yue and imprisoned Mu Chen. They were lying and saying that Mu Chen was going to participate to the deployment mine competition, they made it seem like a perfect opportunity for Mu Chen. But actually, they didn't intend to release Mu Chen at all. He was in the black tower, doomed to never see the sky again.

"A bunch of bastards. What should we do?" asked Tantai, righteously indignant. His eyes were gleaming; even though he had never seen Mu Chen, Tiantai's disciples all respected him as a founder, just like Emperor Yu. Mu Chen was one of the two founders of Tiantai, and they were all descendants!

"Brothers, do you know the four clans?" Lin Feng asked everyone.

"Of course. The Jing Clan imprisoned Mu Chen. They are the strongest clan, having surpassed the Yu Clan. The two other clans, the Luo Clan and the Hong Clan, have joined hands. Lin Feng, what do you think?" Hou Qing Lin said to Lin Feng.

"Hou Qing Lin, bring some people to the Luo Clan. Ruo Xie, bring some people to the Hong Clan. Tantai and I will go to the Yu Clan and we'll help them. Hou Qing Ling, if possible, don't attack. Bring Ruo Xie, and after the competition, we'll go to the Jing Clan's deployment mine and put pressure on them," Lin Feng said slowly.

Everybody was startled at his idea. Ruo Xie said, "Will it not

produce the opposite of the desired result if we collaborate with the Jing Clan? How can we save Mu Chen that way?”

“The four clans want to protect their deployment mines. If we help them, they’ll be happy. At that moment, when we steal the deployment mine from the Jing Clan, the Jing Clan will release him and we’ll stop. The other three clans won’t mind. If they don’t, we’ll keep the deployment mine and they won’t be happy. If the Jing Clan doesn’t respect the agreement, the three other clans will start fighting against them and then we’ll have the opportunity to rescue Mu Chen using other methods!” said Lin Feng calmly.

“If we help the Jing Clan steal all the deployment mines, will they release Mu Chen?” asked Ban Ruo.

“They won’t. The Jing Clan think the three other clans are weak and stupid. We just want to help them to make things look perfect. The Jing Clan is strong, so if we help them win, they won’t be touched, and the teams we’ve just agreed to are just temporary, they may change at some point,” said Lin Feng.

Everybody nodded.

The Jing Clan was powerful and extremely conceited. If they provided the Jing Clan with timely help and jumped on the bandwagon, the Jing Clan wouldn’t care, they’d just use them temporarily.

“Since it’s that way, let’s separate. Keep in touch using jade talismans.” said Hou Qing Lin.

“Alright.”

——

They all separated in teams and moved in different directions. Lin Feng and Tantai left together and headed back to the Yu Clan. He hadn’t thought he return at all...

“Tantai, how strong are you now?” asked Lin Feng to Tantai. He

hadn't seen Tantai for a few years, he hadn't had time to chat with his friends as much. He didn't even know how strong they had become. Lin Feng had to understand that to assess the situation.

"Hehe." When Tantai heard Lin Feng, he smiled. He looked particularly self-confident. He said, "The Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures are extremely powerful. I used to think I wasn't strong enough, but after studying the Celestial Evolution Holy Scriptures, my physical strength suddenly started changing. I can make strength condense in a perfect way and my strength is now explosive. Besides, you know what kind of Dao I understand now, Strength Dao. Maybe I'm not fast enough, but I'm monstrously strong physically," Tantai said confidently.

Grand talents matured slowly among his people. After meeting Lin Feng and the others, he had started becoming much stronger. Because he had the impression it was never enough, he kept studying hard, step by step.

Lin Feng nodded. He knew Tantai was an expert when it came to physical strength. With his Strength Dao power, his attacks were probably exceedingly dangerous. Lin Feng had no doubts about that. He had transmitted the Ancient Holy Techniques to his friends as well. Even though they hadn't received them directly from the Saints, it was still better than nothing.

When they arrived back at the Yu Clan, Lin Feng went to find Yu Ye. When she saw Tantai, Yu Ye was surprised. How come Lin Feng had a new friend? She had noticed he was alone on the ship.

"Lin Feng, who is this?"

"A friend of mine. My teacher doesn't have only one disciple," Lin Feng smiled.

At the mention of his teacher, Yu Ye's beautiful eyes twinkled, "So your teacher is in town, too?"

"He's in Godly Clouds. If he wants to see me, he'll find me,"

replied Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, little brother, don’t forget to tell your teacher about me.” At that moment, Yu Kun arrived and said happily.

“Of course,” Lin Feng said to Yu Kun. On his side, there were strong cultivators, including great emperors of different ages and talents. There could be huge age differences between great emperors.

“That’s the Great Scholar’s disciple?” asked a new person, looking at Lin Feng indifferently.

“Indeed. His teacher carved that talisman. It gave me cold sweats,” said Yu Kun smiled.

“How strong. So Lin Feng’s deployment spell abilities must be incredible too!” said that person, smiling politely at Lin Feng.

Tantai remained silent. He wasn’t like that in the past. Even though he was still impulsive, he had finally learned how to control himself. He just remained silent and smiled coldly on the inside. Lin Feng’s deployment spells were terrifying, and those people dared talk this way in front of him?

“I’m alright,” said Lin Feng, not minding them and smiling non-committedly.

“Okay, you’re a young and outstanding man, and a high-level emperor already. Your teacher must be really good,” another man smiled.

“And you, how good are you when it comes to deployment spells, in comparison with Yu Lin?” someone else asked in amusement.

“In comparison with Yu Lin?” Many of those around shook their heads, as if the answer were obvious.

“Let’s go. He’s almost here.”

“Yes. Little Ye, stay with Lin Feng,” Yu Kun said, nodding at Lin Feng. He left with the group of people.

“Yu Ye, let’s go and welcome him.” At that moment, a young man had arrived behind Yu Ye.

Yu Ye looked at Lin Feng and Lin Feng nodded, “Don’t worry about me.”

“It’s alright, Yu Lin is coming back today, we can go and see him too!” said Yu Ye, smiling at Lin Feng. Lin Feng was surprised. It seemed that this Yu Lin had a high social status within the Yu Clan. Even great emperors came to greet him!

They started walking as Yu Ye explained to Lin Feng, “Yu Lin is extremely strong. He’s the best deployment spell caster of the clan, very talented. He’s practicing cultivation in the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. If the Yu Clan wasn’t facing difficulties, he wouldn’t have come back.”

No wonder that the Yu Clan attaches importance to him, if he’s such a skilled deployment spell caster, thought Lin Feng.

“Lin Feng, you’re from the Dark Night Region, you have never heard of the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry, I guess? The Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry has trained some people who have become Great Deployment Masters, who corresponds to Saints in terms of cultivation. To practice cultivation in the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry, being a powerful cultivator isn’t enough, you must also be an incredible deployment spell caster,” she explained.

Lin Feng thought that it was no wonder that Godly Clouds was the center of the continent and that they were the strongest region, the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry amazingly had Great Deployment Masters!

“Yu Lin is getting closer and closer to becoming a Great Scholar. But our clan has problems, so we asked the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry to send him back to us temporarily. Yu Lin also brought back a friend with him, he’s also a strong person from the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. This way, nobody

can pose a threat to us!” whispered Yu Ye.

Lin Feng understood that she was talking about the Jing Clan and the other two clans. Lin Feng now understood why Yu Kun and the great emperors had gone to greet them.

Yu Lin and his friend were probably extraordinary people!

But the Jing Clan was the most powerful clan, so at the same level, their young cultivators could defeat the young people of the Yu Clan. The Jing Clan probably had people like Yu Lin as well, or even stronger!

Godly Clouds has talented individuals in hiding, so at the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds, many vied for supremacy, many geniuses from everywhere in the Continent of the Nine Clouds gathered in Godly Clouds!

“Yu Lin is here!” said a young man next to Yu Ye at that moment. In the distant sky, two cultivators appeared riding beasts. The beasts were marvelous: rhinoceroses which had the blood of blood dragons, one could see they were incredibly powerful with just a glance. The two cultivators riding them looked astonishingly strong: they were precisely Yu Lin and his fellow disciple!

Chapter 2097: Battle in the Dark

Yu Ye and everyone else were watching at Yu Lin. Lin Feng looked at the young men next to Yu Ye, noting their eyes were filled with admiration and respect. When the difference between them and other people wasn't big, they were jealous, but when the difference between them and other people was huge, they looked at them with respect and admiration. Yu Lin was the strongest young man of their clan both in terms of deployment spells and strength.

Yu Ye beamed, her admiration evident.

"Yu Lin!" At that moment, Yu Kun and the others stepped forwards, and Yu Lin and his friend descended from the sky.

"Uncle Kun!" said Yu Lin to Yu Kun, then he introduced his friend, "This is my fellow disciple, Su Mu!"

"Little Su Mu, welcome to our Yu Clan, your presence brings light to our humble dwelling," said Yu Kun with a smile.

"Uncle Kun, you're too polite. Yu Lin and I are like brothers. I'm happy to help him," returned Su Mu calmly. The members of the Yu Clan all nodded happily, glad to see both of them!

In Godly Clouds or in the Dark Night Region, everybody respected geniuses and talented people!

At that moment, Yu Lin walked over to Yu Ye and smiled easily.

"Brother Yu Lin," Yu Ye smiled. She took a few steps forwards to greet him.

"Yu Ye, you're becoming more and more beautiful," Yu Lin smiled. He took a step forwards and caressed her cheek and smiled. "Come, Little Ye, let me introduce you my friend, Su Mu."

"Brother Su Mu," Yu Ye greeted Su Mu. Her beautiful eyes were filled with esteem and respect. Su Mu was Yu Lin's friend and had

come to the Yu Clan, which meant he was also very talented. She knew how strong people from the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry were.

“Yu Lin told me how beautiful his little sister was. Now that I see you, I can confirm. Unfortunately, there aren’t many women in the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. If you could join us, that would be great,” said Su Mu grinned back at her.

“Brother Su Mu, you’re joking. I’m not talented enough. How could I become a member of the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry?” replied Yu Ye. She didn’t lie, as even though she was talented, she knew she wasn’t talented enough to become a member of the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. After all, that was a place where you could see Great Deployment Masters. No matter what a person’s social status was, talent was the most important thing!

“We can exchange a lot this time. Maybe you will suddenly improve and meet the requirements to join the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry,” Su Mu smiled.

When Yu Ye heard Su Mu, she beamed happily and said, “Thank you very much, Brother Su Mu! We can exchange views on various thing, just don’t give up halfway!”

“We won’t have time to fall in love though,” said Su Mu jokingly.

Yu Kun’s eyes flashed, he wanted to say something, but Yu Lin whispered, “Uncle Kun, she isn’t a teenager anymore. Brother Su Mu is extraordinarily talented. She should cherish this opportunity.”

“Alright, Yu Lin. Then you can help,” Yu Kun grinned. Yu Lin wanted to act as a middleman.

“Of course,” Yu Lin nodded. He raised his head and looked at Lin Feng and Tantai, next to Yu Ye. He asked, “Uncle Kun, I don’t know those two people. Are they from the Yu Clan too? Why are

they standing so close to Little Ye?”

“They aren’t. Lin Feng and Yu Ye got to know one another in the Dark Night Region, they met by accident on the way back to Godly Clouds. His teacher is a Great Scholar, that’s why I told Yu Ye to get close to him,” said Yu Kun using telepathy.

“His teacher is just a Great Scholar? Brother Su Mu became a Great Scholar when he was five years old. Uncle Kun, in the future, don’t let Little Ye hang out with him, otherwise Brother Su Mu won’t be happy and it might ruin everything. Brother Su Mu seems to be interested in Little Ye,” replied Yu Lin. He was from the Yu Clan, he hoped Yu Ye could enter a better clan. Su Mu was talented, every bit as strong as himself. He hoped they could become a couple.

“Alright, good. I’ll tell her to stay away from him, then,” Yu Kun nodded.

Yu Lin didn’t add anything else. He didn’t spend too much time on Lin Feng. Even though Great Scholars could be beneficial for the Yu Clan, to someone from the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry, a Great Scholar wasn’t important, they had too many. Some people there of the same age were as strong as he was and were already Great Scholars. Therefore, Yu Lin didn’t care about Lin Feng’s teacher being a Great Scholar.

Even as Su Mu and Yu Lin arrived, there were also three young people chatting in a palace in the Jing Clan.

“Yu Lin arrived?” asked one of the young men to someone entering the main hall.

“Yu Lin and Su Mu,” replied the man.

“Su Mu and Yu Lin are good friends. But the Yu Clan are too naive. They think they can prevent us from getting their deployment mine?” said Jing Yan calmly. He sounded self-

confident, as if the situation was perfectly under control.

“Brother, Yu Lin, that little boy, opposed our brother in the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. The Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry can’t do much against him. We should teach him a good lesson,” said a young man standing in a lower position, smiling at Jing Yan. He was also from the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry.

The Jing Clan and the Yu Clan were both families of deployment spell casters, their most outstanding descendants all went to the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry to practice cultivation.

“Yu Lin and Su Mu are not easy targets. We have to be vigilant. Don’t ruin the plans. Unfortunately, our friend hasn’t come. Otherwise, we would have easily invaded all the deployment mines,” Jing Yan said calmly.

“He’s doing all he can to get ready for the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds. We should be happy for him. If he had come, we would have crushed everyone.” Everyone nodded. The Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds was extremely important for everyone. The most outstanding people of the whole continent were getting ready for the Meeting of the Continent of the Nine Clouds!

—

At the same time, apart from the Jing Clan and the Yu Clan, the two other clans were also getting ready for the competition over the deployment mines. Hou Qing Lin and Tian Chi had already managed to infiltrate those groups. The clans were happy to receive some help, and coupled with the geniuses they had invited, keeping their deployment mines would be no problem. They all understood that the biggest competition was between the Yu Clan and the Jing Clan. They just hoped that the Yu Clan would be able to protect themselves and would prevent the Jing Clan from taking another step forwards, otherwise, the Jing Clan would also start

putting pressure on them.

The Jing Clan had wild ambitions. Everybody in Qing Shan City knew that. Everybody in Qing Shan City paid attention to those clans, wondering if the Jing Clan would succeed...

After Yu Lin and Su Mu arrived, Yu Ye stopped spending time with Lin Feng. Sometimes, Lin Feng saw her with Su Mu, but a new girl had started spending time with them: Yu Xin!

Even though Yu Xin wasn't as beautiful as Yu Ye, she was also quite pretty, she looked dainty and delicate, and was also extremely polite. Lin Feng had talked to her and had realized that she didn't have such a high position within the Yu Clan. After Yu Lin had come back, things had changed. Lin Feng wasn't such a lucky find anymore.

Of course, Lin Feng didn't care. On the contrary, he actually found Yu Xin more friendly. She was kinder and more honest. When Lin Feng didn't know something, he asked her directly and she always told him things clearly.

Lin Feng, Tantai, and Yu Xin were walking on a path in the Yu Clan, and bumped into Yu Ye and Su Mu.

When Yu Ye saw Lin Feng, she nodded at him and then looked away and continued talking to Su Mu. She looked extremely happy. Lin Feng overheard their conversation; Yu Ye wanted to bring Su Mu over to the Yu Clan's deployment mine.

Yu Ye had seemingly forgotten that she had promised to Lin Feng she would take him to the Yu Clan's deployment mine.

Of course, Lin Feng didn't care. He cared about Mu Chen!

"Lin Feng, what do you think?" asked Yu Xin, smiling at Lin Feng and watching the two people passing.

“They’re a perfect match. Su Mu is a genius of the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry, and Yu Ye is extremely beautiful. They’re perfect for one another,” Lin Feng said very naturally. He did think they were a good match.

“Hihi, I thought you’d be jealous,” Yu Xin smiled.

“Why would I be?” said Lin Feng, shrugging and pinching Yu Xin’s cheeks, which made her blush; she moved away and glanced at Lin Feng.

“Haha, you’re funnier than Yu Ye,” Lin Feng smiled, walking on.

Yu Xin looked at Lin Feng’s back and muttered, “What kind of guy is this!”

“You’ll understand soon enough!” Tantai laughed, and followed Lin Feng with big strides.

Yu Xin looked at the two friends and laughed. She quickly caught up with them and asked, “Lin Feng, where are we going?”

“We’re going to the Yu Clan’s deployment mine!” said Lin Feng calmly. He was very interested in the deployment mine!

Chapter 2098: Deployment Battle

In Qing Shan City, there were four big deployment mines. The two biggest ones were the Jing Clan's and the Yu Clan's. Many deployment stones were dug out of there. Sometimes, there were even some very strange deployment stones.

Deployment mines were extremely important to the families of deployment spell casters. Therefore, they did all they could to protect them. The Yu Clan was no exception.

Lin Feng followed Yu Xin, and they eventually arrived in front of a gigantic mine. There were all kinds of strange stone formations formed into hills. Lin Feng realized how vast a deployment mine could be. It was basically a precious mountain range. Even though strong cultivators protected it, some people still managed to sneak in and steal stones sometimes. To such thieves, the Yu Clan was ruthless!

Lin Feng was standing before a mountain of stones, and reached out to touch them. Some stones had marks, some of them seemed like they were alive. Cosmic energy kept filtering down, and that was with only ten percent of the stones being empowered!

“How strange. How are they formed?” sighed Lin Feng.

“There are many precious resources in the continent, such as celestial medicinal herbs. These stones aren't that strange, they're quite natural. Of course, many of these stones are useless. Only ten percent of them are useful!” replied Yu Xin.

“Indeed. They're natural and some of them even have innate deployment marks. Even the impure ones seem to have deployment essence, so it's easy to carve deployment marks on them,” Lin Feng said slowly.

Yu Xin smiled, “Yes, many people from my clan come to practice

cultivation here and study deployment spells. At the same time, they use those impure stones to improve their skills!”

“Lin Feng, I’ll take you to the purest deployment mine!” Yu Xin smiled. She grabbed Lin Feng’s hand and rose up into the air.

—

After a short time, they arrived in a part of the mine where the cosmic energies were extremely rich and thick. There were all sorts of deployment stones here. Some of them even seemed alive and had a rich vitality, with innate marks on some of them. Some of them had better deployment marks than a Great Scholar could carve!

“There are many strange things in the world of cultivation,” mused Lin Feng. He walked up to a gigantic black stone with sharp spear marks on it. It contained intense dark cosmic energies, which oozed into the air around it. The spear was covered with deployment marks, it looked alive and real. It was ready to use to study deployment spells.

“How awesome!” Tantai touched the deployment stone. Yu Xin kept giggling. She put her hand on it also, and cosmic energies pulsed out. A terrifying sharp Qi welled up instantly. It felt like the deployment stone could explode at any time!

“How strong! I guess the Yu Clan is ready to do anything to protect the deployment mine!” said Lin Feng.

“Indeed. It is extremely important. Otherwise, my clan wouldn’t have called Yu Lin back. They also wanted him to bring a friend back. The Jing Clan can’t win!” replied Yu Xin.

Lin Feng nodded when he heard her. He would have more chances to join them and make the Jing Clan release Mu Chen this way...

“Lin Feng, your teacher is a Great Scholar, you must be good at casting deployment spells, right?” asked Yu Xin, smiling at Lin

Feng. She was curious.

“I’m alright,” said Lin Feng smiling and shrugging.

Yu Xin pursed her lips and asked, “What does ‘I’m alright’ mean?”

As they were talking, suddenly, the whistling of wind-cutting came to their ears. Lin Feng, Tantai and Yu Xin turned gazed into the distance. A deadly energy dashed to the skies, as if a battle was happening.

“Some people are trying to plunder the mine!” Yu Xin was suddenly enlightened and started running. “Come, let’s go and see!”

Lin Feng and the two others started running in the direction of the whistling. Many people were in the mine. Two people were having an explosive battle at that moment.

“Yu Lin?” Lin Feng was stupefied. He was also in the deployment mine.

“Who’s fighting against Yu Lin?”

“Jing Ran, an extremely strong young man from the Jing Clan. He’s an expert in deployment spells and he’s also from the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry.” Yu Xin’s beautiful eyes were twinkling as she stared at the battle. The two cultivators were fighting indirectly, both standing away from one another and using deployment spells to fight!

Jing Ran took a step forwards and some parts of the deployment mine exploded. Then, he moved his hands rapidly, it looked like he was dancing. He kept carving things in the air with his five fingers. Some terrifyingly sharp Qi streaked across the sky, the sword Qi emitted whistling sounds and shot at Yu Lin. The earth and sky shook violently.

Yu Lin grunted icily. He moved his hands and carved a great protection deployment spell. There was a crash and rumbling

explosion as their forces met. More pieces of stones exploded and floated around in the air.

“Haha, Brother Yu Lin is extremely strong, as expected!” said Jing Ran, laughing heroically and loudly. He jumped around insanely and deployment stones kept exploding. Deployment marks kept intertwining with another around him.

“Die!” shouted Yu Lin explosively. The deployment mine kept exploding. Dust kept rising to the skies. A cloud of dust surrounded Yu Lin.

Yu Lin looked at Jing Ran icily. A gigantic golden sword appeared and absorbed Qi as Yu Lin shouted furiously. The gigantic sword absorbed what seemed like oceans of energies. Explosions began to erupt for it as it condensed power.

The Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry really creates terrifying deployment spell casters, thought Lin Feng when he saw those two people fight. Their deployment spells were really impressive. It was like they weren't even using their own strength, because they were in a deployment mine. It was a perfect environment to fight using deployment spells.

The battle was getting fiercer and fiercer. Lin Feng watched the battle with admiration. He thought, I also study deployment spells. Deployment cultivation is about deployment spells. However, I can't use deployment spells like they can. They make their deployment spells evolve to become direct attacks. They can also carry out various attacks using deployment spells. Of course, all sorts of deployment methods show homology and the energies show isology. If I studied and tried to make my godly awareness correspond to the cultivation of deployment spells, I would be able to do the same thing and cast deployment spells in the blink of an eye...

Watching them battle made him understand lots of things. He also knew how to cast deployment spells, but it was different from

these people. These people were also cultivators, but they practiced cultivation in a different tradition.

Deployment spells and cultivation were fundamentally the same thing. Lin Feng had the sensation that if he managed to understand Celestial Deployment spells, he would also be able to become a Great Deployment Master, which came down to being a Saint on the path of deployment casting!

“Is Jing Ran the strongest young man of the Jing Clan?” asked Lin Feng. He had the impression that Jing Ran was extremely strong, but that he was still weaker than Yu Lin.

“He’s not. Yu Lin can easily oppress Jing Ran. However, the Jing Clan does have a terrifying cultivator: Jing Yan. He can easily oppress Yu Lin. Jing Ran and Jing Yan are both members of the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. They are the two strongest cultivators of the Jing Clan. Also, Jing Xiao Yue and the others are also extremely strong. That’s why the Jing Clan is rising in Qing Shan City and wants to invade all the deployment mines,” replied Yu Xin seriously.

Lin Feng nodded his understanding. No wonder. The Jing Clan also had some extremely strong cultivators in the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. Those people were experts in terms of deployment spells, even stronger than he was. They could resort to all kinds of strange tactics to battle.

“Alright, done for today. We’ll exchange views soon again, Brother Yu Lin!” said Jing Ran at that moment, and then he went winging off like a great roc.

Jing Ran flew extremely fast, but he saw Lin Feng and the two others, he smiled opportunistically. He stretched out his hand which crashed into a wall of the deployment mine. Explosions rang out and rock crackled as he made the whole mine shake.

“Hmph!” Tantai shouted icily and jumped forwards.

However, Yu Xin's expression changed drastically. "He didn't use his own strength, he used deployment spells! I'll go!" Yu Xin jumped in front of Lin Feng and Tantai. She raised her hands and carved out deployment spells. Even though her deployment spells weren't as good as Jing Ran's, she wasn't a disgrace to the Yu Clan.

Jing Ran flitted away, and a gigantic spear shot towards her. It contained wind strength which darkened everything around it as it came at her.

Yu Xin pulled a long face. She condensed some defensive strength to carve out a deployment spell. However, at the same time, Lin Feng carved fearsome intertwining deployment marks in front of her. Lin Feng sensed the strength of the deployment mine, it was a perfect place to cast deployment spells using the deployment essence of the mine.

An explosive strength charged towards Yu Xin. Her defensive deployment spell blocked the attack, but it broke apart at the same time. At the same time, Jing Ran suddenly rose up into the air as strength emerged from the ground under his feet.

Jing Ran looked at Lin Feng deeply. Even though Lin Feng was behind Yu Xin, Jing Ran knew that he had just intervened. Since when did the Yu Clan have such a strong cultivator?

Some other people from the Yu Clan were astonished. How strong! How come Yu Xin's deployment spells were so powerful?

Chapter 2099: Jing Xiao Yue

Yu Xin was stupefied. She hadn't cast that deployment spell. It had come from behind her.

"I'm sure we'll meet again!" said Jing Ran before leaving. Under his feet, more deployment lights appeared, and he flashed away. The members of the Yu Clan didn't bother chasing him. Their silhouettes flickered, and they appeared around Yu Xin.

"Yu Xin, your deployment spell was so powerful!" said an old man to Yu Xin.

"Yes, even though it wasn't distinct, it blocked Jing Ran's attack, how strong! Yu Xin, we haven't spent too much time raising you and you practiced really hard to become stronger. In the future, we'll give you even more help!" said someone else. Yu Xin felt nervous and was surprised. She didn't understand what was going on.

"But Jing Ran is extremely strong. If the Jing Clan focuses on us, it'll be difficult."

"Indeed. Jing Yan is also studying at the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry. Even though we invited Su Mu to come, we can't be sure that the Jing Clan hasn't invited anyone, either. It'll be difficult."

The people of the Yu Clan looked nervous and under pressure. They were nervous that the Jing Clan was going to focus on them.

"Should we change the rules of the competition for the deployment mines? Battles of five people! That way, we'll have more chances to oppress the Jing Clan. If they focus on us, we'll be able to use our full strength. If we join hands with the two other clans, we'll be able to oppress them!" said Yu Lin audaciously. Everybody shivered. Changing the rules? That was audacious... but it was a good solution.

“We’ll have to talk to the two other clans. We’ll have to become closely related and mutually dependent. If we don’t join hands and the Jing Clan destroys us, the next ones will be them,” said a member of the Yu Clan. Everybody nodded and they quickly broke up.

Yu Ye glanced at Lin Feng and Yu Xin before leaving. Lin Feng was not essential to the Yu Clan. They respected him, so if Lin Feng’s teacher came, they’d be able to benefit from him. If his teacher didn’t come, it didn’t matter.

—

Yu Xin turned around and looked at Lin Feng, her eyes twinkled as she said, “Was it you just now?”

“Yes,” Lin Feng nodded. He didn’t hide the truth. If the Yu Clan couldn’t rely on themselves to oppress the Jing Clan, Lin Feng was willing to help. At least, he wanted to oppress the Jing Clan as much as he could.

When Yu Xin saw him nod, she smiled and said, “Your deployment spells are so powerful?”

“I said I was alright,” Lin Feng shrugged. He didn’t really consider it important.

“It’s not only alright, why didn’t you tell them? They would respect you a bit more,” said Yu Xin smiled.

“Why would I need them to be even more polite to me? I would feel uneasy,” Lin Feng smiled, “You don’t need to tell them for now. If they want to give you resources, you can take them, and if they know in the future that it wasn’t you, you can tell them I told you to say so, so they won’t be able to take them back.”

“You’re a funny guy!” Yu Xin smiled at Lin Feng, “But now, I finally believe you when you said you didn’t care about Yu Ye going out with Su Mu. You really didn’t take it to heart.”

Lin Feng smiled calmly and said, “Let’s go back, too.”

“Alright.” Yu Xin nodded and they left the deployment mine.

—

At that moment, outside of the Yu Clan’s deployment mine, there was a woman calmly standing there and looking at the mine.

The woman was wearing simple white clothes, which were fluttering in the wind. She looked simple and elegant, and quite beautiful. She definitely stood out.

That girl looks extraordinary, thought Lin Feng when he saw her. Yu Xin stopped. Lin Feng and Tantai stopped, too.

“What’s wrong?” Lin Feng asked her.

“You know who she is?” Yu Xin asked, smiling at Lin Feng.

“Is she very famous?” said Lin Feng.

“She’s recently become famous. I admire her. She’s talented and beautiful, but she’s also a loving woman. She promised her clan that she was going to invade our deployment mine. I know what she’s thinking,” Yu Xin smiled.

Lin Feng was startled as he thought of someone. “Jing Xiao Yue?” he asked.

“You know her, too?” asked Yu Xin, surprised at him. She knew that Lin Feng was from the Dark Night Region, how did he know so much about Qing Shan City?

As expected!, thought Lin Feng. Jing Xiao Yue was the woman Mu Chen had fallen in love with. Because of her, Mu Chen was imprisoned in the black tower. Did she know that...? If she knew...

A strong wind started blowing and suddenly Lin Feng’s silhouette disappeared. Yu Xin was shocked. Lin Feng appeared in front Jing Xiao Yue in the distance.

Jing Xiao Yue raised her head and looked at Lin Feng calmly. Her white clothes still fluttered in the wind. She looked expressionless.

“Jing Xiao Yue?” asked Lin Feng slowly.

Jing Xiao Yue took a step forwards and said, “Move away!”

Lin Feng smiled, but he didn’t move, he just stood there calmly.

Jing Xiao Yue rose off the ground as it shook violently. The whole mine trembled. Threads of strength emerged from the ground and filled the air.

“Be careful!” shouted Yu Xin to Lin Feng. Jing Xiao Yue was a genius from the Jing Clan, and extremely strong. Even if she wasn’t as strong as Jing Yan, who studied at the Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry, she wasn’t much weaker than him.

“Don’t worry, Lin Feng will not hurt her,” whispered Tantai to Yu Xin.

“Eh...” Yu Xin’s beautiful eyes twinkled. She looked at Tantai and frowned. She wasn’t worried that Lin Feng was going to hurt her...

Had Yu Xin underestimated Lin Feng? His deployment spells were powerful, but was he also an amazing fighter?

Jing Xiao Yue flitted away as a gigantic cage appeared around Lin Feng. Jing Xiao Yue moved again as destructive strength suddenly emerged from the ground.

Lin Feng rose up into the air as a spear appeared and shot towards him.

Lin Feng shifted forwards and released cosmic energies, bearing down on everything. At the same time, Lin Feng struck the cage with a punch and it was instantly destroyed.

Lin Feng jumped towards Jing Xiao Yue. In response, Jing Xiao Yue released a powerful strength. At the same time, fearsome deployment lights condensed.

“Milky Way Lacerating Technique!” Yu Xin was stupefied. Jing Xiao Yue moved towards Lin Feng. Both were getting closer and

closer to one another. Destructive strength kept gathering to them. Jing Xiao Yue's hand streaked across the sky and a galaxy appeared, cutting the sky in two!

Lin Feng released Holy Spirit Swords. The swords rotating in the sky and suddenly sliced through everything. The galaxy was sliced apart and disappeared. Lin Feng was now holding a sword which absorbed strength.

Yu Xin's heart was pounding. How strong! Lin Feng's fighting abilities were incredible! He might be able to even defeat Yu Lin. Lin Feng's fighting abilities allowed him to compete with the strongest young person of the Yu Clan!

"Who are you?" asked Jing Xiao Yue, staring at Lin Feng. She noticed that Lin Feng was extremely strong...

"You want to invade the Yu Clan's deployment mine?" Lin Feng asked Jing Xiao Yue.

Jing Xiao Yue frowned and said, "Indeed! I will, definitely!"

"Mu Chen won't show up. The Jing Clan doesn't need you," said Lin Feng indifferently.

Jing Xiao Yue frowned and looked nervous. "Mu Chen will show up! Even if I fight to death, so what?"

"You don't understand! Go now," said Lin Feng said calmly. He was happy, Jing Xiao Yue didn't know anything and she was still ready to fight to the death.

Jing Xiao Yue stared at Lin Feng and asked, "You will stop me?"

"Indeed!" Lin Feng nodded. He was going to stop the Jing Clan, of course!

Jing Xiao Yue pulled a long face as Lin Feng said, "No matter who from the Jing Clan attacks, they won't manage to get the Yu Clan's deployment mine. Mu Chen won't show up, either. Leave now."

"What if he shows up?" said Jing Xiao Yue icily.

“If he shows up, I’ll help the Jing Clan steal the deployment mine,” said Lin Feng indifferently. “Go and tell the Jing Clan that if he doesn’t show up, not only won’t they manage to steal the Yu Clan’s deployment mine, but they won’t be able to protect their own, either.”

When Jing Xiao Yue heard Lin Feng, she didn’t understand because she didn’t know who Lin Feng was. She also didn’t know that Lin Feng and Mu Chen knew one another. Why would he help the Jing Clan if Mu Chen showed up? And why would he steal the Jing Clan’s deployment mine if Mu Chen didn’t appear?

Jing Xiao Yue didn’t understand. Yu Xin didn’t understand either!

Chapter 2100: The Fast Sword of Qing Shan

Jing Xiao Yue left. She had come to the Yu Clan's deployment mine hoping to see Mu Chen. However, she didn't bump into Mu Chen, but bumped into a strange person, Lin Feng!

On her way back to the Jing Clan, Jing Xiao Yue kept thinking about what Lin Feng had told her. What did it mean? If Mu Chen showed up, he'd help the Jing Clan; if he didn't, he'd help the others steal the Jing Clan's deployment mine?

"Xiao Yue," a middle-aged man spoke up at that moment. He looked at Jing Xiao Yue gently. However, Jing Xiao Yue looked back at him in icy anger.

"Xiao Yue, don't worry. Mu Chen isn't a good match for you. He won't dare show up. The Yu Clan will kill the people who try to steal their deployment mine," the middle-aged man said calmly.

However, Jing Xiao Yue just looked at him icily. "Today, I went to the Yu Clan and I ran into someone. A strange person," said Jing Xiao Yue emotionlessly to the middle-aged man. "A young man, he was very strange. He told me to tell the Jing Clan that on the day of the deployment mine competition, if Mu Chen showed up, he'd help the Jing Clan steal the deployment mine, and if Mu Chen didn't show up, he'd help the others steal the Jing Clan's deployment mine."

When the middle-aged man heard that, he frowned angrily and said, "Who was that person?"

"I don't know him. He's extremely strong. I hope there aren't implications...!" said Jing Xiao Yue icily before she left.

The middle-aged man looked furious, blade-sharp lights flashed in his eyes as he whispered, "Does the Yu Clan think they can still prevent us from taking their deployment mine?"

In the eyes of the Jing Clan, the Yu Clan's deployment mine was

already theirs.

After Jing Xiao Yue left, Lin Feng and Yu Xin left too. Yu Xin was still astonished. She glanced at Lin Feng secretly now and then.

“Why are you looking at me?” Lin Feng smiled.

“The more I look at you, the less I understand you. Tantai was right. I will soon understand,” Yu Xin smiled. “Jing Xiao Yue is a genius of the Jing Clan, and extremely strong. However, in front of you, she didn’t look strong. If you fight against her on the day of the deployment mine competition, I’m sure you could easily steal theirs. And did you really mean what you said to Jing Xiao Yue?”

“What then?” asked Lin Feng smiling.

“If Mu Chen shows up, will you really help the Jing Clan against the three clans?”

“I will,” said Lin Feng nodding.

“Well then, I hope Mu Chen won’t show up!” Yu Xin smiled cheerfully.

Lin Feng looked at her strangely. “Do you really believe I will help the Jing Clan steal the three other clans’ deployment mines?”

“Tantai said I’d understand you sooner or later! Maybe I will!” said Yu Xin, giving a noncommittal reply with a cheeky grin.

—

Lin Feng, Tantai, and Yu Xin went back to Yu Clan. The Yu Clan was as before, getting ready for the deployment mine competition. The three clans of Qing Shan City had had several occasions to act, but in the end they had come to a compromise: the competition. At each competition, there would be five battles. When there were three winners, they won the deployment mine. People who had fought already couldn’t fight again.

That was good for the Yu Clan, as even though the Jing Clan was strong, they didn’t have that many geniuses.

The day of the competition for the deployment mines finally arrived. The location was where the four deployment mines were. The winners would take control over the loser's mine.

The Yu Clan's strong cultivators had gathered together. Yu Lin and Su Mu were at the head of the group. This battle was too important for the Yu Clan; if they lost, they would lose their deployment mine and the Jing Clan would take control of it!

"Yu Lin, Su Mu, you are the two most important elements of this battle," a group of old men said to Su Mu and Yu Lin.

"We will definitely win this battle," Yu Lin nodded.

"Alright, let's go. The first battle of the Jing Clan is over the deployment mine of the Feng Clan. Let's go to the Feng Clan to see first," said an elder. The group of people rose up into the air, the crowd looking at Yu Lin, Su Mu, and Yu Ye. They were mounted on unicorns and looked majestic!

Lin Feng, Tantai, and Yu Xin were following behind them. Yu Kun noticed Lin Feng and the others, his eyes twinkled and he smiled, "Lin Feng, little boy. You're now used to staying in the Yu Clan. I hope Yu Xin is taking good care of you?"

"Yes, Yu Xin is great!" said Lin Feng, smiling and nodding.

"Very good. You've been here for so many days. Has your teacher been looking for you?" asked Yu Kun.

"Soon. I'm sure that you will see him soon," replied Lin Feng.

"Very good. I hope he can teach us some things. Besides, you know that today is the deployment mine competition, the four big clans are going to fight. So today you can watch and learn," said Yu Kun politely. He didn't disdain Lin Feng, but the competition was between four powerful groups, so he was convinced that Lin Feng, who knew a few deployment spells, would learn some things.

“That’s what I thought!” replied Lin Feng. Yu Kun didn’t say much and left with the others for the Feng Clan.

At the Feng Clan’s deployment mine, there were many nervous people. The members of the Jing Clan had arrived already. Apart from people of the Feng Clan, there were observers from all four powerful clans. The second deployment mine the Jing Clan wanted was that of the Wen Clan. They wanted the deployment mines of all other three clans!

Apart from the Clans, there were many strong cultivators from Qing Shan City who had come to watch. This competition would determine the fate of Qing Shan City.

Hou Qing Lin and his group were with the group of people from the Feng Clan. The members of the Feng Clan were very polite to Hou Qing Lin and the others. After all, they were willing to help them protect their deployment mine!

At that moment, the strong cultivators of the Feng Clan walked forwards. Some illusion marks appeared around them.

“Welcome to the Feng Clan’s deployment mine. Please be seated,” waved a strong cultivator of the Feng Clan. Seats rose up into the air and moved around in a perfect formation for people to sit. Apart from their own strength, they could also use the power of the deployment mines!

“After today, the deployment mine might not belong to the Feng Clan anymore,” a strong cultivator of the Jing Clan said provocatively at that moment.

“Who will the five fighters of the Jing Clan be?” asked the strong cultivator of the Feng Clan.

“According to the rules, since we made a concession, you have to choose first,” said the strong cultivator of the Jing Clan slowly. Five battles, they weren’t going to say who was going to fight. The

Feng Clan needed to select their fighters first. It was going to be difficult for them. The Jing Clan could choose their fighters depending on the fighters chosen by the Feng Clan.

“Jing Yan, Jing Ran, and Jing Xiao Yue haven’t shown up. They won’t fight here. They don’t care about the Feng Clan. The pressure is all on us,” said Yu Kun to Yu Lin and the others.

Yu Lin nodded and said, “Uncle Kun, if Jing Yan and the others show up on our battlefield, it’ll be difficult, we’ll have to give up our deployment mine and try to steal theirs.”

“I think so, too. The Jing Clan invited many extremely strong people. They are willing to do all they can for the Jing Clan. It will be difficult for the Feng Clan to protect their deployment mine as well,” said Yu Kun calmly. He glanced at the members of the Jing Clan, they looked calm and collected, as if they had everything under control.

From this day on, there would be tremendous changes in Qing Shan City!

Everybody looked at the Feng Clan’s members, wondering who they were going to choose.

At that moment, a young man came out, wearing grey clothes and with a sword in his back. He looked simple and clean. However, he looked as sharp as a sword, as if nobody could stop him.

“Who’s that person? I’ve never seen him,” whispered some people in the crowd. The man was a stranger.

Some members of the Jing Clan frowned. They had seen that person before, but they didn’t remember where. The Jing Clan had to win the first battle!

The Jing Clan sent out a strong cultivator wearing a bamboo hat who slowly walked out of the crowd. He landed on the deployment mine’s ground, looking mysterious. He raised his hand and took

off his hat, revealing his deathly pale face.

“The Fast Sword of Qing Shan!” When the crowd saw him, they frowned. That really pale young man was a hero in town, a terrifying sword cultivator!

The Fast Sword of Qing Shan was a feared sword cultivator in Qing Shan City. His sword attacks were unprecedentedly fast. Very few people could invite him, but the Jing Clan had managed to.

When the members of the Feng Clan saw him, they frowned nervously. Was the Jing Clan’s goal really the Yu Clan?...

Table of Contents

[Peerless Martial God](#)

[Synopsis](#)

[Acknowledgement](#)

[Chapter 2001: Highest Level](#)

[Chapter 2002: Potential Peerless Cultivators](#)

[Chapter 2003: Holy Throne](#)

[Chapter 2004: Me, Alone, on the Throne!](#)

[Chapter 2005: Ancient War](#)

[Chapter 2006: Holy Dynasty Prince](#)

[Chapter 2007: Kidnapping](#)

[Chapter 2008: Holy Spirit Natural Godly Skill](#)

[Chapter 2009: 18 Holy Spirits](#)

[Chapter 2010: Empress Xi's Fury](#)

[Chapter 2011: World Sealed By the Saints](#)

[Chapter 2012: Chu Chun Qiu's Secret](#)

[Chapter 2013: Powerful Spirits](#)

[Chapter 2014: Ancient Historical Remains](#)

[Chapter 2015: Incredible Sword](#)

[Chapter 2016: Gloomy Historical Remains](#)

[Chapter 2017: Sword Determination Which Never Disperses](#)

[Chapter 2018: Saint's Skeleton](#)

[Chapter 2019: Fighting Over the Skeleton](#)

[Chapter 2020: Darkness](#)

[Chapter 2021: Fangs](#)

[Chapter 2022: Brought To Light](#)

[Chapter 2023: Carving Deployment Marks](#)

[Chapter 2024: Collapsing Sky](#)

[Chapter 2025: Ancient Saint?](#)

[Chapter 2026: The Gigantic Foot in the Valley](#)

[Chapter 2027: Dialogue](#)

[Chapter 2028: Dangerous Game](#)

[Chapter 2029: Saint's Body](#)

[Chapter 2030: Saint's Awareness](#)

[Chapter 2031: Holy Emperors Under Pressure](#)

[Chapter 2032: Killing a Prince](#)

[Chapter 2033: Understanding](#)

[Chapter 2034: Destructive Oppression](#)
[Chapter 2035: Fighting For The Nine Magical Characters](#)
[Chapter 2036: Helping Each Other](#)
[Chapter 2037: Dao Destroying Mountain](#)
[Chapter 2038: Strange Story](#)
[Chapter 2039: Undercurrent](#)
[Chapter 2040: Xue Ao](#)
[Chapter 2041: Two Taoist Priests](#)
[Chapter 2042: Before the Storm](#)
[Chapter 2043: Discussing the Problem](#)
[Chapter 2044: Yan Di's Crazy](#)
[Chapter 2045: Suffocating Hurricane](#)
[Chapter 2046: Killing and Absorbing](#)
[Chapter 2047: I'm Your Ancestor!](#)
[Chapter 2048: Change](#)
[Chapter 2049: Consequences](#)
[Chapter 2050: The Evil Influence Remains](#)
[Chapter 2051: Lin Feng Is Dead](#)
[Chapter 2052: Truth](#)
[Chapter 2053: Balance](#)
[Chapter 2054: Agreement](#)
[Chapter 2055: Insane](#)
[Chapter 2056: How Tragic](#)
[Chapter 2057: Lin Zhe Tian](#)
[Chapter 2058: Coming Back to Life](#)
[Chapter 2059: Top Level Physical Strength](#)
[Chapter 2060: Slaughtering](#)
[Chapter 2061: Fighting Against Ji Chang Again](#)
[Chapter 2062: Killing](#)
[Chapter 2063: A New Era](#)
[Chapter 2064: The Sword Above the Lake](#)
[Chapter 2065: The Pei Clan's Nightmare](#)
[Chapter 2066: Woken Up?](#)
[Chapter 2067: A Sword From The Sky](#)
[Chapter 2068: Lin Qiong Sheng's Spirit](#)
[Chapter 2069: A Battle in Juetian Mountain](#)
[Chapter 2070: Wu Jue and Wu Qing](#)
[Chapter 2071: Indecent Provocations](#)
[Chapter 2072: Capture the Holy Woman](#)

[Chapter 2073: Newborn](#)

[Chapter 2074: Movement in the Animal District](#)

[Chapter 2075: Young Beast Master](#)

[Chapter 2076: Ancient Beast](#)

[Chapter 2077: Animal District's Agitation](#)

[Chapter 2078: Arrogant Beast](#)

[Chapter 2079: Animals' Explosive Power](#)

[Chapter 2080: Without the Slightest Scruple](#)

[Chapter 2081: Capturing a Beast](#)

[Chapter 2082: Decisive Battle](#)

[Chapter 2083: Venerable Sacrificial Soul Fire](#)

[Chapter 2084: Battle to Death?](#)

[Chapter 2085: Animal District's Announcement](#)

[Chapter 2086: Mu Chen's News](#)

[Chapter 2087: Judgement Day City](#)

[Chapter 2088: Auctions](#)

[Chapter 2089: Immortal Body](#)

[Chapter 2090: Who's Stupid?](#)

[Chapter 2091: Another Saint's Body](#)

[Chapter 2092: Deadly Tunnel](#)

[Chapter 2093: Qing Shan City](#)

[Chapter 2094: Deployment Spell Family](#)

[Chapter 2095: Tower of Torture](#)

[Chapter 2096: Celestial Remarkable Deployment Ministry](#)

[Chapter 2097: Battle in the Dark](#)

[Chapter 2098: Deployment Battle](#)

[Chapter 2099: Jing Xiao Yue](#)

[Chapter 2100: The Fast Sword of Qing Shan](#)